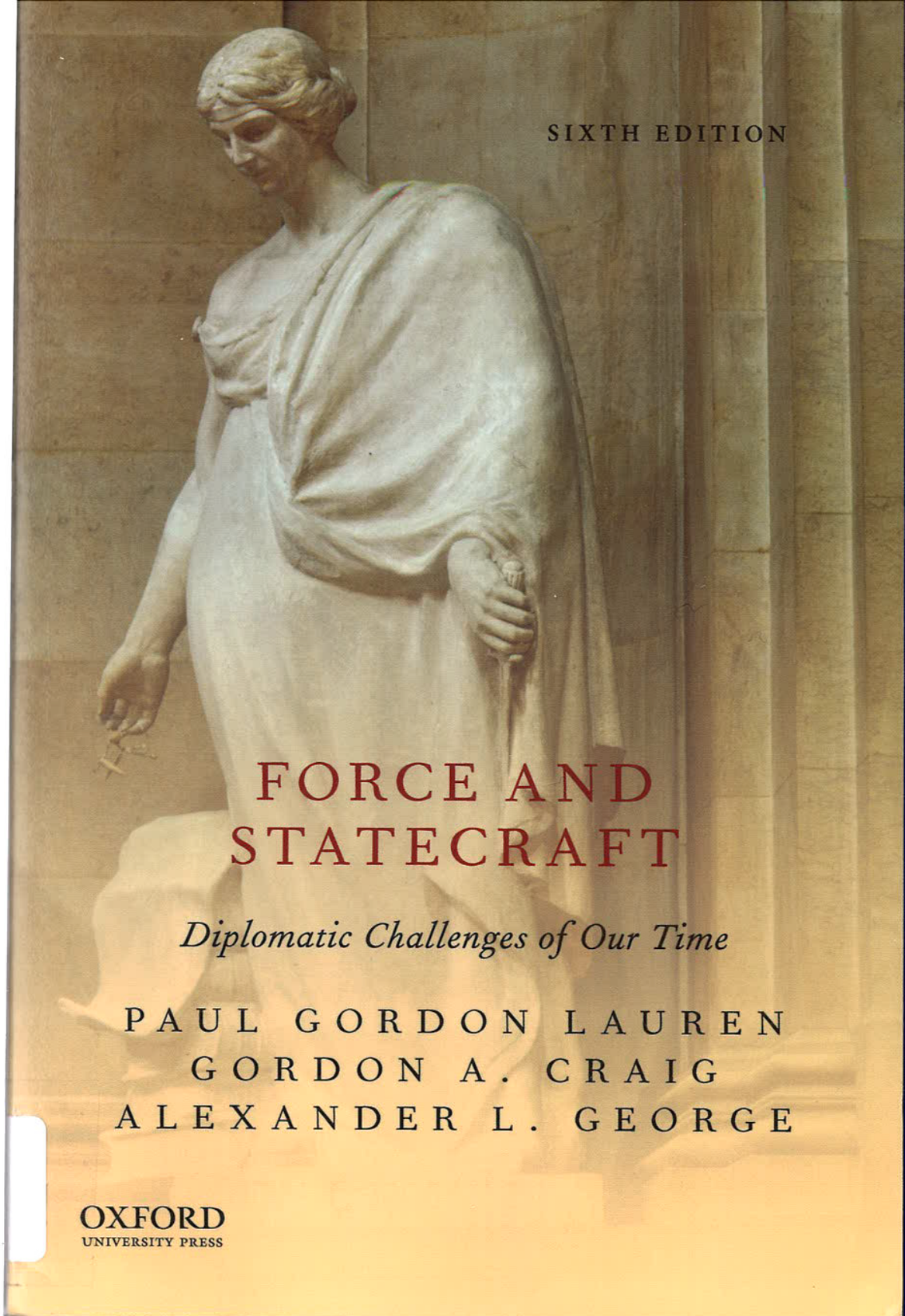


SIXTH EDITION

FORCE AND STATECRAFT

Diplomatic Challenges of Our Time

PAUL GORDON LAUREN
GORDON A. CRAIG
ALEXANDER L. GEORGE

OXFORD
UNIVERSITY PRESS

AMERICAN UNIV OF ARMENIA PAPAZIAN LIBRARY
AUA-PL-0035655

DATE DUE

29/01/24

PROPERTY O
AUA PAPAZIAN

Not

Oxford
publisher
textbook
that it is in
to superic
University P
than compa

The pre
Oxford,
university's
scholarshi
not publish
revenu
scholarshi
res

PRINTED IN U.S.A.

What does this mean to you?
It means that Oxford University Press USA published this book to best support your studies while also being mindful of your wallet.

Not for Profit. All for Education.
As a not-for-profit publisher, Oxford University Press USA is uniquely situated to offer the highest quality scholarship at the best possible prices.

OXFORD
UNIVERSITY PRESS

Force and Statecraft

Diplomatic Challenges of Our Time

PAUL GORDON LAUREN

GORDON A. CRAIG

ALEXANDER L. GEORGE

SIXTH EDITION

909.81
LAU

New York Oxford
OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS

Oxford University Press is a department of the University of Oxford.
It furthers the University's objective of excellence in research, scholarship,
and education by publishing worldwide. Oxford is a registered trade mark of
Oxford University Press in the UK and certain other countries.

Published in the United States of America by Oxford University Press
198 Madison Avenue, New York, NY 10016, United States of America.

Copyright © 2021, 2014, 2007, 1995, 1990, 1983 by Oxford University Press

For titles covered by Section 112 of the US Higher Education Opportunity Act, please visit www.oup.com/us/he for the latest information about pricing and alternate formats.

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted, in any form or by any means, without the prior permission in writing of Oxford University Press, or as expressly permitted by law, by license, or under terms agreed with the appropriate reproduction rights organization. Inquiries concerning reproduction outside the scope of the above should be sent to the Rights Department, Oxford University Press, at the address above.

You must not circulate this work in any other form
and you must impose this same condition on any acquirer.

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data

Names: Lauren, Paul Gordon, author. | Craig, Gordon Alexander, 1913–2005, author. | George, Alexander L., author.
Title: Force and statecraft : diplomatic challenges of our time / Paul Gordon Lauren, Gordon A. Craig, Alexander L. George.
Description: Sixth Edition. | New York : Oxford University Press, 2020. | Fifth edition published 2014. | Includes bibliographical references and index. | Summary: "Uniquely combining history, political science, and international law, this classic, timely and concise resource provides a historical discussion and insightful analysis of diplomacy"—Provided by publisher.
Identifiers: LCCN 2020013837 (print) | LCCN 2020013838 (ebook) | ISBN 9780190062637 (Paperback) | ISBN 9780190062644 (ePub)
Subjects: LCSH: World politics—19th century. | World politics—20th century. | World politics—21st century. | Diplomacy.
Classification: LCC D363 .L34 2020 (print) | LCC D363 (ebook) | DDC 909.81—dc23
LC record available at https://lccn.loc.gov/2020013837
LC ebook record available at https://lccn.loc.gov/2020013838

9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1
Printed by LSC Communications, Inc., United States of America

to all those who work for peace and security

"What is the good of experience if you do not reflect?"

—FREDERICK THE GREAT

"The past as a precise idea has meaning and value
only for those who are aware that they have a passion for the future."

—PAUL VALÉRY

BRIEF TABLE OF CONTENTS

PREFACE TO THE SIXTH EDITION ix

INTRODUCTION xiii

PART I FROM THE PAST TO THE PRESENT 1

Chapter 1 The Emergence of Diplomacy and the Great Powers 3

Chapter 2 The Classical System of Diplomacy, 1815–1914 24

Chapter 3 The Diplomatic Revolution Begins, 1919–1939 45

Chapter 4 A New Postwar System of Security: Great Power Directorate or United Nations? 69

Chapter 5 The Cold War 91

Chapter 6 The Evolving International System 115

PART II HISTORY, THEORY, AND PRACTICE 151

Chapter 7 Lessons of History and Knowledge for Statecraft 153

Chapter 8 Negotiation 169

Chapter 9 Deterrence 193

Chapter 10 Coercive Diplomacy 216

Chapter 11 Crisis Management 239

PART III RESTRAINTS AND REFLECTIONS 261

Chapter 12 Ethics and Other Restraints on Force and Statecraft 263

Conclusion Reflections on Force and Statecraft and the Challenges of Our Time 294

CREDITS 310

INDEX 311

CONTENTS

PREFACE TO THE SIXTH EDITION ix

INTRODUCTION xiii

PART I FROM THE PAST TO THE PRESENT 1

Chapter 1 **The Emergence of Diplomacy and the Great Powers** 3

The Early Practices, Techniques, and Ideas of Diplomacy 4

War, States, and *Raison d'état* in the Seventeenth Century 7

War and Competition in the Eighteenth Century 13

Chapter 2 **The Classical System of Diplomacy, 1815–1914** 24

Building a System with a Balance of Power and a Concert 25

Change and an Experiment with a Defensive Alliance System 31

Further Change and an Experiment with Bipolar Alignment 34

Characteristics of the System 37

Chapter 3 **The Diplomatic Revolution Begins, 1919–1939** 45

Attempts at Peacemaking and System Building 45

Public Opinion and "Public Diplomacy" 53

Economics and "Economic Diplomacy" 57

A *Dialogue des Sourds* with Contrasting Norms and Objectives 59

Chapter 4 **A New Postwar System of Security: Great Power Directorate or United Nations? 69**
Lessons from the Past and Plans for the Future 69
Force and Statecraft as Envisioned by the United Nations Charter 74
Changing World Conditions and Readjustments 80

Chapter 5 **The Cold War 91**
The Origins and Escalation of the Cold War 91
Seeking Restraints Through Deterrence, Diplomacy, and *Détente* 100
Persistent Problems and the Final Demise of the Cold War 106

Chapter 6 **The Evolving International System 115**
"A World in a Rapid State of Transition" 115
Challenges to Nation-States and National Sovereignty 120
Terrorists and the "Global War on Terror" 125
Partners and/or Rivals? 131

PART II HISTORY, THEORY, AND PRACTICE 151

Chapter 7 **Lessons of History and Knowledge for Statecraft 153**
Classical Writers on the Importance of Historical Lessons 153
The Historical Habit of Mind 156
The Challenges of Learning and Applying Lessons of History 160
Structured, Focused Comparisons 164

Chapter 8 **Negotiation 169**
Principles of Negotiation 170
The Congress of Vienna, 1814–1815 174
The Conference on Security and Cooperation in Europe, 1972–1975 177
Contemporary Negotiations over Nuclear Weapons and Missiles in North Korea 180
Analysis 185

Chapter 9 **Deterrence 193**
Principles of Deterrence 195
Collective Security for the Post-1815 Settlement 198

British and French Attempts to Deter Hitler, 1939 200
Contemporary American Deterrence over Taiwan 203
Analysis 207

Chapter 10 **Coercive Diplomacy 216**
Principles of Coercive Diplomacy 217
American "Gunboat Diplomacy," 1852–1854 221
The Cuban Missile Crisis, 1962 224
Contemporary Coercion Against Iran and Its Nuclear Program 226
Analysis 231

Chapter 11 **Crisis Management 239**
Principles of Crisis Management 240
Bismarck as an "Honest Broker" in the Crisis of 1878 244
The "Guns of August," 1914 247
Terrorism and the Mumbai Crisis, 2008 251
Analysis 255

PART III RESTRAINTS AND REFLECTIONS 261

Chapter 12 **Ethics and Other Restraints on Force and Statecraft 263**
Practical, Structural, and Political Restraints 263
Ethics and International Politics 269
Ethical Restraints for Statecraft 275
Ethical Restraints for Armed Force 282

Conclusion: Reflections on Force and Statecraft and the Challenges of Our Time 294

CREDITS 310

INDEX 311

PREFACE TO THE SIXTH EDITION

This book grew out of the authors' long-standing concern over international peace and security and their conviction that it would be extremely valuable to examine the kinds of challenges involving force and statecraft that confront policymakers from the combined perspectives of history and strategy. We enjoyed the great pleasure and the privilege of working together as valued colleagues, collaborators, and friends for nearly forty years in this interdisciplinary endeavor. The process began when the three of us first developed a course with these objectives in mind at Stanford University, selecting for focused comparison a variety of historical cases from the past in order to help us understand diplomatic challenges of our own time. The success of that original course and many others subsequently modeled after it, both in the United States and abroad, the enthusiastic responses of readers to previous editions and translations of this book into other languages, and the momentous developments in global politics and wars in recent years, all encouraged the writing of this revised and updated edition.

NEW TO THIS EDITION

Significant contributions to this sixth edition include up-to-date discussion and analyses of

- recent upheavals, transformations, and challenges in the evolving international system,
- American foreign policy and the changing role of the United States in the world under the presidency of Donald Trump,
- the growing power, influence, and ambitions of China under Xi Jinping,
- the assertive and muscular policies of Vladimir Putin and Russia,
- "Brexit" and other challenges to the European Union and NATO,
- fears of escalating nuclear proliferation, especially in the cases of Iran and North Korea,
- the Islamic State (ISIS), other terrorist groups, and the "global war on terror,"

- the ever-growing impact of technology on the revolution in military affairs, space-based weapons, the "digital revolution," the "information revolution," command and control, surveillance and reconnaissance, social networking sites, cybersecurity, and artificial intelligence,
- an assessment of the impact of climate change on security, and
- the global pandemic of coronavirus COVID-19.

More thorough treatment and analyses of major themes, including

- the long, deep, and rich historical background of force and statecraft,
- the meaning of "the security dilemma" with its spiraling cycle and paradox,
- the "indivisibility of security" with its individual, national, and international dimensions,
- the relationship between ends and means, especially in an age of weapons of mass destruction,
- the multiple dimensions of power, including "hard," "soft," and "smart" power, as instruments of statecraft,
- the challenge of finding the appropriate balance between partnership and rivalry,
- the role of values in ethical restraints, concepts of legitimacy, the norms of human rights, and international law,
- criteria of the just war tradition and its challenges,
- diplomacy as the art of the possible, not the perfect,
- the value of theories for the conduct of statecraft, and
- learning "lessons of history" to inform contemporary international challenges.

In addition, there are

- new illustrations with satellite images, improved maps, and a very helpful comprehensive index, and
- new scholarship and interpretation that has recently appeared, as well as official documentary evidence released by declassification.

To explore the meaning and ramifications of these important issues, we begin in Part I—**From the Past to the Present**—by presenting the broad and rich historical context of force and statecraft. We explore the ways that people have worked through time to develop the arts and skills of conducting diplomacy and the affairs of state, attempting to find peace and security in a world of unequal power where violence is always present or possible, adjusting to the dynamics of change and continuity, and wrestling with the challenges before them. The time ranges all the way from a discussion of the early techniques, instruments, and ideas of diplomacy in the past to the profound challenges of our own time. Chapters describe and analyze the emergence of the Great Powers, the classical system of diplomacy and its balance of power, the upheavals of the diplomatic revolution, the rationale behind the creation of the United Nations and its search for collective security, and the rise and then demise of the Cold War. The last chapter in this section explores critical current issues and transformative developments in our evolving and challenging world.

A transition from history to policy is then provided by Part II—**History, Theory, and Practice**—beginning with a pivotal chapter on the intriguing subject of "Lessons of History and Knowledge for Statecraft." We explore what, how, and why we learn from past experience. With that as a preface, we then turn to theory. Here, a systematic treatment is given to four particularly vital subjects in statecraft: negotiation, deterrence, coercive diplomacy, and crisis management. This is done through the methodology of a structured, focused comparison that delineates theoretical principles and then analyzes them with specific evidence from actual historical cases, paying particular attention to why certain strategies succeeded and why others failed. These are presented chronologically, with the first drawn from the classical system of the nineteenth century, the second from the twentieth century, and the last from very recent international events. Special care has been taken to select cases that are particularly revealing and that range from Europe and the United States to the Middle East and Asia in order to demonstrate the truly global dimensions of the challenges that we face.

Part III—**Restraints and Reflections**—opens with a revised and expanded chapter exploring the practical, structural, and political restraints that impact policymakers. The discussion then moves into debates over the nature of ethics and statecraft. At a time when increasing numbers of citizens have growing and conscientious concerns about the tendencies, methods, and dangers of contemporary global politics, we believe that it is only appropriate to include a serious discussion about the difficult and thought-provoking problem of the role of self-restraint and ethical norms in international affairs, especial when armed force is involved. This leads us, finally and naturally, to an updated Conclusion that brings together the major themes of the book and offers reflections about the relationship of the past to the present, of theory to practice, and the diplomatic challenges of our own time.

Every chapter concludes with a section called "Suggestions for Further Exploration" to assist readers in finding references to citations within the text and to facilitate additional study. Bibliographical entries range from primary source government documents to websites and the most updated scholarship from history, political science, international law, and philosophy, as well as classical works that have stood the test of time. Each of the analytical chapters also provides suggestions of other historical cases for those who wish to explore specific topics in more detail. Improved maps are included in this edition to help readers understand the strategic impact of geographical location, while illustrations are provided to assist in appreciating the impact of individual people and of technology on force and statecraft.

Many thoughtful comments and suggestions have been made over the years from readers, professional colleagues, and experts from the diplomatic, military, political, economic, and intelligence communities around the world who have helped to improve each successive edition and translation of this book. We are grateful for them all.

May this new edition continue to help readers appreciate the value of historical experience, to understand how force and statecraft have been employed in the past and how they are used in our world today, and to stimulate critical thinking, serious discussion, and meaningful reflection on how peace and security might be found for our future.

Paul Gordon Lauren

INTRODUCTION

It is likely that there is no issue on earth more elemental than that of survival. Without survival there can be no existence and without it no other goals can ever be achieved. From the very beginning to the present, and regardless of time or place, therefore, individuals and societies have struggled with how they might find peace and security in a world where war, violence, unequal power, and insecurity are always possible or present. Primitive petroglyph drawings in caves, ancient Sanskrit texts like the *Bhagavad Gita,* the writings of Chinese strategist Sun Tzu in his *Art of War*, accounts in the Torah and Qu'ran, and traditional literary epics like *Gilgamesh* and Homer's *Iliad* and *Odyssey* from diverse cultures around the world all record early and frequent recourse to threats and use of armed force when people are unable or unwilling to resolve their disputes by peaceful means.

The famous Greek historian Thucydides, writing in his *History of the Peloponnesian War* four hundred years before the birth of Jesus, tells us how force was threatened by the powerful Athenians to intimidate the much weaker Melians. Failure to comply with their demands, they declared, would result in devastation:

> You, by giving in, would save yourselves from disaster . . . [for] your actual resources are too scanty to give you a chance of survival against the forces that are opposed to you at this moment. You will therefore be showing an extraordinary lack of common sense if . . . you still fail to reach a conclusion wiser than anything you have mentioned so far . . . Think it over again . . . and let this be a point that constantly recurs to your minds—that you are discussing the fate of your country, that you have only one country, and its future for good or ill depends upon this one single decision which you are going to make.

The Athenians brutally summarized their approach with the often-quoted statement that "the strong do what they have the power to do and the weak accept what they have to accept."

Similar expressions have been heard throughout history, as well as today, from those wanting to use their power, weapons, sheer numbers of armed forces, highly sophisticated military technology, or willingness to kill innocent civilians in terrorist acts, all to gain advantage over their adversaries. The persistence of the use of

force in violence and war in our own time bears all too ample and painful evidence that the dangers continue.

When confronted with this record of human experience, most leaders responsible for the survival of their people have concluded, for better or worse, that in a world with an absence of any central governing authority and ever-possible conflict and anarchy, there are times armed force is an absolute necessity. They have not eagerly embraced or enthusiastically endorsed force—but have reluctantly acknowledged its existence and recognized its impact. If peaceful means and rational persuasion do not always succeed in resolving conflicts and competition, and if adversaries exist who engage in aggression and who only seem to understand the language of force, they have reasoned, then sheer prudence requires that force be one of the essential instruments of statecraft.

Even those who have no aggressive designs at all and genuinely desire peace have acknowledged this. Drawing upon his desire to learn lessons from history, the Chinese sage Confucius observed centuries ago:

> The superior man, when resting in safety, does not forget that danger may come. When in a state of security, he does not forget the possibility of ruin. When all is orderly, he does not forget that disorder may come. Thus, his person is not endangered; his states and all his clans are preserved.

Many, many others have reached the same conclusion. Watching the violence around him, the ancient Roman writer Vegetius reluctantly observed, *Si vis pacem, para bellum*: "If you want peace, prepare for war." In the wake of the devastating wars of the late eighteenth and early nineteenth centuries, peacemakers recognized the necessity of creating a balance of power to deter any new aggressor. Following the destruction of the First World War, even President Woodrow Wilson, the outspoken advocate for the peaceful settlement of disputes and international order, reluctantly concluded, "In the last analysis the peace of society is obtained by force . . . If you say 'We shall not have any war,' you have to have the force to make that 'shall' bite." In the aftermath of the even more ruinous Second World War, President Franklin Roosevelt envisioned creating the United Nations and similarly observed: "The problem of security rests with the powers who have the military force to uphold it."

But herein lies the fundamental dilemma for force and statecraft. Although armed force may be necessary in certain circumstances, it also can be extraordinarily dangerous. It may be used to maintain peace and security, defend vital interests, protect victims from egregious human rights abuses and atrocities, provide collective security, and enforce international law. Yet, at the same time, it can be used for aggression, territorial conquest, genocide, inflicting pain against innocent civilians, subjugation, and intimidation. Armed force is a blunt and dangerous instrument that is not always effective, cannot always be controlled, can create serious unintended consequences, and sometimes even triggers unwanted wars that might otherwise have been avoided. In fact, its very existence threatens others, increases the risk of escalation in crises, and carries a seductive appeal to those who believe that military might alone somehow will enable them to act as they wish and get what they want.

The enormous tension between the necessities of armed force and the dangers of armed force thus long has confronted those deeply concerned about survival.

Indeed, it has presented some of the most fundamental and difficult challenges in the entire theory and the practice of diplomatic statecraft itself. One of these is known as "the security dilemma." That is, if one state arms itself for ostensibly defensive purposes to protect its own security, such action easily is perceived by others as directly threatening their own security, in turn provoking them to arm themselves in response. This creates and perpetuates a vicious spiraling cycle of military expansions and, in the process, increases the insecurity of all. Still other challenges emerge in any and all efforts to determine if, when, how, and/or under what conditions force can be used legitimately and most effectively as an instrument to achieve peace and security.

Countless numbers of people have struggled with precisely these problems throughout human history. They have feared the wanton chaos, destruction, pain, and taking of human lives resulting from the use of armed force. But instead of passively resigning themselves to fatalistic notions of a world helplessly characterized as no more than a jungle of inevitable, perpetual, and unbridled anarchy, they have believed that we as human beings possess some measure of rational capacity to confront complex challenges and actively search for ways in which to prevent or tame violent conflict. Some have attempted to do this by relying on military doctrines or strategies designed to match the level of violence to political objectives and thus avoid unnecessary destruction or death. Some have used other forms of power such as economic strength, industrial capacity, technological sophistication, culture, or political ideas to moderate the behavior of others. Some have placed their hopes on normative values of self-imposed ethical restraints or those religious codes teaching compassion and forbidding the resort to war. Others have turned to legal agreements or negotiated treaties to restrict or abolish the use of certain kinds of weapons or to limit the use of military force.

Still others have attempted to combine these various elements and approaches in such a way that they might use force and statecraft together as a means of regulating the behavior of highly competitive states capable of launching wars and causing great harm to others. They have turned to diplomacy and the creation of some measure of international order with an accepted body of normative rules and values, along with sufficient force in a balance of power to keep rivalries within certain bounds and to make wars unprofitable or dangerous to aggressors. The Portuguese sculptor Maximiano Alves captures some sense of this in his evocative and perceptive allegorical statue entitled *Diplomacy*. The central figure conveys a deep sense of purpose and a realization of the seriousness of the decisions confronting her. She holds an olive branch in her right hand. It is suspended above several instruments of statecraft: collections of rules and understandings, books of ethical norms, legal documents, peace treaties, and agreements. Should these prove to be insufficient, however, her left hand grips another tool to use if necessary—the sword of armed force. This reveals the precise nature of the relationship between force and statecraft: the former is the instrument of the latter.

As long historical experience reveals, considerable skills are necessary to wisely use and wield the tools in each of these hands. It is not at all easy to use diplomatic statecraft to resolve disputes or to establish some order out of chaos and anarchy. Indeed, as we shall see, it took centuries of war and competition, threats of domination by a single power, and the long development of a rational theory of

statecraft before the major states could agree to even attempt to form some kind of international system capable of maintaining peace and security. They did so only after they all had reached one critical conclusion: the reality that in a world of incessant rivalry their own resources alone were woefully insufficient to protect them, and thus that their very survival depended on creating some measure of shared interests and partnership with others.

They came to discover, as did many who would follow them, that the success of any collective efforts among partners to create and maintain a viable international system by means of diplomacy depends on meeting several requirements. First, there must be agreement among the principal states concerning shared goals and objectives that they are seeking to achieve. To do this, the actors must be able to recognize that they share common interests as well as issues of conflict, and thus at the same time are both partners as well as rivals within the system. Second, there must be a structure appropriate to the number of states interacting with each other, the geographical boundaries or scope of the system, the relative distribution of power or capabilities among the actors, and the stratification and status hierarchy among them. Third, there must be commonly accepted normative values and procedures in the form of norms, methods, rules, practices, institutions, and expectations for the achievement of the aims and objectives of the system as a whole. These are designed to provide restraints that help members of the system deal with the challenges that they share in common and must include shared conceptions about when and how armed force can be legitimately threatened or used. They are purposefully created by states because it is in their mutual interests to do so.

Finally, the effectiveness of any international system depends upon its ability to adapt and adjust to new developments and to internal changes within its membership that affect its performance and its ability to maintain itself. Throughout most of history, and certainly at the time of the classical system of diplomacy, the rate of these changes was relatively slow. During our own time, however, the speed and extent of transformation has been rapid, profound, and persistent. This can be seen in military technology and weapons of mass destruction, Internet communication, transportation, a globalized market economy, the growing influence of nonstate actors, and the evolution of norms on international human rights and international criminal law, to say nothing of those mutations in political polarization and social structures resulting from the rise of populist unrest and organized interest groups, the increasing scope and complexity of governmental organization itself, the emergence of contemporary terrorism, and drastic shifts in the geopolitical balance of power. It has also been an age of intense nationalism and xenophobia, exacerbated by the breakup of the old colonial empires and the emergence of new sovereign states, and of ideological and sectarian conflict on a global scale. All of these forces, singly and in combination, have had an impact upon international politics that results in nothing short of a diplomatic revolution. This has made it increasingly difficult to revive and maintain old structures or to devise new ones. Indeed, as we shall now see as we begin to explore history from the past to the present, adapting to change has always been one of the major challenges of force and statecraft, testing the ingenuity and the fortitude of those charged with the responsibility for devising means to find peace and security in our world.

PART I

From the Past to the Present

CHAPTER 1

The Emergence of Diplomacy and the Great Powers

The origins of diplomacy go back to the beginnings of human history itself. Even in primitive societies when tribes or organized groups of men and women came into contact with others, they realized that they did not exist in complete isolation and found that they were either fighting, recovering from fighting, or preparing for the next fight. They thus came to understand that they desperately needed to develop some mutually advantageous means that might facilitate interaction among themselves beyond the sole resort to brutal violence and warfare. Their survival depended on it. No negotiations could possibly take place in establishing access to hunting grounds, creating conditions for rudimentary trade, demarcating territory, creating alliances, exchanging prisoners, collecting their wounded, or burying their dead, for example, unless messengers from both sides received certain assurances that they could communicate with each other and reach agreements.

This explains why various oral traditions, inscriptions on stone monuments, images on clay tablets, classic epics of poetry and literature, and even religious texts so frequently depict or describe the use of emissaries to represent and to convey messages from one ruler to another. The Greek writer Homer thus discussed the value of heralds in the *Iliad*, the Hindu leader Kautilya devoted an entire chapter in his treatise on statecraft entitled *Arthashastra* to the duties of envoys, King Solomon praised the extraordinary benefits of diplomatic messengers, and the Christian apostle Paul in his second letter to the Corinthians described himself as an ambassador.

City-states, empires, kingdoms, tribes, clans, and dynastic states, among others, each in its own way and often by experimental trial and error over many centuries and many places, developed various practices and methods to advance their interests by facilitating the conduct of relations among themselves in war and peace. These emerged by necessity wherever leaders found themselves compelled to interact with others, beginning where civilizations first arose in the ancient Near East, Asia, and the Indian subcontinent. The nature of such interaction was relatively simple wherever a single political entity or empire became powerful enough to centrally dominate tributary provinces, weaker rulers, or subjugated peoples for lengthy periods of time. But where several, roughly equal, independent but interdependent states existed—as they did in the West—the methods of interaction required more sophistication.

THE EARLY PRACTICES, TECHNIQUES, AND IDEAS OF DIPLOMACY

A number of diplomatic practices and techniques emerged during the height of Greek civilization when the existence of several city-states, each jealous of its own independence, escalated the level of competition among them and thereby raised issues of force and statecraft to the fore. As Thucydides reveals so brilliantly in his *Peloponnesian War*, this required that they carefully consider the advantages and disadvantages of remaining isolated or of working in partnership. When the representatives of Corcyra approached Athens, he records, they spoke candidly:

> We used to think that our neutrality was a wise thing, since it prevented us being dragged into danger by other people's policy; now we see it clearly as a lack of foresight and as a source of weakness. . . . We recognize that, if we have nothing but our own resources, it is impossible for us to survive, and we can imagine what lies in store for us if they overpower us. We are therefore forced to ask for assistance, both from you and from everyone else; and it should not be held against us that now we have faced the facts and are reversing our old policy of keeping ourselves to ourselves.

With thoughts like this in mind, the Greeks revealed the same creative imagination that they employed in developing their own remarkable civilization by creating some of the diplomatic practices still used today designed to reduce the level of friction, to facilitate interactions, and to develop restraints that might keep competition within certain bounds.

Their emphasis on communication, for example, is revealed in the fact that diplomacy itself takes its name from the Greek word for an official folded letter, *diploma*. From the sixth century BC onward they developed the practice of carefully selecting ambassadors, or those who would represent them, from among their finest public speakers and most plausible forensic advocates to plead eloquently their cause before the assemblies or councils of foreign leagues or other city-states. The importance of this could not be overestimated, for as the statesman and orator Demosthenes observed, "Ambassadors have no battleships at their disposal, or heavy infantry, or fortresses; their only weapons are words and opportunities."

Over time, the Greeks gave these ambassadors special privileges and diplomatic immunity so they might be able to fulfill their missions. In addition, they established procedures for the exchange of ambassadors, diplomatic credentials, the functions of consuls, the status of neutrality, diplomatic conferences, the ratification of treaties, the right of asylum, extradition, the responsibilities of partners in alliances or leagues, and techniques of arbitration, even in times of great tension. Thucydides provides an example:

> When the Corcyreans heard of these preparations they sent an embassy to Corinth, accomplished by some envoys from Sparta and Sicyon to support them. There they demanded that Corinth should withdraw her troops and colonists from Epidamnus . . . They were prepared, however, if Corinth wished to put in a counter claim, to accept arbitration. Cities in the Peloponnese should be chosen by mutual agreement to act as arbitrators, and the colony should go to whichever side the arbitrators awarded it.

These practices helped to establish some of the first rules for multilateral diplomacy.

Statesmen of Rome, on the other hand, were interested more in order, discipline, and empire rather than in relations among equals. Like those of ancient Egypt, China, India, Persia, or later imperial systems of the Mongols, Aztecs, Incas, and Ottomans, among others, they focused on keeping their vast holdings of territories and peoples together not only through coercion, but also through superior organization whenever possible. The Roman contribution to diplomacy thus can be found in the area of administrative rules, legal contracts, and the early foundations of what would become international law. They extended immunity to visiting ambassadors as well as to their staffs and established the profession of trained archivists as specialists in diplomatic precedents and procedures. They also created normative rules and laws dealing with declarations of war, negotiating peace, and the handling of hostages. In addition, the Romans gave great attention to the development of legal concepts such as *jus gentium* (the customary law and legal norms of nations), *jus naturale* (the law common to all mankind), and *pacta sunt servanda*, or the importance of respecting legal obligations and of honoring the sanctity of treaties. The creation of such norms, or standards of conduct, made it easier to order relationships and thereby provide opportunities for the nonviolent resolution of conflict.

But practical survival absolutely required statecraft to manage external relations. This became apparent when Constantine the Great became the emperor of Rome and decided in the fourth century to move his capital to the strategically located city of Byzantium (now Istanbul), situated at the crossroads of the major land and sea routes connecting Europe and Asia. He and his successors in the Eastern Roman Empire and then the Byzantine Empire knew full well that they were surrounded by enemies and hostile tribes who had to be kept at bay. The necessity for constant vigilance led them to become the first to organize a permanent government office focused on diplomacy. Since diplomatic communication required dealing with those who spoke different languages, they employed a staff of interpreters and translators. They also developed techniques of protocol and ceremony designed to impress. Moreover, they made considerable effort to train professional negotiators to serve as their ambassadors, providing them with written instructions for precise missions and expecting them to furnish full reports about external relations. These tasks demanded more than the qualities of the herald or orator. Instead, they required experience and the trained powers of observation, reporting, and sound judgment.

These various practices, techniques, and ideas developed over several centuries were eventually passed on to the Italian city-states of the Renaissance, which made their own contributions and created the origins of modern diplomacy as we know it. With intense and incessant rivalry among them, ever-changing alliances, and vulnerability to external threats, they realized that their possession of military force alone could not protect them and that their survival required steady vigilance and acute attention to diplomacy. To accomplish this, Venetian leaders of the fifteenth century came to understand that they could no longer rely on merely sending out ambassadors for special missions on an ad hoc basis. Constant insecurity and danger required that they establish missions staffed by resident diplomats. Venice therefore developed a sophisticated system of permanent representatives

who pursued the interests of the republic by providing a continuous flow of information, realistic appraisals of opportunities and risks, and skillful negotiations, all with an unusual freedom from sentimentality and illusion.

This model came to be followed by other city-states on the Italian peninsula, such as Florence, Milan, Naples, and Rome. They gradually realized that they need not fall victim to whim, emotion, or chance, but that they had the ability to find some measure of rationally solving problems that they had in common. Toward this end, they established a network of permanent embassies with resident ambassadors, seeking to use diplomacy rather than simply warfare as the basis of their security, and, in the process, developed a multipolar system in miniature.

Through time, they also began to write early diplomatic manuals describing the characteristics and skills that diplomats should possess and providing clear advice about how diplomats should act. Not surprisingly, this produced differing opinions, as it does in our own time. Some, like the Archbishop Bernard du Rosier, wrote a treatise based on his religious beliefs in arguing that the mission of an ambassador must always be peace, that diplomats must labor not only for their particular employer but for the common good, and that they should never be sent to stir up wars or internal dissensions. Others, like Venetian politician and diplomat Ermolao Barbaro, in sharp secular contrast, insisted in 1490 that "the first duty of an ambassador is exactly the same as that of any other servant of government: that is, to do, say, advise, and think whatever may best serve the preservation and aggrandizement of his own state." Regardless of the disagreements over what diplomats actually ought to do, however, all sides understood the importance of accurate information. For this reason, the Italian city-states became the first to systematically preserve their diplomatic archives. They realized that in issues of force and statecraft, a premium needed to be placed on learning lessons from carefully studied historical cases and on making all relevant information readily accessible to policymakers.

The necessity of establishing such techniques and norms of diplomacy became all the more evident by the persistence of unremitting competition and nearly continuous warfare. As Philippe de Commynes, a Flemish solider-diplomat of the fifteenth century, argued from hard-earned personal experience, there was nothing at all glorious about war and violence. He feared the consequences of unrestrained rivalries and saw clearly that states shared certain common interests and were dependent on each other, whether they liked it or not. This line of thinking became more pronounced by the next century when technological advances in shipbuilding, navigational techniques, and the application of gunpowder enabled Portuguese and Spanish explorers to engage in unrestrained and lawless struggles for global empire by plunder and conquest. In response to the resulting brutality, the Dominican theologian and law professor Francisco de Vitoria, his Jesuit successor Francisco Suarez, and Protestant professor Alberico Gentili began to stress the necessity of establishing legal limits designed to restrain warfare. Drawing on earlier theological writings of St. Ambrose, St. Augustine, and St. Thomas Aquinas, they sought to establish certain international normative restraints addressing the justice *of* war and justice *in* war. In doing so, they made major contributions to what would eventually be described as the just war tradition.

All these developments contributed to a larger movement that sought to approach challenges of force and statecraft in a systematic and rational manner.

Some observers, for example, began to construct theories about politics, human nature, the nature of the state, relations among states, and government policies. These efforts created the modern discipline of political science. The most noted of these was Niccolò Machiavelli, a man who had been a diplomat of Florence but then was forced to watch in humiliation as foreign invaders completely defeated and overthrew his ruler. He himself was dismissed from office, imprisoned, tortured, and then banished from political life. These hard and bitter experiences led him to write *Discourses*, *Art of War*, and his most famous, or infamous, 1513 treatise entitled *The Prince*. Here he expressed his determination to discern "how things are in real life" by learning broad lessons from the study of history. To do this, he set about to discover general rules and theoretical principles behind particular events and individual actions. He warned of the dangers of ignorance and weakness, and advised that "when princes think more of luxury than of arms, they lose their state," and bluntly stated:

> You must know that there are two methods of fighting, one by law, the other by force; the first method is that of men, the second of beasts; but as the first method is often insufficient, one must have recourse to the second. It is therefore necessary for a prince to know well how to use both the beast and the man.

Machiavelli stressed the importance for leaders "to keep good faith and live with integrity" in their relations with others, but when it came to advancing the interests of their state, he brutally concluded, in language that has haunted his work ever since: "the end justifies the means."

Such thinking produced both condemnation for its undisguised dismissal of Christian ethics as well as praise from others for its advocacy of power politics. For those who sought to amass greater political power, Machiavelli's writings provided justification for their objectives and their methods. They believed that the small Italian city-states, especially at a time of diminishing influence of the papacy and its claims of divine sanction and universality under challenge from the Reformation, soon would be irrevocably dwarfed in magnitude and strength by those monarchies claiming secular authority and capable of forging powerful nation-states. The French political philosopher Jean Bodin reinforced this line of thinking by enunciating the principle of sovereignty in his 1576 book *Les Six livres de la république*. He asserted that the future belonged to states that possessed sovereignty, which he defiantly described as "power absolute and perpetual," "supreme," and "subject to no law." Indeed, claimed Bodin, such sovereign power that recognized no international authority above it provided "the distinguishing mark of a state," giving it the sole prerogative to decide how it would treat its own people, how it would behave in its relations with others, and how it would threaten or use armed force in the world.

WAR, STATES, AND *RAISON D'ÉTAT* IN THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY

When the seventeenth century began, therefore, emerging states in Europe possessed certain customs and practices of diplomacy as well as growing assertions about the prerogatives of their sovereignty. But what would eventually be called the Great Powers still did not exist. In 1600, for instance, Russia was a remote and ineffectual land, separated from the rest of Europe by the large territory that was called

Poland-Lithuania with whose rulers it waged periodic territorial conflicts, as it did with the Ottoman Turks to the south. Prussia, as the Electorate of Brandenburg, lived a purely Germanic existence, with no wider significance. England possessed considerable commercial strength but was not accorded much geopolitical importance. As a result of internal anarchy and strife, France seemed destined to play a minor role in European politics. The strongest political center in Europe was the old Holy Roman Empire with its capital in Vienna and its alliance with Spain, which still possessed a vast empire and formidable military power.

Why did this situation not persist? Or, to put it another way, why was the European system transformed so radically that the once mighty Holy Roman Empire became an insignificant political force and the continent came to be dominated by Britain, France, Austria, Prussia, and Russia? The answer is war.

Wars have been one of the most profound factors in history for transforming societies, both for those who have been victims of attack as well as those who have waged them through aggression. In this case,Great Power status was won—and lost—by armed force. Successful war enabled the state to diminish its competitors and then expand and increase its own resources, which, in turn, were allocated to improve the state's effectiveness, strength, and authority. In this way, it was war that shaped the creation, the character, and the evolution of modern states. Wars made states, and states made war.

From 1618 until 1721, for example, a long series of raging wars changed the rank order of European states by exhausting some and exalting others. Virtually all of the major dynastic rivalries, religious differences, drawing of borders, possession of cities and fortresses, control of trade routes and colonies, and ultimately the destinies of kingdoms and empires were decided by armed force. At the beginning of the century, a European battle might involve as few as 25,000 troops on both sides. But within a few decades, France alone created an army of 400,000. As if bent on supplying evidence for the later nineteenth-century Darwinians, those states that became the Great Powers proved themselves in the grinding struggle of the age to be the fittest—the ones far better organized and more efficient—to meet the demands of protracted competition in warfare. Only they could marshal the resources necessary to raise disciplined, standing armies sufficient to destroy another state. Only they could defend themselves from external attack. Only they could negotiate treaties of peace and security.

The process of transformation began with the brutal and protracted Thirty Years' War, which stretched from 1618 to 1648. It is sometimes called a religious war due to the fact that it was characterized as a struggle between Catholics and Protestants. But governments, not churches, fought the war, and after years of unremitting fighting it became clear that secular authorities were exploiting sectarian differences in order to advance their own agendas for territory and dynastic power. For the states that initiated this wasting conflict, the war was an unmitigated disaster. The Habsburgs became so debilitated by it that they lost their former control over the German states and their empire became a mere adjunct of the Austrian crown lands. Austria itself emerged so weakened by the exertions and losses of the war that it barely could protect its eastern possessions and watched in horror when in 1683 the Turkish army threatened to capture Vienna itself. At the same

time, its strongest ally, Spain, squandered an infantry once judged to be the best in the world with losses so extensive that the country and its empire never recovered. The war also completely shattered the Holy Roman Empire and broke the political power of the pope.

In sharp contrast, some states profited from the Thirty Years' War by fighting their way to the top. One of these was the Netherlands, which, under leaders like Maurice of Nassau and Jan de Witt, won its independence from Spain and became a commercial and financial center and naval power of major importance. Sweden, led by the "Lion of the North" Gustavus Adolphus, often described as "the father of modern warfare" due to his use of the combined arms of infantry, cavalry, and artillery, emerged as the strongest power in the Baltic region. And, of major significance, France emerged at the end of the war as the most powerful state in all of Europe.

It is no accident that these particular states were so successful, for they represented vivid examples of the process that historians describe as the rise of the modern state as *the* political unit to be admired, feared, and ultimately copied by others around the world. Each of these successfully held jurisdictional control over specific territory and its people, and claimed a special legal status under emerging international law. Each developed an able administrative apparatus or bureaucracy, including a designated foreign ministry with its own diplomatic corps. Of particular importance, each now had at its command its own centrally controlled and powerful standing professional army that replaced the temporary aggregation of hired mercenary bands of the past. Indeed, the most significant distinguishing characteristic of these states was their monopoly of military force. To be a state was to be armed.

But there was more. At precisely this time each of these states also began to adopt a theory of statecraft known as the "national interest" or "reason of state" that came to be called *ragione di stato* in Italian, *Staatsräson* in German, or the more widely accepted expression in French of *raison d'état*. It emerged, not surprisingly, during the seventeenth century's age of scientific rationalism, as theorists sought to address the challenges before them with rational and practical solutions. They wanted to establish the idea that the state had a particular set of vital interests that transcended the personality of its rulers and the expression of his or her wishes. Successful statecraft, they argued, lay in a rational determination of these interests, accurate and effective assessments of the capabilities and intentions of other states, the practical realization that ends should never be sought in excess of available means, and an understanding that a variety of instruments or tools are available to realize objectives. Policy required action in accordance with these principles, even if this might violate ethical standards based on religious belief. The effective state, insisted its supporters, therefore must have the kinds of servants who would interpret this *raison d'état* wisely and would be willing to do whatever had to be done to advance it.

One of the foremost spokesmen for, and practitioners of, this approach was Armand Jean du Plessis, Cardinal Richelieu, who served as the chief minister of France from 1624 to 1642. In this capacity, he ruthlessly pursued the concept of *raison d'état* for the benefit of his state. He began by creating a centralized Ministry

of External Affairs to manage the rational and continuous pursuit of foreign policy. He also wisely stressed the importance of selecting skilled ambassadors and of carefully calculating risks and opportunities. These valuable contributions, however, often were overshadowed by Richelieu's extremes; for like others who sometimes fancy themselves as unusually shrewd practitioners of statecraft, he seemed to recognize few limits or restraints. He placed French political goals above everything else, including the religious values that he supposedly represented as an official of the church. Upon learning of his death, for example, the pope allegedly responded, "If there is a God, then Cardinal de Richelieu will have much to answer for. If not . . . well, he had a successful life." He aggressively crushed domestic adversaries, employed a vast network of spies, launched and deliberately prolonged foreign wars, subsidized Protestants to wage war against Catholics, bribed, manipulated, and fomented insurrections. As he stated in his *Political Testament*, "In matters of state it is necessary to profit from everything possible; whatever is useful is never to be despised." The end to be achieved, he declared directly, was simple: "power."

Such a maxim of statecraft hardly went uncontested. In fact, the views and practices of Richelieu provoked outrage among those who viewed them as deeply offensive to ethical norms. One of the most devastating critiques came from the renowned theologian Cornelius Jansenius, who wrote:

> Do they believe that a secular, perishable state should outweigh religion and the Church? . . . Should not the Most Christian King believe that in the guidance and administration of his realm there is nothing that obliges him to extend and protect that of Jesus Christ, his Lord? . . . Would he dare say to God: Let your power and glory and the religion which teaches men to adore You be lost and destroyed, provided my state is protected and free of risks?

The brilliant Dutch jurist, theorist, theologian, and diplomat Hugo Grotius, regarded as "the father of international law," similarly argued that if leaders behaved exclusively on narrow definitions of *raison d'état* and expediency, they would only perpetuate uncontrolled violence and anarchy. He feared a world, according to his seminal 1625 book *On the Law of War and Peace*, in which there was

> a license in making war of which even barbarous nations would have been ashamed; recourse was had to arms for slight reasons, or for no reason; and when arms were taken up, all reverence for divine and human law was thrown away; just as if men were henceforth authorized to commit all crimes without restraint.

The only way to break this vicious pattern, he insisted, could be found in states realizing that it was in their own long-term interests to create a broader system of relations among themselves based on reason and ethical norms. Among these, he included negotiation, the peaceful settlement of disputes, and those norms respecting the "laws of nations," the "natural rights" of human beings, and specific criteria for a "just war" that placed limits on the use of force in statecraft. Others went even further in protesting prevailing practices, including the Quakers, who issued their famous testimony of pacifism opposing all war as a matter of ethical principle.

Despite these arguments, the exercise of power in the seventeenth century was such that Grotius was imprisoned and the protestors were largely silenced, while Richelieu and his calculating successor Cardinal Jules Mazarin rose in prominence.

The results of such rejection of normative values, when combined with the growing capacity of modern states to expand and use their military forces, became clear in the exhausting Thirty Years' War. Three decades of warfare produced a complete disregard for professed religious principles, the secularization of politics, the demise of self-imposed restraints, war profiteering, a breakdown of the civilian social order, a flood of desperate refugees, marauding bands of mercenaries, and arguments that "realism" and "military necessity" somehow justified the ruthless and unrestrained use of military force.

But even the most devastating of wars eventually end. When they do, as we shall see throughout this book, those who survive must come to grips with the destruction they have experienced and decide how they might avoid a renewal of violence by constructing a new postwar order of peace and security. In this case, negotiations brought the Thirty Years' War to an end with the settlement known as the Peace of Westphalia in 1648. This landmark agreement provided political and legal recognition of an emerging order that still shapes international relations in our own time. It dismantled the vertical structure of the medieval world with its universalist vision and authority exercised by feudal, imperial, and ecclesiastical actors. The Westphalia settlement created instead a horizontal structure composed of several powerful, juridically independent, secular, territorial states coexisting on a continental scale. These states claimed absolute sovereignty, insisting that they were equal under the law irrespective of their religion or form of government, and that no supranational authority existed above them that might interfere in their pursuit of their own national self-interests, especially when concerning force and statecraft.

This emphasis on war, states, and *raison d'état* in the Westphalia settlement received further support when Thomas Hobbes, the English political philosopher and translator of Thucydides, published his influential and uncompromising *Leviathan* in 1651. Here, he presented his view of international relations simply enough: "a perpetual and restless desire of power after power" where life is "solitary, poor, nasty, brutish, and short," and where there is "war of every man against every man." The only way to survive this struggle for survival, he argued, could be found in establishing a powerful sovereign state that recognized no authority other than its own. Kings and their ministers eagerly seized on such a theory to provide justification for their insistence that royal power was absolute, and that they could act in the name of their state as they wished or were able, safe in the knowledge that they were shielded from any individual responsibility for their actions, including their use of force.

The newfound power of these states, when coupled with the prerogative of sovereignty that they so vociferously claimed, could be seen in a number of cases. When Frederick William inherited the leadership of Brandenburg-Prussia, for example, he held only a loose collection of territories surrounded by adversaries and overrun with foreign troops, and a population depleted by famine and pestilence. He calculated that a close, reciprocal relationship existed between military and political institutions, and believed that he could never survive without an efficient bureaucracy and a strong army. The last was the key to the whole. As he wrote in his political testament, "A ruler is treated with no consideration if he does not have troops of his own. It is these, thank God!, that have made me *considerable* since the time I began to have them." Thus, in the course of his reign from 1640 to 1688, he

organized one of the first departments of war to oversee the creation of a large and efficient military force. To administer this ever-growing army and to collect ever-higher taxes to pay for it, Frederick William laid the foundations of the famous Prussian bureaucracy, which, in turn, helped him to further build and centralize state power. All this inspired an energetic and determined tsar (who eventually would be called Peter the Great) to believe that similar efforts could transform his own fragmented state, and who thereby set about to make an emerging Russia parallel an emerging Prussia.

No state proved better at harnessing resources and accelerating this process of centralizing power than France. Under Louis XIV, who ruled from 1643 to 1715, its ascendancy prevailed in European politics, culture, architecture, science, art, administration, force, and statecraft. In fact, the extraordinary influence of France seemed to be embodied in its best ambassadors, who linked the capitals and courts of Europe and whose instructions, reports, and skills served as a model of diplomatic practice for years to come, making it possible for the French language to replace Latin as the *lingua franca* of diplomacy itself.

Confirmation of this serious attention to diplomatic method also appeared with the publication in 1681 of a book by Abram de Wicquefort entitled *L'Ambassadeur et ses fonctions*. Based on his own observations about force and statecraft, well-seasoned by his checkered career as a diplomat, this work provided both a commentary on the political ethics of the seventeenth century and an incisive analysis of the art and practice of diplomacy. Wicquefort was not abashed by the peccadilloes of his colleagues, which varied from financial peculation and sins of the flesh to crimes of violence. He believed that in a corrupt age, one could not expect that embassies would be oases of virtue. A state could afford to be served by bad men, but not by incompetent ones. Competence, in his mind, began with a clear understanding that the major task entailed "protecting his Master's subjects and conserving his interests." In this pursuit, Wicquefort stressed that prudence and moderation were the qualities that should be assiduously cultivated. The former he equated with caution and reflection, and the latter with the ability to curb one's temper and remain cool and collected in moments of tension. "Those spirits who are compounded of sulphur and saltpeter, whom the slightest spark can set afire, are easily capable of compromising affairs by their excitability, because it is so easy to put them in a rage or drive them to a fury, so that they do not know what they are doing."

The means of diplomacy, however, are not the same as the ends to which they are employed. As the French writer Jean de la Bruyère wrote mockingly, the diplomats of the age "spoke only of peace, alliance, and public tranquility . . . and thought only of their special interest." This became perfectly clear as Louis XIV continued to amass power and wealth and to grow in strength. Through time, the skill, style, and sophistication of his diplomats could not mask the fact that he wanted them used to secure the ends of greater glory and influence, dreaming that both domestic and foreign affairs might revolve around him as the planets revolve around the sun. He used alliances, bribes, schemes, and marriage arrangements to manipulate others. But when he wanted more, he quickly turned to warfare as the means of overturning the territorial settlements of Westphalia. His armies were the most powerful and most feared in Europe. It was no accident that in

his luxurious palace of Versailles, built in part to impress and intimidate foreign envoys, decorations commemorated military victories and his throne was located adjacent to his *Salon de Guerre*, or War Room.

French dominance became so great, in fact, that it seriously threatened not only other states, but European peace and security as a whole. As such, the overpowering influence and hegemony of France invited resistance in the form of combinations and alliances on the part of others. This is exactly what happened, and due to calculations of their own *raison d'état*, they began to formulate a new appreciation for a partnership and a balance of power. They began to understand that if any state or combination of states became too powerful, the peace and security of all the others would be seriously threatened. The only way to prevent this, they believed, would be to consciously create a balance of countervailing power in which each state would throw its weight where it was most needed. A type of balance of power, of course, had been practiced in Machiavelli's time in the intermittent warfare between the city-states of the Italian peninsula, but now it was being deliberately invoked as a principle of collective security and an instrument of statecraft within a multipolar system as a safeguard against domination. As we shall see, this concept evolved further in the eighteenth century, and during the nineteenth century it became one of the basic principles of the international system itself.

Such thinking played a significant role as the powers attempted to respond to France's continued and dangerous hegemonic expansion. They worried as Louis XIV sent his troops into Alsace and captured the vital bridgehead of Strasbourg. Their fears intensified as he then moved into northern Italy. When he attempted to seize Cologne, they realized the necessity of forming a partnership to counter their common threat. Austria, the Netherlands, and England thus joined their forces and created the first of the great balance-of-power coalitions to fight what came to be the Nine Years' War, which raged from 1688 to 1697.

Battles, despite all of the effort and costs of life and resources, dragged on for years and settled little. As such, it is not surprising that they would evoke serious discussions about the nature of power, the nature of sovereign states, and the nature of human beings themselves. Some observers agreed with Hobbes that men were like all other animals, beasts caught up in vicious and perpetual struggles for survival. By the end of the century, however, the philosopher John Locke began to articulate an alternative point of view. He argued that humans, unlike other creatures, were rational beings, not helplessly condemned to some deterministic and immutable jungle of competition but instead capable of peacefully ordering their relations with others. They had choices, said Locke, and did not always need to fight. They could create ways to avoid or resolve conflict without resorting to violence. What they needed was the will to do so.

WAR AND COMPETITION IN THE EIGHTEENTH CENTURY

Regardless of these arguments, the fact of the matter is that the eighteenth century opened, continued, and closed with warfare. One of the great paradoxes of the age is that the century that produced an articulation of the principles of democracy

and human rights from the Enlightenment, the ethical restraints proposed by Immanuel Kant, the exquisite music of Mozart and Handel, enormous advances in the sciences, and that called itself "The Age of Reason," also witnessed brutal competition, aggression, and incessant violence in war. It was a century encompassing three systemic wars involving all or most of the Great Powers and seven wars involving at least two of them, resulting in battlefields soaked in blood with deaths estimated to be seven or eight times greater than those that would occur in the following century.

All this began with the Great Northern War of 1700–1721, fought for supremacy in the Baltic area. Denmark and Saxony began by invading Sweden but, to their considerable dismay, were routed by armed forces led by the eighteen-year-old and daring ruler, Charles XII. The Danes capitulated at once, and Charles without pause threw his troops against a much larger Russian force advancing on Narva and quickly defeated them. But military victories sometimes create the foundation of greater defeats, for they often lead to an exaggerated sense of strength and ability and a corresponding lack of perspective and restraint. Now overconfident, Charles determined to exert control over Poland. It proved to be his undoing, for it distracted him from the more serious threat from the east under the leadership of Peter the Great.

If anyone was forced to acknowledge the constant presence of warfare during this time, it surely was Peter. Indeed, during his entire reign of 1689–1725 he experienced only eighteen consecutive months of peace. He had carefully observed that those states emerging in the West all had done so because of their ability to create a centralized bureaucracy, build a standing army and navy, and practice *raison d'état*. He used this as a model for his own country, and when his armed forces were ready, he sent them into action. Charles responded with an invasion; and this, like other later invasions of Russia, was defeated by winter and famine. He ultimately suffered a monumental military loss at the Battle of Poltava in 1709. The Russian fleet then defeated the Swedish navy. These events broke the power of Sweden, enabling Peter to gain critical strategic possessions, build his new capital of St. Petersburg, and establish a foreign ministry and a diplomatic service, thereby confirming the dramatic emergence of Russia as a Great Power.

Warfare raged simultaneously in the west with the War of Spanish Succession. When efforts to find an heir to the throne of Spain failed, the rivalries and ambitions of the Bourbon and the Habsburg dynasties exploded into open war. Louis XIV again sent his troops smashing into the Netherlands. This threatened the others. In response, they formed the Grand Alliance, the largest coalition of forces aligned against a single power that Europe had ever seen. The resources of Austria, Portugal, Prussia, and the Netherlands were all brought to bear, in addition to England's significant contributions of finances, naval forces, and a land army of nearly 70,000 troops. These forces battled against each other from 1701 to 1714.

The resulting campaigns spread over these years left Europe economically bankrupt and physically and emotionally exhausted. An overwhelming desire for peace thus arose and thereby laid the basis for two agreements, collectively known as the Treaty of Utrecht. According to its terms, Louis XIV was forced to renounce his goal of a union of the French and Spanish thrones, give up the Spanish Netherlands to Austria, relinquish all territorial gains east of the Rhine

River, raze the fortifications at Dunkirk, and surrender important territories in North America to Great Britain (as England became known after its union with Scotland in 1707). Britain also acquired the strategically valuable base of Gibraltar from Spain and confirmed her ascendance as a formidable naval power. In addition, the treaty elevated the status of Prussia.

The broader significance of the Utrecht settlement is that it marked the first treaty that explicitly referenced a balance of power. It revealed a conscious appreciation for an international system composed of several states capable of holding each other in mutual restraint. In letters accompanying the treaty between Queen Anne and Louis XIV, for example, the French ruler noted that the objective was "obtaining a general Peace and securing the Tranquility of *Europe* by a Ballance of Power." The Spanish king similarly acknowledged the importance of "the Maxim of securing for ever the universal Good and Quiet of Europe, by an equal Weight of Power, so that many being united in one, the Ballance of the Equality desired might not turn to the Advantage of one, and the Danger and Hazard of the Rest."

Some of the most serious and profound thinking about force and statecraft, as we shall see, occurs at the end of prolonged and devastating wars or in the wake of dangerous crises. These are the times when issues of survival are most acute, when the futility of violence alone becomes apparent, and when leaders and peoples alike become vitally interested in finding ways of avoiding future strife. The end of the War of Spanish Succession, for example, brought Louis XIV himself to the point of reflection on the use of armed force, leading him to say to his great-grandson with great solemnity, "My child, you will one day be a great king. Do not imitate me in my taste for war. Always relate your actions to God and make your subjects honor Him." The same war also motivated one of Louis XIV's most gifted diplomats, François de Callières, to write his famous *On the Manner of Negotiating with Princes* in 1716. It has been called "a mine of political wisdom" and described by no less an authority than diplomat and historian Sir Harold Nicolson as a book that "remains to this day the best manual of diplomatic method ever written."

Callières began by insisting that since statecraft was so "high, important, and difficult," it required extremely skilled people with very special knowledge and qualities. Among these he emphasized "an observant mind, a spirit of application which refuses to be distracted by pleasures or frivolous amusements, [and] sound judgment." He stressed self-control, the capacity to put oneself in another's place and to see their perspective, creativity, a patient temperament, agreeable manners, prudence, and a sense of modesty and moderation. Of particular interest, and in sharp contrast to those who callously argued that an ambassador was no more than "an honest man sent to lie abroad for the good of his country," Callières stressed the importance of possessing ethical values and exemplary character, warning of those who tried to get what they wanted by dishonesty. The good diplomat, he wrote,

> will never rely for the success of his mission either on bad faith or on promises that he cannot execute. It is a fundamental error, and one widely held, that a clever negotiator must be a master of deceit. Deceit is indeed the measure of the smallness of mind of him who uses it; it proves that he does not possess sufficient intelligence to achieve results by just and reasonable means. Honesty is here and everywhere the best policy. . . . Apart from the fact that a lie is unworthy of a great Ambassador,

"A Mine of Political Wisdom": François de Callières, *On the Manner of Negotiating with Princes*

> it actually does more harm than good to negotiation, since though it may confer success today, it will create an atmosphere of suspicion which tomorrow will make further success impossible. . . . The negotiator therefore must be a man of probity and one who loves truth; otherwise he will fail to inspire confidence.

Perhaps the most distinctive feature of Callières's treatise was the seriousness of purpose and sense of responsibility with which he argued that a nation's statecraft should be conducted by trained professionals rather than by politically connected amateurs. He complained bitterly of the grave damage done to state interests by those novices "appointed so to speak over-night to important embassies in countries of which they know neither the interests, the laws, the customs, the language, nor even the geographical situation." Governments should seriously reflect, he advised, on the story of the Duke of Tuscany who, upon complaining to a visitor about the inadequate capacities of a Venetian resident at his court and receiving the answer, "I am not surprised. We have many fools in Venice," retorted with spirit, "We have many fools in Florence, but we take care not to export them." Extreme care, he insisted, should be taken in the selection of one's representatives, and they should be educated in the lessons of history, should be trained in

diplomatic skills and techniques, and should know "exactly the state of the military forces both on land and sea" in order to understand the challenges of force and statecraft.

These words of Callières found reinforcement in Antoine Pecquet's *Discours sur l'art de négocier* in 1737. Together, they represented not only personal views but an acknowledgment of the requirements of the age. The states that emerged in the course of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries were those that could modernize their governmental structure, mobilize their resources, build up effective and disciplined military establishments, and create a professional bureaucracy that administered state business in accordance with the principles of *raison d'état*. An indispensable part of this was the establishment of a well-organized foreign ministry, led by a specialized foreign minister or state secretary for foreign affairs, engaged in recruiting and supervising an expanding staff and diplomatic corps, keeping their archives in good order, assessing the capabilities and intentions of other powers, and shaping and implementing policy. This development, like that of resident embassies, was designed to provide continuous attention and expertise to the serious business of conducing statecraft in order to defend and advance the state's vital interests.

If any doubts remained about the effectiveness of this process of state building, they would have been answered by the emergence of Prussia. When soldier-king Frederick William I assumed the throne during the wars against Louis XIV, he was determined to strengthen his state by whatever means necessary. To do this, he began by centralizing the Prussian bureaucracy. But he focused his major attention on the army by building its officer corps, improving its weapons, increasing its budget, and expanding its numbers. During his reign he made Prussia's army the fourth largest in Europe, although the state ranked only tenth in territory and thirteenth in population. This exaggerated emphasis reversed the relationship between ends and means, in the words of military historian Michael Howard, by making Prussia "not so much a State which possessed an army, as an army which possessed a State."

This is the army and state that he bequeathed to his son, Frederick II, who eventually came to be called Frederick the Great. Here was a man who seemed to combine so many of the paradoxes of the age in his own person. He prided himself on being a product of the Enlightenment and Age of Reason, corresponded with French philosophers like Voltaire whom he invited to his palace at Sans Souci, studied poetry, loved music, became an accomplished flutist and composer, and wrote a long treatise attacking the advice of Machiavelli. Yet, at exactly the same time, he single-mindedly pursued what he perceived as Prussia's *raison d'état*, or national interest, by further expanding his armed forces and deliberately launching wars. Indeed, as he explained in one of his more famous statements: "Negotiations without arms produce as little impression as musical scores without instruments."

Frederick secured the throne in 1740. The same year saw the death of the Austrian emperor Charles VI, who had asked the European powers before he died to promise that they would observe the integrity of his possessions under the rule of his daughter, Maria Theresa. Frederick signed this pledge. Nevertheless, neither his signature nor the arguments against unethical behavior that he himself had used in his *Anti-Machiavel* treatise deterred him now from taking advantage of

what seemed to him to be an ideal opportunity for aggrandizement. He thus wrote a memorandum to his ministers that should be quoted in full for the glaring light that it throws on him and war and competition in the eighteenth century:

> Silesia is the portion of the Imperial heritage to which we have the strongest claim and which is most suitable to the House of Brandenburg. The superiority of our troops, the promptitude with which we can set them in motion, in a word, a clear advantage we have over our neighbors, gives us in this unexpected emergency an infinite superiority over all other powers in Europe. If we wait till Saxony and Bavaria start hostilities, we could not prevent the aggrandizement of the former which is wholly contrary to our interest . . . [As for the other powers], England and France are our foes. If France should meddle in the affairs of the empire, England could not allow it, so I can always make a good alliance with one or the other. England could not be jealous of my getting Silesia, which would do her no harm, and she needs allies. Holland will not care, all the more since the loans of the Amsterdam business world secured on Silesia will be guaranteed. If we cannot arrange with England and Holland, we can certainly make a deal with France, who cannot frustrate our designs and will welcome the abasement of the imperial house. Russia alone might give us trouble. If the empress lives . . . we can bribe the leading counselors. If she dies, the Russians will be so occupied that they will have no time for foreign affairs . . . All this leads to the conclusion that we must occupy Silesia before the winter and then negotiate. When we are in possession we can negotiate with success. We should never get anything by negotiations alone except very onerous conditions in return for a few trifles.

This memorandum requires little comment. It reveals a mind that is completely dominated by *raison d'état*, or *Staatsräson*, and one that admits no legal or ethical restraints to ambition. With such calculations and without hesitation, he dismissed his treaty obligations and ordered his ever-expanding armies to invade and seize the rich Austrian province of Silesia. This patent act of aggression is still remembered as the "Rape of Silesia."

Frederick's attack began a complex series of interrelated power struggles and two wasting wars in which the original cause often dropped completely out of view. In the first of these, the War of Austrian Succession, extending from 1740 to 1748, Prussia and its allies resembled a pack of wolves stalking its injured and vulnerable prey, all hoping to gain something at Austrian expense. The second was the bloody Seven Years' War, which raged from 1756 to 1763. This began with Frederick's surprise attack on Saxony, which provided a temporary tactical military advantage but quickly produced the very strategic alliance of Austria, France, and Russia that he had hoped to prevent. Only Britain and Hanover supported Prussia. In both wars, the change of allies from one side to the other resulted not from any overriding principle of an international system or order, but rather from an unrestrained lust for selfish gain, whether in Europe, India, the Levant, along the African coasts, the West Indies, or in North America, where the struggle was known as the French and Indian War.

These predatory eighteenth-century wars for empire soon spanned continents. This process was greatly facilitated by a new technological invention for navigation

known as the marine chronometer, a clock that enabled navies to calculate longitude at sea, making it possible for the first time to combine a numeric value of longitude (measuring east–west position) with one of latitude (measuring north–south position), and thereby determine their location anywhere on the planet. When such instruments were placed in the hands of those pursing conquest, Europeans could project their military might and extend their power over much of the world.

It is difficult to read of these incessant struggles in which the powers sought territorial conquest and changed sides without the guidance of any but the meanest of principles without thinking of the eighteenth century as an age of anarchy and rapine. Promises and treaty commitments seemed to mean nothing, and enemies and allies changed with little warning at all. Ruthless and incessant competition fed on itself, driving governments to pay unremitting attention to their armed forces, which, in turn, increasingly became both the symbol and the substance of the power of the modern centralized state. Frederick established Prussia's status as a Great Power, for example, but at the cost of spending nearly ninety percent of the state's total revenues for his army and bleeding his country white in twenty-three years of nearly continuous warfare. Moreover, the rapaciousness of the age became even clearer with the blatant land grabs in 1772, 1793, and 1795, when Austria, Russia, and Prussia ruthlessly carved up Poland and distributed the booty between them in accordance with their own selfish interests. One contemporary statesman described this condition of devastating war and the convulsions of power politics as the result of "people without morals, intent on taking and perpetually hungry."

There were, to be sure, those who refused to fatalistically accept these brutally competitive, wasting practices and who spoke out against them. One of these was George Washington, a man whose vast experiences as commander-in-chief of the Continental Army during the American Revolutionary War, and then as the first president of the fledgling and highly vulnerable United States, made him extraordinarily knowledgeable of the very real challenges of force and statecraft. In his political testament known as the Farewell Address, Washington urged his fellow citizens not to pretend that they somehow could seal themselves off in isolation from the reality of rest of the world. They needed to practice wise statecraft by turning not away fromt the necessities of foreign affairs and diplomacy (hence, the first cabinet-level department to be created was the Department of State), but rather from ill-considered alliances based on emotion that might entangle the country and all of the "intrigues," "vices," "hostilities instigated by pride, ambition, and other sinister and pernicious motives," "quarrels and wars," and "permanent, inveterate antipathies against particular Nations, and passionate attachment to others" so shamefully on display in Europe throughout the eighteenth century. More than most, he fully appreciated the security requirements for appropriate armed force to defend against external threats, but warned of the necessity to avoid "those overgrown military establishments which, under any form of government, are inauspicious to liberty." Washington advised that the new nation follow "a different course" that combined realistic prudence with ethical principle:

> Observe good faith and justice towards all Nations; cultivate peace and harmony with all. Religion and morality enjoin this conduct; and can it be that good policy does not equally enjoin it? It will be worthy of a free, enlightened,

> and, at no distant period, a great Nation, to give to mankind the magnanimous and too novel example of a people always guided by an exalted justice and benevolence. Who can doubt that in the course of time and things, the fruits of such a plan would richly repay any temporary advantages which might be lost by a steady adherence to it? Can it be, that Providence has not connected the permanent felicity of a Nation with its Virtue?

Other outspoken critics emerged as well. Many of these sought to use reason to overcome violence, to establish restraints on the rapacious behavior of states, and to place limits on the expansive claims of state sovereignty and use of armed force. Some, like Emmerich de Vattel, who wrote *Le Droit des gens* in 1758; Fortuné Barthélemy de Félice, the author of *Code de l'humanité* in 1778; and Georg Friedrich von Martens in his *Précis du droit des gens* of 1789, looked to the rule of law and tried to enunciate certain norms that might govern force and statecraft. Others turned to philosophy, religious belief, ethics, or human reason to lay a foundation for some form of collective society, federation, institution, or international organization that might restrain war and competition, including such notable thinkers as Jean-Jacques Rousseau in his essay on *Projet de paix perpétuelle* in 1782, Jeremy Bentham in *A Plan for Universal and Perpetual Peace* in 1789, and Immanuel Kant in *Perpetual Peace* in 1795.

The hopeful also drew attention to the fact that although the powers frequently fought against each other, there were some practical restraints on the level of violence. It certainly helped, of course, to engage in wars of tactical maneuver on battlefields restricted to what one could see with the naked eye and to fight in neat line formations with weapons of such limited lethality that brightly colored uniforms could be worn. But there was more. Few statesmen were willing to run the risk of challenging the larger equilibrium as established at Utrecht. In addition, the fear of excessive casualties played a restraining role, as did seasonal weather, which annually sent troops into winter quarters. Theologians and philosophers developed theories of just war, and various leaders made tentative efforts to develop several laws of war that placed restrictions on military commanders concerning the destruction of crops, livestock, or civilian dwellings and the taking of hostages. No authority existed to enforce these rules, and they were often violated, but their very existence gave hope that some level of cooperation could be obtained to protect civilian society from the horrors that accompanied the violence and destruction of warfare.

But the broader ideas of cooperation, common interests, and mutual restraints often remained largely confined to philosophical discourse and visions of what might be rather than actual practice. During the eighteenth century, they rarely influenced the deliberations or actions of governments dominated by greed, envy, and fear, who persisted with their intrigues, territorial ambitions, vastly expanding military budgets, and violent competition without bothering themselves with such thoughts. As historian Friedrich Meinecke starkly concluded in his book *Die Idee der Staatsräson*: "Never was the isolation of the power-state carried so far . . . never, either before or since, did universally European ideas and interests form such a small part, as they did then, in European policy of the first rank." To make

the Great Powers pay attention to such matters, something of sufficient magnitude was needed to seriously frighten them into genuine collaborative action and partnership, something that would force them to think beyond themselves alone and covert the dream of a European concert into a working reality.

That shock finally came in the form of the French Revolution and the wars of the Republic and the Napoleonic Empire. When the revolution broke out in 1789, however, so entrenched were the European powers in their customary, competitive ways that they believed France would become so paralyzed and incapable of conducting foreign policy that they simply could pick up the spoils. The idea that the domestic revolution might actually have threatening, external consequences hardly seems to have occurred to them. This attitude proved almost fatal, for it allowed the revolutionary forces in France to increase their strength before going on the offensive, thereby making the others highly vulnerable to being divided and conquered once those forces were hurled against them. They realized only too late that the political and social revolution before them was creating a military revolution as well. The *levée en masse*, or general conscription, not only provided massive numbers but produced patriotic zeal and fanaticism, unleashing human and material forces in ways that previous military commanders could never imagine. This meant, in the notable words of historian R. R. Palmer, "The wars of kings were over; the wars of peoples had begun."

When France launched its first offensive war in 1792, it did so for a variety of reasons, not the least of which was the old ploy of distracting attention away from domestic problems by focusing on a foreign adversary. But even this did not unduly alarm the other powers. The Prussians and the Austrians responded in uncoordinated campaigns and seemed to be more nervous about each other than about their common enemy, France. Indeed, the Prussians sold out their Austrian ally by a secret treaty that promised the French territory if they received other lands as compensation elsewhere. Similar examples could be given, as each one in turn seemed to be eager to strike its own deals, turning to appeasement, neutrality, alliance, or any other arrangement that might offer it temporary advantage.

This kind of selfish, shortsighted, and unreliable behavior enabled the French armies to conquer the Rhineland and then to penetrate into southern German lands, Switzerland, and Italy. Once Napoleon Bonaparte seized power in 1799, France was either at war or preparing for war for the next sixteen years. He did not regard war as a last resort or as an emergency measure, but rather as the tool of choice to feed his ambitions. His military victories against Austria, Prussia, and Russia, one after the other, allowed him to increase his conquests, to extend his empire, to destroy any balance of power, and thereby to become the dominating master of the continent at the expense of everyone else

But like other military conquerors before and since, Napoleon suffered from an intoxication of success and did not know when to stop. By grasping for too much, he lost everything. He fatally overreached himself in 1812 when he decided on the desperate gamble of invading Russia. The vastness of the land, the harsh weather, the distant lines of communication, and the unrelenting "scorched earth" policy of the Russians that sought to deny him any semblance of victory all proved to be too much. They decimated his army, forced him to retreat in the dead of

winter, and shattered the myth of his invincibility. Once this occurred, the other powers finally formed a coalition that would bring about his final demise.

Their successful collaboration produced defeat for French forces during the Battle of Nations at Leipzig in 1813. But their awareness that they had not yet fully escaped danger made them realize the necessity of keeping the coalition together and, at long last, induced them to take the first real step toward converting the aspiration of a concert into action. The agonies of the wars of the eighteenth century and those of Napoleon convinced them that peace and security could not simply be left to the ad hoc residue of the collision of each state narrowly defining and then asserting its own *raison d'état*. Recent disasters made them consider that their own national self-interest might be best served by considering their collective interests as a whole.

Consequently, the governments of Austria, Prussia, Russia, and Britain signed the Treaty of Chaumont in 1814 in which they agreed not only to continue the war against Napoleon until a definitive victory had been gained, but also—as a conscious design—to continue in partnership after their victory. As they significantly explained: "The present Treaty of Alliance having for its object the maintenance of the balance of Europe, to secure the repose and independence of the Powers, and to prevent the invasions which for so many years have devastated the world, the High Contracting Parties have agreed among themselves to extend its duration for twenty years from the date of signature." This held them together until Napoleon was finally and decisively defeated at the Battle of Waterloo in 1815 and then, remarkably, went on to serve as the basis for the first notable experiment in creating an international system based on the principles of balance and concert on behalf of peace and security.

SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER EXPLORATION

On the origins and development of diplomacy, see Keith Hamilton and Richard Longhorne, *The Practice of Diplomacy* (New York, 2011 ed.); Jane Burbank and Frederick Cooper, *Empires in World History* (Princeton, 2011); Jeremy Black, *A History of Diplomacy* (London, 2010); Adam Watson, *The Evolution of International Society* (New York, 2009); Raymond Cohen and Raymond Westbrook (eds.), *Amarna Diplomacy* (Baltimore, 2002); Geoff Berridge et al. (eds.), *Diplomatic Theory from Machiavelli to Kissinger* (London, 2001); Linda and Marsha Frey, *The History of Diplomatic Immunity* (Columbus, OH, 1999); M. S. Anderson, *The Rise of Modern Diplomacy* (London, 1993); Torbjörn Knutsen, *A History of International Relations Theory* (Manchester, 1992); Garret Mattingly, *Renaissance Diplomacy* (New York, 1988 ed.); D. E. Queller, *The Office of the Ambassador in the Middle Ages* (Princeton, 1967); Harold Nicolson, *The Evolution of Diplomatic Method* (London, 1954); and Ragnar Numelin, *The Beginnings of Diplomacy* (New York, 1950). The classics remain Thucydides, *The Peloponnesian War*, and Niccolò Machiavelli, *The Prince*, available in many editions.

Force and statecraft during the seventeenth century are treated in John Lynn, *The Wars of Louis XIV* (New York, 2013); Peter Wilson, *The Thirty Years War* (Cambridge, MA, 2011);Olaf Asbach and Peter Schröder (eds.), *War, the State, and International Law in the Seventeenth Century* (Farnham, UK, 2010); Madeleine Haehl, *Les Affaires étrangères au temps de Richelieu* (Brussels, 2006); Charles Kegley, Jr. and Gregory Raymond, *From War to Peace* (Boston, 2002); Derek Croxton and Anuschka Tischer, *The Peace of Westphalia* (Westport, CT, 2001); Geoffrey Parker (ed.), *The Thirty Years' War* (London, 1997 ed.); Derek McKay and H. M. Scott, *The Rise of the Great Powers, 1648–1815* (London, 1983); William Roosen, *The Age of Louis XIV: The Rise of Modern Diplomacy* (Cambridge, MA, 1976); Cardinal Richelieu, *The Political Testament of Cardinal Richelieu*, Henry Bertram Hill (trans.) (Madison, WI, 1968). Many editions of Thomas Hobbes, *Leviathan*, and Hugo Grotius, *On the Law of War and Peace*, are available.

Thoughtful discussions of war and competition during the eighteenth century can be found in Tim Blanning, *Frederick the Great* (New York, 2016); H. M. Scott, *The Birth of the Great Power System* (London, 2005 ed.); Armstrong Starkey, *War in the Age of the Enlightenment* (New York, 2003); Frederick II, *Frederick the Great on the Art of War*, Jay Luvaas (ed. and trans.) (New York, 1999); Paul Schroeder, *The Transformation of European Politics* (Oxford, 1996); Geoffrey Parker, *The Military Revolution: Military Innovation and the Rise of the West* (Cambridge, UK, 1996 ed.); Friedrich Meinecke, *Die Idee der Staatsräson* (Munich, 1963 ed.); and Gordon A. Craig, *The Politics of the Prussian Army* (New York, 1955). The classic by François de Callières, *De la manière de négocier avec les souverains*, can be found in translation as *On the Manner of Negotiating with Princes* in several editions.

For the late eighteenth century and revolutionary period, see R. R. Palmer, "Frederick the Great, Guibert, Bülow: From Dynastic to National War," in Peter Paret (ed.), *Makers of Modern Strategy* (Princeton, 1986 ed.); Jonathan Dull, *The French Navy and American Independence: A Study of Arms and Diplomacy, 1774–1787* (Princeton, 1976); and Felix Gilbert, *To the Farewell Address* (Princeton, 1970 ed.). On the Napoleonic era, see Andrew Roberts, *Napoleon* (New York, 2015); John Kuehn, *Napoleonic Warfare* (Santa Barbara, CA, 2015); Robert Asprey, *The Reign of Napoleon Bonaparte* (New York, 2002); Antoine d'Arjuzon, *Castlereagh, ou Le défi à l'Europe de Napoléon* (Paris, 1995); and Henry Kissinger, *A World Restored* (New York, 1973 ed.).

Broad treatments can be found in Barry Buzan and Richard Little, *International Systems in World History* (Oxford, 2000); Jeremy Black, *War and the World: Military Power and the Fate of Continents* (New Haven, 2000 ed.); Andreas Osiander, *The States System of Europe* (Oxford, 1994); Paul Kennedy, *The Rise and Fall of the Great Powers* (New York, 1987); and Hedley Bull, *The Anarchical Society* (London, 1977).

CHAPTER 2

The Classical System of Diplomacy, 1815–1914

Wars, by their very nature and the extent of their effort and destruction, transform states and societies in innumerable ways. One of these occurs with the emergence of an intensified search to develop new practices that might bring about postwar peace and security. The greatest challenge for force and statecraft during the nineteenth century, to illustrate, was the task of devising a system that would contain international violence and prevent convulsive wars like those that had just ripped their world apart. The survivors desperately wanted to avoid a repetition of the bloodshed caused by the brutal competition of the eighteenth century and by the more recent upheaval of revolution and Napoleonic domination. They realized that only collective action had made victory possible and that only collective action would guarantee their survival. For this reason, they began to speak explicitly and quite self-consciously of the necessity to create a "system" that was "best for the general interest of Europe *as a whole*." Three generations of statesmen worked at this and their efforts found expression in three different approaches, each of which reflected the characteristic tendencies of its time. In doing so, they succeeded in producing what historian Hajo Holborn describes as a

> system whose foundations lasted for a full century. For a hundred years there occurred no wars of world-wide scope like those of the twenty-odd years after 1792. Europe experienced frightful wars, particularly between 1854 and 1878, but none of them was a war in which all the European states or even all the great European powers participated. The European wars of the nineteenth century produced shifts of power, but they were shifts within the European political system and did not upset that system as such.

Their efforts created a period of unprecedented peace and a system that, despite its imperfections, is still described as the "classical system" of diplomacy.

BUILDING A SYSTEM WITH A BALANCE OF POWER AND A CONCERT

This system began at the Congress of Vienna in 1814–1815 and those who participated in it were path-breakers. There had been diplomatic congresses and conferences before, but those meetings had been largely for the purpose of ending hostilities and dividing the spoils of war. The leaders gathered at Vienna set themselves another, more important task. Austrian foreign minister Prince Clemens von Metternich, who served as host, made this clear when he said:

> No great political insight is needed to see that this Congress could not be modeled on any which had taken place. Former assemblies which were called congresses met for the express purpose of settling a quarrel between two or more belligerent powers—the issue being a peace treaty. On this occasion, peace had already been made [he was referring to the First Peace of Paris, which had ended hostilities] and the parties meet as friends who, though differing in their interests, wish to work together towards the conclusion and affirmation of the existing treaty.

What did he mean by "conclusion and affirmation"? He believed that their major task was not merely to terminate a specific war, but to actually construct a broad-ranging and viable international system of peace and security.

This did not mean that the statesmen gathered at Vienna utterly neglected the kinds of things that usually preoccupy political and military leaders at the end of hostilities. They made sure that they received compensation in accordance with the degree of their sacrifice and their contribution to the victory. But they did not allow these matters to obtrude upon their more important task of building a viable system. In this effort (and in sharp contrast with those who eventually would make decisions at the Paris Peace Conference of 1919), these skilled negotiators knew the value of moderation and compromise, and wisely refused to allow themselves to succumb to the temptation for revenge against the recently defeated.

Wilhelm von Humboldt, the Prussian ambassador to Vienna and classical scholar, to illustrate, became horrified when he witnessed conquering soldiers entering Paris and wanting to blow up all the bridges over the Seine simply because they were named for Napoleonic victories. He and his colleagues knew that this kind of vindictiveness might satisfy temporary passions, but would harm any chance of consensus and thereby the long-term maintenance of a system. They understood perfectly well that it is not prudent to push a victory too far or to make a humiliation too extreme. They realized that they would need France to play its appropriate role as a Great Power in the postwar period, and thus wisely refused to exclude her from the negotiations or to cripple her in any serious way that might sow the seeds of future war and bloodshed. Most important, they believed that their own interests required that they recognize the legitimate interests of others. As such, they calculated that their own *raison d'état* was best served by possessing a broader sense of *raison de système*.

Metternich and Robert Stewart, Viscount Castlereagh, the British foreign secretary, served as the two principal architects of this new system. They understood in a most impressive way that any international system requires several critical

components, one of which is an appropriate structure. In this case, they agreed on a balance of power. They recognized the importance of power rather than ignoring or deploring it, and therefore attempted to address one of the most difficult yet most important tasks of statecraft: how to put power into the service of peace and security. They believed that those capable of using force needed to be willing and able to maintain the principle of what they called "a just equilibrium" and to resist any unilateral attempts at domination.

The negotiators at Vienna consequently made enormous efforts to adjust territory, resources, and population as equitably as possible and to distribute capabilities among the Great Powers—balancing off Russian gains in Poland and Finland with Austrian holdings in Italy, Prussian acquisitions in the Rhineland and Saxony with British possessions in the Mediterranean, and constructing buffer zones between them in the Low Countries and in lands that lay between Prussia and Austria. Such divisions, as one delegate noted, were designed to serve as shock absorbers that would preserving the "balance through an inherent force of gravity." These system builders believed that by investing these arrangements with the sanction of legitimacy, they would create a structure that would balance their strengths against each other, deter aggression, and thereby afford the best guarantee for peace and security. They knew that no one would be completely satisfied, but, as Henry Kissinger observes, they wisely understood that this actually would assist in maintaining the system as a whole:

> Paradoxically, the generality of this dissatisfaction is a condition of stability, because were any one power *totally* satisfied, all others would have to be *totally* dissatisfied and a revolutionary situation would ensue. The foundation of a stable order is the *relative* security—and therefore the *relative* insecurity—of its members.

The statesmen who guided this work were not, however, so naïve as to believe that they had created a utopia or insured themselves against future trouble simply by this elaborate exercise in cartography. They had learned the important lesson from the Utrecht experience that a purely mechanical balance of power could not operate automatically on its own. They had seen many arrangements come and go and were well aware that change would occur and that a new Frederick or a new Napoleon—or, for that matter, a new revolution—might arise to challenge their settlement. Consequently, they realized the necessity of adding an essential component for any system of peace and security: the acceptance of shared goals and objectives.

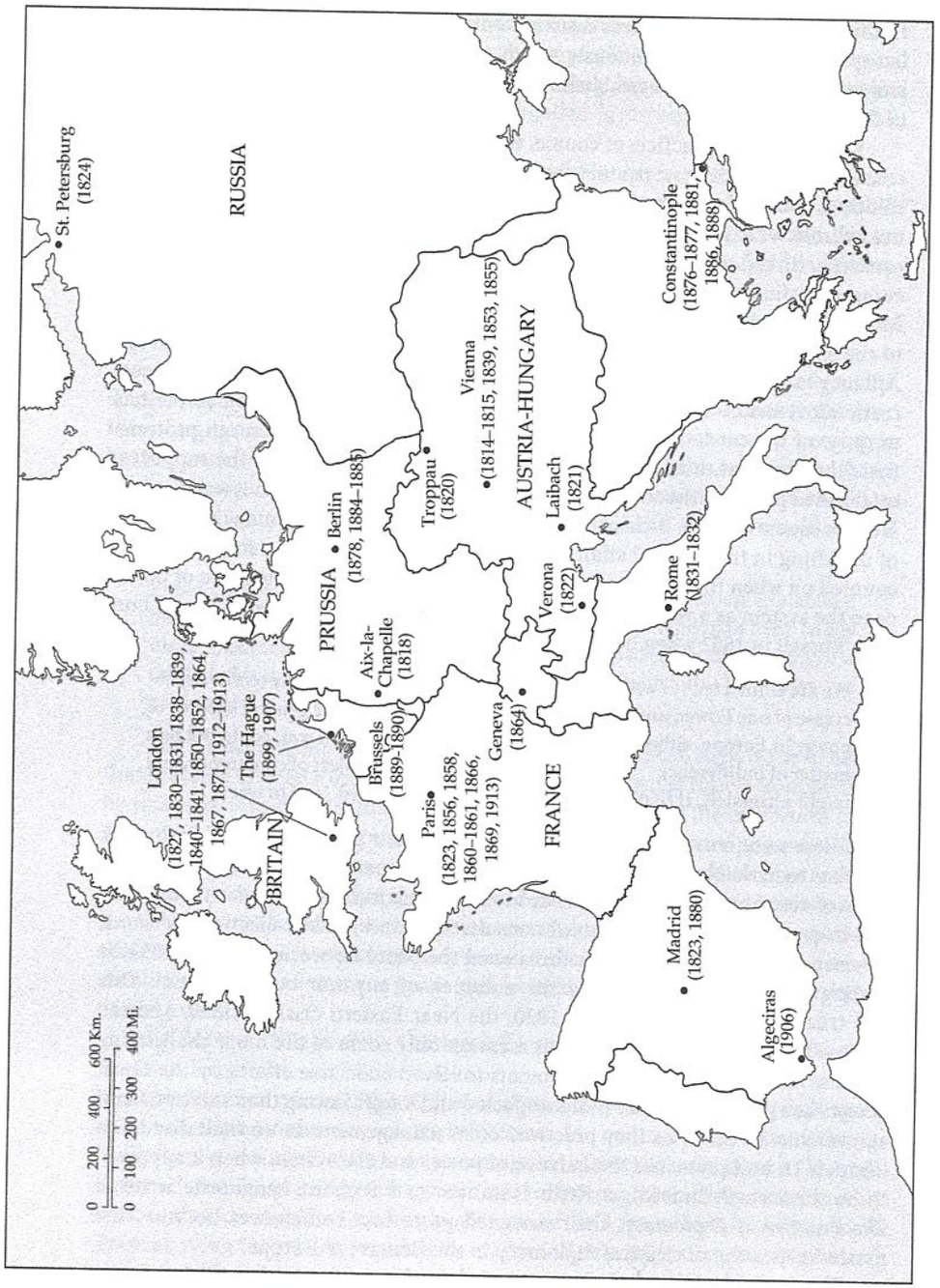
To do this, Metternich, Castlereagh, and their colleagues, including the Prussian king Frederick William III and the Russian tzar Alexander I, realized that, despite their vastly different personalities, they would have to reach agreement not only on common goals and objectives, but on their joint responsibility to the system as a whole and their determination to maintain and defend it. They understood that those with greater power had to accept greater obligations. For this reason, they created the Quadruple Alliance of 1815 (soon broadened to include France), tying themselves together by treaty and requiring that they institute an executive directorate of their foreign ministers to jointly hold collaborative conferences "for the purpose of consulting upon their common interests, and for the consideration of measures which . . . shall be considered the most salutary for the repose and prosperity of Nations and for the maintenance of the Peace of Europe." In this way, the new system was constructed with a guiding document and a regulatory mechanism to continuously watch over and protect it should any threats emerge. This marked the establishment of what came to be called the Concert of Europe.

Only time and practice, of course, would reveal how the orchestration of this concert would actually work and whether by compromise and consent it could find solutions short of war. The Great Powers would have to decide what was and was not a threat, what was and was not legitimate, how their patterns of conflict and cooperation linked them together, and how far they were committed to go in taking common action to manage and defend their system. This would not be easy. When Metternich and Alexander feared that liberalism and nationalism posed a threat to the existing thrones of Europe, for example, they tried to turn the Quadruple Alliance into an agency that would intervene to suppress revolutionary or democratic movements. The British viewed such attempts as a subversion of the true purpose of the concert, and in a determined note of 1818, Castlereagh protested that "the idea that their force was collectively to be prostituted to the support of established power without any consideration of the extent to which it was abused." He subsequently made it clear that, while Britain could not countenance a policy of meddling in the internal affairs of other states, its cooperation could always be counted on when there was a genuine threat to the peace, to the balance of power, or to the system as a whole. His successors often repeated this pledge, as did Lord John Russell in 1852 when he declared:

> We are connected . . . with the general system of Europe, and any territorial increase of one Power, any aggrandizement which disturbs the general balance of power in Europe, although it might not immediately lead to war, could not be a matter of indifference . . . and would, no doubt, be the subject of conference, and might ultimately, if that balance was seriously threatened, lead to war.

These were not only words. The British and their partners were able to work together remarkably well to develop a political consensus on normative values and rules of restraint with certain procedures and institutions to make them effective in practice. They held mutual consultations and made collective decisions, for example, in every crisis that threatened the peace between 1815 and 1854 by finding solutions that prevented the outbreak of any war between them. This was true in the Belgian crisis of 1830, the Near Eastern crisis of 1838, and the Schleswig-Holstein crisis of 1850, to mention only some of the more challenging disputes. Since the resulting settlements involved collective efforts by the Great Powers as a group, they were more respected and longer lasting than mere bilateral agreements. In this way, they practiced crisis management, as we shall discuss in Chapter 11, and preserved the balance of power and the system when it appeared to be threatened. Indeed, as Keith Hamilton and Richard Langhorne write in *The Practice of Diplomacy*, their designed peacetime conferences became "the master institution of classical diplomacy in the Concert of Europe"

There were less dramatic, but nevertheless effective, examples of other forms of management through cooperation and partnership as well. Participants in the



A Physical and Political Balance and Sense of Responsibility: The Classical System's 1815 Settlement and Subsequent Conferences

Concert of Europe also worked to develop ways of regulating their competition by developing techniques of crisis prevention. In order to help prevent crises and wars from breaking out between them in the first place, for example, they created certain means to coordinate relations, minimize friction, avoid misperceptions and miscalculations, clarify respective interests, establish restraints, and make clear distinctions between legitimate and illegitimate ends and means in the pursuit of policy. Some of these took the form of binding obligations in explicit treaties with the force of international law, as when they established the neutrality of Belgium in 1831, in their words, "to prevent events from disturbing the general peace." Others were more implicit in nature, taking the form of tacit understandings, gentlemen's agreements, advanced consultations, or the offering of good offices for mediation, as occurred during the 1826 dispute between Greece and the Ottoman Empire and the 1842 conflict between Britain and France.

This system was not perfect, and many disputes arose. But there can be little doubt that the balance of power and the Concert of Europe worked well in preventing any major wars until 1854, in keeping the wars of the 1850s and 1860s within limits, and in ensuring that they ended with moderate rather than vindictive settlements. It is instructive to ask why this was so.

One explanation can be found in the fact that statecraft at this time was led by some unusually skilled individuals who had a sense of responsibility and were not subject to certain pressures that subsequently caused governments, often reluctantly, to do things that were bound to arouse the suspicion and fear of other powers and to invite violent retaliation. For the most part, statesmen of these years did not have to worry about public opinion as they set their course in foreign affairs. There were exceptions to this, of course. Early human rights advocates exerted pressure at the Congress of Vienna to end the international slave trade, and Turkish atrocities against Christians in the Balkans certainly provoked public outrage and demands for intervention to protect the victims of persecution. But in general, foreign ministers did not overly concern themselves about what might be in tomorrow's headlines. Governments were also free from massive pressure from organized economic interests, which at this stage were convinced that the best thing that governments could do for them was to simply leave them alone.

The maintenance of this system was also enormously enhanced by the limitations upon armed force. In order to avoid the dangerous excesses of the "nation in arms" of the French Revolution and Napoleon, armies in the first part of the century were deliberately and by mutual agreement scaled back and composed of professionals rather than mass, citizen-conscripted soldiers. There was an absence of any serious arms races or military pressure groups. The technological limits were even more striking. Simple, smooth-bore muskets firing solid lead balls represented the most sophisticated weapons, and their inaccuracy was such that combatants believed that they could stand upright in tight line formations wearing brightly colored uniforms.

This is precisely the context in which one of the most insightful books of the nineteenth century appeared in 1832: Carl von Clausewitz's masterpiece *On War*. Based upon his study of history and his own experiences in combat, he wrote not only about the essence of warfare, but also about armed force as an instrument of statecraft. In this regard, his most-quoted sentence in the entire book is as simple

as it is profound: "war is . . . a continuation of political activity by other means." "No one," he further explained, "starts a war—or rather no one in his senses . . . without first being clear in his mind what he intends to achieve by that war and how he intends to conduct it." As such, war must never become an end in itself, and priority must always be given to political over military purposes. He concluded: "The political object is the goal, war is the means of reaching it, and means can never be in isolation from their purpose." "No other possibility exists, then, than to subordinate the military point of view to the political."

Here we have the link between force and statecraft: the former is the instrument of the latter. When this principle was ignored (as it would be during the First World War when the insubordination of the German military chiefs destroyed the ability of civilian leaders to maintain control), the results could be disastrous. But when it was followed, as it was throughout much of this period of the classical system, limited ends and limited means significantly reinforced each other, thereby contributing toward the maintenance of the system as a whole.

Yet another reason why this system worked so well was the fact that whatever ideological differences existed, they were not sufficient to lead to war. There were moments, to be sure, when serious divisions surfaced. After the revolution of 1830, Europe seemed to be divided between liberal Britain and France and conservative Russia, Prussia, and Austria. But if one examines the record carefully, it is clear that the powers ignored their ideological differences more than they observed them, opting instead for flexibility and fluidity during times of crisis. The British, for example, had no compunction about concluding agreements with the Eastern powers when they felt France was threatening their interests; the French did the same at the expense of Britain. When Metternich became worried about the tsar's policy in the Near East, he consulted the British about ways of restraining him. When the tsar became annoyed with his Prussian ally's Baltic ambitions, he collaborated with the British to frustrate them. Interests rather than ideology brought them together. As Clausewitz observed:

> If we consider the community of states in Europe today, we . . . find major and minor interests of states and peoples interwoven in the most varied and changeable manner. Each point of intersection binds and serves to balance one set of interests against the other. The broad effect of all these fixed points is obviously to give a certain amount of cohesion to the whole. Any change will necessarily weaken this cohesion to some degree. The sum total of relations between states thus serves to maintain the stability of the whole.

Finally, whatever differences existed between the Great Powers were largely subordinated to the high degree of consensus on shared values and a broad sense of responsibility among them. The leaders fundamentally accepted the balance of power created at the Congress of Vienna, but they understood that whereas such a balance might inhibit the *ability* to overthrow the international system, agreement on shared values with their self-imposed restraints inhibits the actual *desire* to do so. They accepted the legitimacy of the system and were able to establish a high degree of restraint on the part of single powers (Tsar Nicholas could have

exacted a higher price for his aid to the Turks in 1833 but refused to do so because he feared that such unilateral action might lead to emulation), a willingness to honor existing treaties, and, when a single power seemed on the point of seeking aggrandizement (as did France in 1840), a willingness to participate in concerted action to restrain it. This consensus provided an essential element in holding them together in what they often called the "Family of Nations" that preserved the major features of the Vienna settlement and maintained an equilibrium of forces from 1815 to 1854.

CHANGE AND AN EXPERIMENT WITH A DEFENSIVE ALLIANCE SYSTEM

The world never stands completely still, and no international system can sustain itself unless it is able to adjust and adapt to new circumstances. Over time, new forces, personalities, ideas, values, discoveries, and technological developments sooner or later challenge existing arrangements and bring about transformations. In this regard, the nineteenth century certainly provided no exception. After the widespread domestic revolutions and upheavals of 1848 against prevailing authority, a new spirit began to emerge in Europe. It found its strongest expression in the policies of a new generation of young men in a hurry, infused with nationalism for their own countries, and no longer willing to fully abide by the collaborative principles and practices invented and followed by the statesmen of Vienna. These newcomers included Felix zu Schwarzenberg of Austria, Camillo di Cavour of Piedmont, Louis Napoleon of France, and especially Otto von Bismarck of Prussia. The vent that opened the way to the fulfillment of the ambitions of these *Realpolitiker* (a term invented in the 1850s to describe those who defined statecraft solely in terms of the calculation and exercise of raw physical power) was the outbreak of the Crimean War in 1854. This senseless struggle between Russia and Britain resulted not from any deliberate threat to either one, but rather from imaginary dangers.

By the time the war was over, more soldiers had lost their lives from disease than in military combat and neither side had secured any appreciable gains. This explains in part why the negotiators at the Conference of Paris in 1856 made strides in contributing to the growing body of international law limiting the operation of armed force by formulating rules for naval warfare, protecting the rights of noncombatants, and guaranteeing the rights of neutrals in times of war. But distrust caused by the war left a situation in which Russia, France, Prussia, and the rising power of Piedmont all wanted some territorial revisions of the balance of power. Britain, wearied by its exertions in the Crimea, emerged in a pronouncedly isolationist mood. After this, the concert could not always completely manage crises or exert effective restraints, as evidenced by the Austro-Italian War of 1859, the Danish War of 1864, the Austro-Prussian War of 1866, and the Franco-Prussian War of 1870. These were all limited wars of short duration, and not one escalated into a European or system-wide conflict. Nevertheless, they caused the balance of power to be modified by the creation of the two new states of Italy and Germany.

With these changes, the tasks of statesmanship became increasingly difficult. Psychologically, there was no longer the experience of a commonly shared invasion

by an obvious aggressor like Napoleon to remind them of the necessity of working together, and the lessons of history learned by one generation are not always accepted by another. Moreover, tensions did not relax after 1871 as they had after 1815. The resentments and frustrations left by the wars of unification in Italy and Germany encouraged a combativeness that was fed by the widespread currency of Darwinism and by the sensationalism of newspapers that pandered to a gullible and excitable public and introduced the expression "jingoism." The emotional dimensions of the French, unwilling to forget the annexation of Alsace and Lorraine by Germany; the Austrians, seeking to expand into the Balkans and arousing Russia's anger and distrust; the Italians, burning to despoil the Austrians of any remaining areas inhabited by Italian minorities; and the state of hypersensitive nationalism all posed serious problems for the maintenance of the system. Further tensions arose as the Industrial Revolution increasingly revealed inventions and weapons that would eventually transform armed force.

Friction between the powers also increased due to structural readjustments and political and economic developments. Italian and German unification, for example, managed to significantly reduce the number of buffer zones, or shock absorbers, created by those assembled earlier at Vienna. This meant that the Great Powers now possessed more contiguous borders, and these made them rub up against each other uncomfortably. At the same time, the age of free trade was coming to an end and the age of neomercantilism and imperialism dawning, so that tariff wars and colonial competition between powers would be more likely. Statesmen interested in following sensible partnerships in foreign policies were no longer as free of domestic pressures as Metternich had been. Pressure groups from industry and agriculture, for example, began to push for tariffs, for colonies, and then for expanded armaments.

These developments caused deep concern for the diplomats of Europe, especially to the leading statesman of the period, Bismarck. His country, Germany, had been the principal beneficiary of the new balance of power that he had forged through wheeling and dealing, and he was determined to keep the gains secure. Toward this end, he regarded Germany as a sated power and now wanted nothing but peace and stability. As he wrote to one of his ambassadors, "we do not pursue power-politics, but safety-politics."

But history shows few examples of sudden conversions, like the apostle Paul on the road to Damascus, whereby leaders who gained their reputations by launching wars suddenly became men of peace. Consequently, although Bismarck's objectives had genuinely changed, he continued to be haunted by his earlier reputation for "blood and iron," intrigue, and *Realpolitik*. The other powers did not always trust him. He thus came to learn the important lesson that it is often much easier to upset a diplomatic system than it is to maintain it. When several crises broke out that carried the very real possibility of war that would almost certainly involve Germany, for example, it became apparent to Bismarck that times and conditions had changed and that he could no longer rely on traditional friendships. If Germany's place in the balance of power was to be preserved, it would have to be by some new means.

Bismarck reluctantly concluded that the only way of achieving his objective would be to maintain a strong army for deterrence and to create defensive

alliances. At a minimum, he hoped that these would relieve Germany of potential isolation and might, if things went well, give him some measure of control over the policies of enough of the other powers to prevent them from embarking upon actions that would threaten the general peace. To do this, he began by negotiating a series of treaties in 1873 between the conservative governments of Germany, Austria, and Russia, tying them together in what became known as the Three Emperors' League. His next step involved creating the more serious Dual Alliance of 1879 with Austria, stipulating mutual defense in the event of an attack by Russia and benevolent neutrality if either ally were attacked by a power other than Russia. Although the details of this treaty with Austria were secret, the conclusion was not, and it startled the Russians into changing their tune and asking for a further elaboration of the Three Emperors' League in 1881, strengthening the ties between the signatories. The Triple Alliance followed the next year between Germany, Austria, and Italy, providing for defense against France or against "two or more Great Powers not members of the alliance"—in other words, any combination of France, Britain, or Russia. Bismarck hoped that these measures would greatly reduce the chance of a Russian attack on Germany, would block the possibility of a Franco-Russian alliance, and would minimize the possibility of a war between Austria and Russia in the Balkans or a conflict between rivals Austria and Italy.

Bismarck's elaborate defensive alliance system thus was different from the earlier arrangements of the Vienna system. It tied most of the powers in one way or another to Berlin. Although he carefully cultivated the British and worked to avoid confrontations with them, they chose to remain apart. France, against its will, remained isolated. But the Bismarckian way of maintaining this equilibrium of forces was complicated. Herein lay its chief weakness. It operated on the basis of insecurity and by means of secrecy, a high degree of disingenuousness, and constant maneuver. Indeed, the German emperor William I looked at this precarious alliance system and said to Bismarck, "I would not be in your shoes. You seem to me at times to be like a rider who juggles on horseback with five balls, never letting one fall."

This challenge became apparent during the tense Bulgarian crisis of 1886–1887, when a renewal of Austro-Russian antagonism in the Balkans dissolved the Three Emperors' League and a simultaneous wave of *revanchisme* in France made a rival Franco-Russian alliance seem possible. Bismarck was able to contain these dangers only by the most questionable means: deliberately manufacturing a war-scare designed to intimidate the French, signing a secret Reinsurance Treaty between Germany and Russia, and professing support for Russian objectives in the Balkans. All of these efforts were belied by covert connivance with third powers and stock market manipulations that rendered his promises meaningless. His performance often has been described as a tour de force, but the course that he followed was so subterranean, devious, and manipulative that the other powers came to believe that he was lying to them. As their distrust increased, the days of the Bismarckian alliance system were numbered.

Despite these strains and problems, the fact remains that on many occasions the Great Powers demonstrated their capacity after the Crimean War to act together in concert with flexibility and moderation to reach mutual accommodation in order to maintain the system as a whole. The successes of their numerous

diplomatic conferences revealed their sense of responsibility to participate in collective decisions and actions, respect treaties, and generally observe restraint in their international actions.

With specific reference to vital issues of forces and statecraft, for example, they agreed to establish neutral, demilitarized zones in an attempt to prevent crises from occurring between them in the first place, as they did in their 1863 treaty on the Ionian Islands of Greece, pledging that "no armed force, either naval or military, shall at any time be assembled or stationed upon the territory or in the waters of those islands." The next year they broke dramatic new ground with the famous Geneva Convention, the first multilateral treaty in history designed to lay the foundations of humanitarian law and the creation of the International Committee of the Red Cross by protecting the rights of individuals wounded in times of war irrespective of their nationality. Soldiers, they announced, did not surrender all of their basic human rights simply because their countries forced them to put on a military uniform. In 1868 they signed the Declaration of St. Petersburg renouncing the use of certain kinds of explosive projectiles in war.

The Great Powers also practiced crisis management sufficient to defuse danger and avert general war, as demonstrated during the 1878 Congress of Berlin that we shall explore in Chapter 11. They successfully worked to localize or contain certain regional and non-European conflicts in order to prevent larger confrontations among themselves, fearing that a minor or peripheral dispute might easily escalate out of control. When an insurrection broke out in Bosnia and Herzegovina in 1875, to illustrate, their negotiations resulted in a collective accord stating:

> The Powers have come to an agreement to make use of all the influence at their disposal in order to localize the conflict, and diminish its dangers and calamities by preventing Serbia and Montenegro from participating in the movement. Their language has been the more effectual from being identic, and has, consequently, testified the firm determination of Europe not to permit the general peace to be imperiled by rash impulses.

Moreover, the diplomats of this period also understood the importance of crisis prevention, and they worked to draw demarcation lines of interest, set limits, and establish restraints and ground rules for governing their interactions in order to avoid serious misunderstandings and disputes. This was the motivation for the well-known 1884–1885 Conference of Berlin, which, in the words of one authority, "had not been called as the result of a crisis, but rather in an attempt to forestall the possibility of one arising." Such achievements at a time of considerable tension and competition provide an ample demonstration of what could be accomplished by diplomacy within this classical system.

FURTHER CHANGE AND AN EXPERIMENT WITH BIPOLAR ALIGNMENT

Given the nature of change and the need to adapt to evolving circumstances, it is not surprising that with time, other experiments would be tried as well. Thus, the third came in the years from 1907 to 1914, when all of the major European powers arranged themselves into a bipolar alignment. It was this particular manifestation

of the politics of equilibrium that fastened itself upon the imagination of later generations and, because of its catastrophic end, made "balance of power" an opprobrious term in the postwar period, particularly in the United States.

It is possible—and not entirely unjustified—to place blame for the emergence of this other experiment, with all of its deplorable consequences, upon German policy after 1890. The abrupt dismissal of Bismarck from his post and the German government's decision to dismantle its alliance with Russia precipitated the shift. Whatever the weaknesses of the Bismarckian arrangement, the fact remains that it did not divide Europe into two confrontational camps of countervailing power. Instead, it brought most states into a defensive and interlocking network in which no single power, including Germany, could be assured of support in any unilateral aggressive action. Because the system would come into operation against any effort to upset the system as a whole, as historian Norman Rich observes, it was defensive by nature and thus served as a deterrent to potential aggressors in every country. This critical feature began to change once the German-Russian alliance was severed, for it encouraged the Russians to look elsewhere for friends, leaving Europe in a much more unstable and fragile condition.

Perhaps things would have evolved differently with more able and restrained leaders, but German foreign policy was now directed by the often impulsive, insecure, and bombastic Kaiser William II, his vain chancellor Bernhard von Bülow, and his assertive chief of the imperial naval office Grand Admiral Alfred von Tirpitz. Together they launched a new offensive policy they described as a "new course" of *Weltpolitik* designed to project force and secure what they called "a place in the sun" and thereby make Germany a global power. They were no longer interested in mere defense, but wanted more, and aggressively pushed to acquire colonial possessions and to build a huge new navy.

These actions immediately brought them into conflict with the spheres of influence of the other Great Powers in Africa, the Pacific, and the Middle East. The Russians, for example, became deeply worried to find the Germans trying to move into the Persian Gulf, and began to reconsider their options. The British and the French, who competed in Africa and came uncomfortably close to a war in the Sudan in 1898, discovered that Germany was becoming a potential threat to both of them and began to mend their fences. At the same time, an alliance of domestic conservative political parties and groups that derived their financial support from heavy industry and big agriculture steadily began to push the German government into launching an ambitious naval armaments program in 1898 and 1900, challenging others on the seas and imposing tariff barriers on trade. This could not help but alienate the British, French, and Russians and in the end drive them toward each other. As one British Foreign Office analyst concluded in a famous memorandum: "The union of the greatest military with the greatest naval power in one state would compel the world to combine for the riddance of such an incubus."

It would be a mistake, however, to think of this fateful course as having been caused solely by German clumsiness and impercipience. Even if William II, Bülow, and Tirpitz had been wiser, more responsible, and less provocative, it is difficult to believe that the apprehensiveness of others would have been any different. As historian Paul Kennedy observes, it was the transformation of Germany from a cluster of second-rate states under insignificant princelings to a united empire

with a significant population, impressive industrial resources, and advanced technology that provided the cause of concern. By the end of the nineteenth century, Germany was not only growing out of its European "skin" but acquiring the early attributes of a world power. To the British, this change brought about new anxieties and made it easy for them to see Germany not just as a competitor but as a future foe. Lord Esher was not alone in thinking that "there is no doubt that within measurable distance there looms a titanic struggle between Germany and Europe for mastery. The years 1793–1815 will be repeated, only Germany, not France, will be trying for European domination." Such fears increasingly led the British to conclude that they could no longer maintain their security alone and that their cherished and long-standing policy of "splendid isolation" might no longer be so splendid. They consequently sought to contain this threat by entering into partnerships with Germany's other antagonists.

The resulting experiment did not suddenly occur overnight, but took seventeen years to unfold after the first precipitous events of 1890. Diplomats in Paris and St. Petersburg worked from 1891 to 1894 to transform an exchange of notes and a military convention into an alliance between republican France and tsarist Russia. After considerable negotiation, Britain and France agreed to settle their major differences and signed the Entente Cordiale in 1904. The Anglo-Russian Agreement followed in 1907. These two bilateral accords initially sought simply to settle major differences, and both deliberately avoided using the word "alliance." Nevertheless, through time and as tensions increased, they evolved more into serious military partnerships. These various arrangements came to divide the powers into two groups: the Triple Alliance (Germany, Austria, and Italy) and the Triple Entente (Britain, France, and Russia), a fact confirmed in their strategic war plans predicated on two armed and hostile camps.

This new iteration of equilibrium possessed both similarities and differences with the other experiments of the nineteenth century. They all involved attempts to balance the power and the interests of the Great Powers of Europe. This latest effort, like the Bismarckian arrangement but unlike the Vienna settlement, relied less and less on general agreement and more on secret agreements among the selected parties themselves. In addition, this new variant created a bipolar alignment that came to be much more inflexible than the two previous experiments, thus limiting its freedom of action and causing it to last for a much shorter period of time. There was little interpenetration here and no direction by a strong alliance leader as there had been at the time of Bismarck. Each side operated on the assumption that an increase in armaments would gain them respect rather than create suspicions about their motives, thereby impaling themselves on the horns of "the security dilemma." As a consequence, the years from 1907 to 1914 often were characterized by accelerating armament races, inflexible war plans, arrangements made by military staffs on their own (sometimes without any regard for political implications), mutual suspicions, and fears of being encircled and destroyed.

Nevertheless, even in the midst of this intense bipolar competition, the Great Powers realized that they had a common interest to cooperate, and therefore demonstrated that it was still possible to manage their relations through diplomacy and to establish rules to restrain the use of force. During the Hague Conferences of 1899 and 1907, for example, they made pioneering efforts to establish not only

the principle of international arbitration but also practical rules of procedure and a formal institution to settle conflicts, and did so by accepting the restraints of the Convention for the Pacific Settlement of International Disputes and creating the Permanent Court of Arbitration. During the Algeciras Conference of 1906, they managed to keep the highly combustible first Moroccan crisis from exploding into war. Similarly, in 1907 and 1908, the powers demonstrated mutual restraint by prohibiting weapons and armed forces from the strategically important Åland Islands astride both the Baltic Sea and the Gulf of Bothnia, as they said at the time, in order "to remove distrust and avoid conflict by means of international agreement rather than have recourse to the sword." The negotiators further pledged that if events threatened international stability in the area, they would "communicate with each other for concerting among themselves" on ways to take common measures to protect peace and security.

But through time, it became increasingly difficult to reach these kinds of agreements. Crises in the Balkans, Morocco, and other parts of the decaying Ottoman Empire began to take their toll. Governments began to worry about how long they could continue to go to the brink and still keep their alignments together. They suffered from recurrent nightmares in which they saw themselves abandoned by their allies and encircled by a host of enemies. Since it seemed critical to possess friends—and much more dangerous to lose them to the other side—they came to strengthen the loyalty of their allies, even when it was foolish to do so.

Bismarck, for example, had prudently restrained Austria by making it clear that any commitment from Berlin would be limited to cases of self-defense if attacked. During a crisis in Bosnia, however, the German chief of general staff abandoned this policy by telling his counterpart in Vienna that he now could rely upon the support of Germany, regardless of the origins of the conflict. Such an assurance was patently dangerous. The British and the French began to have similar apprehensions about losing the Russians, and consequently tended to give them an unusual degree of latitude instead of warning them that, if they were foolhardy, they would have to stand alone. This not only reduced flexibility and the ability to respond to changing circumstances, but placed the stronger members of the respective alignments at the mercy of their less-stable partners. The danger, of course, was that all of the participants of the Triple Entente and Triple Alliance might easily be pulled into a conflict precipitated by their most irresponsible members, thereby placing the entire system itself at great risk.

CHARACTERISTICS OF THE SYSTEM

Those responsible for statecraft in the nineteenth century, as we have seen, worked to construct and then maintain a viable diplomatic system for peace and security. Their success left a remarkable record: not one war occurred between the Great Powers for forty years and, after the Crimean War, no general war for another sixty years. To accomplish this, they needed not only to confront their fear of repeating the nearly disastrous mistakes of the past, but to respond to the changes that occurred during their own times. They consequently developed three specific experiments or approaches. Although each of these had their differences, they all occurred within the broader system and shared certain features to a greater or

lesser extent that reveal much about the nature of diplomacy and its challenges as well as the classical system as a whole.

This system was characterized in the first instance by its **composition, numbers, and types of actors.** The major participants were the Great Powers of Europe, or what Castlereagh called "the powers of the first order." This hierarchy included Britain, France, Prussia (then Germany), Austria, Russia, and, to a lesser extent after its unification, Italy. Their relative strength gave them power over much of the rest of the world, including those whom they controlled in their expanding colonial empires. They thus made and enforced the rules of behavior for everyone else. The only other states that showed any serious or sustained interest in international relations at the time also tended to be European. Two others, the United States and Japan, still stood in the wings, waiting but not yet called upon to play their parts. Indeed, when one foreign ministry official once suggested seeking more cordial relations with the emerging United States, Bismarck dismissed the notion with contempt because, as he explained it, Americans "don't matter at all." Such a system, composed only of a very small number of actors that were all nation-states from a single continent, greatly simplified the tasks of statecraft.

The **structure** of this system took the form of a balance among these Great Powers. They acknowledged that it was not likely that a utopian state of perpetual peace and universal love could ever be achieved. They recognized that there were times when states wanted to prevail over their neighbors and might be willing to launch wars if necessary to do so. But to prevent the inherent anarchy that would result from such ambitions, they realized that they needed to create a countervailing balance of power designed to check or deter any one state from seeking hegemony against the others. This required that they—as the ones capable of using armed force and thereby doing the most damage to each other and to all other lesser states—each play a role and cooperate in partnership as necessary to preserve that balance or equilibrium. It was necessary for them to reach the conclusion that they shared both interests and responsibilities, and thus that the only true security could be found in collective security.

Even if one of them was defeated in a war, for example, that one needed to be readmitted as a participant in the balancing process. Such structural readjustments worked at their best when the powers maintained flexibility in making alliances and shifted partners as changing circumstances required, but at their worst when they tried to isolate one of the members or began to lose their ability to adjust, as they did in the dangerous years from 1907 to 1914. They also understood that this structure would contribute to the maintenance of the system only if the major actors remained of roughly comparable power vis-à-vis one another. Toward this end, they tried to avoid cases of unilateral aggrandizement by a number of means, sometimes by applying the principle of compensation: when one of the Great Powers acquired—or wished to acquire—additional territory, population, or resources, it was understood that the others had to receive payoffs in kind, usually at the expense of weaker neighbors or imperial possessions.

In addition, this structure was designed to support a decentralized, self-regulating system of sovereign nation-states. Power and responsibility remained solely in the hands of the constituent state actors. This obviously marked a significant difference from the structure of other systems (such as that of the Chinese and

Ottoman empires during the same period), proposals for world government that have emerged from time to time, or broad-based international organizations. There was, in other words, no single hegemonic power or supranational political authority at the apex of the system to settle their quarrels or to enforce the rules. These requirements must be met for the maintenance of any system, but in this case the Great Powers achieved them by coordinating and regulating their own behavior.

The classical system of diplomacy also possessed the characteristic of **shared goals and objectives.** Statesmen realistically understood that no system can possibly survive unless there is an essential consensus on fundamental assumptions and aims by all the major participants, especially among those necessary to maintain the system. A balance of power inhibits the *capacity* to overthrow a diplomatic system, but—of critical importance—agreement on shared values inhibits the *desire* to do so. There could be no major actor so dissatisfied that it questioned the legitimacy of the entire order and therefore sought to overthrow it. The Great Powers agreed upon a common purpose: to ensure their own survival by harnessing their power to the system as a whole and creating a collective security arrangement that would maintain peace and stability.

This could not be achieved unless they reached a consensus on basic principles, accepting each other's existence, defining their own interests in terms of the larger good, seeing the relationship between their national security and broader international security, and agreeing upon their shared responsibility to defend what they created. They had to strike a difficult balance between the desire to pursue purely selfish objectives in rivalry, on the one hand, and the need to maintain the system as a whole in partnership, on the other. For this reason, the Great Powers did not perceive each other as implacable enemies engaged in a struggle for elimination, or a "zero-sum" contest in which any gain for one meant a loss for the others. Rather, they viewed each other as limited competitors, while at the same time partners within the system. Armed force could be a permissible and legitimate instrument of policy as long as it was employed for limited ends. Any war that seriously threatened the existence of another member, however, and thus jeopardized the entire system, had to be prevented.

Statesmen of the period also clearly realized that they needed to develop certain **norms, methods, and rules of conduct.** No political system, whether local, national, regional, or international in scope, can exist unless the participants agree to follow certain shared rules and practices in conducting their relations. They thus understood that it was in their interest to create self-imposed restraints, establish standards for what was regarded as legitimate and acceptable behavior, provide some regulation of their rivalries, and direct change in such a way as to maintain their system. They were not so naïve as to think that the balancing and equilibrium would automatically occur, that they had created a fixed utopia, or that they had protected themselves against future crises simply by redrawing the map or by joining hands at a diplomatic conference. Instead, they recognized that conflict among themselves could not easily be prohibited or eliminated in the real world of international politics. They believed, however, that such competitive behavior need not be totally arbitrary, haphazard, or unrestrained.

To deal with this, they reached consensus on a wide variety of normative values, methods, and rules to regulate their competition and keep it within

mutually acceptable bounds, many of which were articulated in the widely used handbook of Carl von Martens entitled *Guide diplomatique*. This required that democracies and absolute monarchies alike accept certain self-imposed restraints, honor their commitments, and be willing to take collective action to enforce the rules if necessary. Part of this stemmed from pragmatic self-interest with the calculated knowledge that, as they said, "no Power can free itself from treaties without at the same time freeing others." Yet another part was based upon a larger sense of responsibility as stakeholders to the system as a whole. "The Great Powers," observed one leading statesman, "feel they have not only a common interest, but a common duty to attend to." With such attitudes and through such means, they hoped that any changes or adjustments would be *within* the system rather than *of* the system.

The results of their efforts demonstrated an imaginative array of mutual self-restraints tailored to fit specific problems. At a very practical level, they agreed on rules of protocol for ranking diplomatic representatives and for using the French language in written communication and in the texts of treaties. On a larger scale, they collectively created procedures that enabled the Concert of Europe to meet, to promote cooperation, and to coordinate their policies in partnership when the system came under threat. They opposed unilateral aggrandizement and attempted to secure the consent of all for major territorial changes. Methods of crisis management were developed and used, even as late as the time of William II.

They also developed sophisticated practices and ground rules for preventing crises, including employing multilateral consultation and decision making, systematizing arbitration, creating buffer states and demilitarized zones, establishing neutrality laws, localizing and restricting regional conflicts, delineating areas of special interest, and pacifically settling disputes. Moreover, they agreed that the principles of *raison d'état* and national sovereignty possessed value, that diplomacy should be a "commerce in mutual benefits," that ideology should not be a determining factor in their foreign policies, that treaties and international law were in everyone's interest and should be respected, that negotiations should be conducted with discretion and in private, and that their attention should be focused not on economic affairs but rather on what they called the "high politics" of political and military affairs involving issues of war and peace.

With specific reference to force and statecraft, those responsible for maintaining this system agreed with the norm *that wars, if fought with limited means for limited political objectives, could be regarded as legitimate instruments of policy.* They did not try to completely eliminate wars or threats and use of armed force. Instead, they made distinctions between those wars that were acceptable and those that were not. In this regard, they both drew upon and contributed to the norms of just war theory, as evident by their deliberate development of the laws of armed conflict and the growing body of international humanitarian law. Wars or threats of military action, for example, even with the weapons increasingly made possible by the Industrial Revolution, were permitted as long as they did not threaten the vital interests of Great Powers or the system as a whole. In fact, the use of force was regarded as not only legitimate, but even necessary, if one state attempted to achieve domination, for this would destroy the balance of power itself. With the passage of time and with the bipolar alignment at the end of the century, however, the distinction between permissible and impermissible war became increasingly difficult to determine.

Among these various norms, methods, and rules of the classical system of diplomacy was also the agreement to rely heavily upon **professional diplomats.** No system, however cleverly designed, can possibly operate itself. It is completely dependent upon people to make it work. In this regard, statesmen of the time appreciated the wisdom in the advice of Callières that, given the enormously high stakes of international politics, only the most highly qualified individuals should be employed to conduct the demanding tasks of statecraft. Consequently, they carefully trained and selected professionals who regarded themselves as members of a like-minded elite and culturally homogeneous *corps diplomatique*, or diplomatic corps, known specifically as the European *famille diplomatique*, or diplomatic family. These cosmopolitan diplomats moved with ease within the larger system, and many in fact were employed by countries other than their own. They shared common ties of culture and historical tradition, geography, language, religion, class and social status, lifestyle, race, and gender. As political scientist Charles Burton Marshall writes, these professionals

> drew on a generally common fund of history. The frame of discourse among them was unified to a degree permitting any government participating significantly in world affairs to be confident of having its utterances understood by others in the sense intended. None was a revolutionary power. Ideologies were "a minor theme." . . . The basis of the general order was not at issue. A common notion of legitimacy prevailed.

This made it much easier for them to achieve a remarkable level of cohesion and consensus on the nature and purposes of what they called "the art of diplomacy," the need to establish certain normative rules and restraints, ethical values, and a sense of responsibility to make and to enforce collective decisions necessary to protect their system as a whole.

These shared elements were designed to create expectations and to shape behavior, thereby providing that particular feature required of all systems: the existence of order that comes from some measure of predictability. International relations—like all other human relations—operate with less friction if the participants can reasonably anticipate how others are likely to act. Professional diplomats of this period understood that uncertainty breeds confusion, disorder, and insecurity, and thus worked to minimize it as much as possible.

Finally, the **limited state of technology** also characterized the classical system. In terms of transportation and communication, they began the nineteenth century with the same condition as all of their predecessors in human history: no ambassador, no instructions, no replies from foreign missions, no military orders, no idea could travel faster than the speed of a horse. The pace was slow, and time, distance, weather, and geography were significant facts of life. In a revealing memorandum to his secretary of state, U.S. president Thomas Jefferson once observed, "We have heard nothing from our ambassador in Spain for two years. If we do not hear from him this year, let us write him a letter." It took days for a hand-carried

diplomatic dispatch to go from Paris to Vienna, weeks to go from Rome to St. Petersburg, and months to go from Berlin to Tokyo. Such delays meant that major battles still could be fought by military or naval commanders even after statesmen had declared peace. Despite the obvious limitations, such conditions did possess one great advantage: time to think and time for passions to cool.

By the end of the century, railroads appeared on land and steamships on the seas, and electricity made possible the use of telegraphic communication. This eventually generated what would become a rising tide of information and the growing pressure for critical decisions to be made more rapidly, the dangers of which were demonstrated all too well when leaders found themselves suddenly overwhelmed, as we shall see in Chapter 11, during the crisis of 1914 and when Austria first declared war on Serbia—by telegram.

But this would not happen until the very end. Statesmen throughout the century enjoyed small and simple foreign ministries and a relaxed atmosphere characterized by the tradition known as *le thé de cinq heures*, or "5:00 tea," when officials gathered to socialize. Participants fondly recalled "comparatively idle days," porters meeting horse-drawn carriages, dispatches written by hand, and time to read and reflect. "There were few bathrooms and ice was rare," wrote one diplomat looking back on his own experiences and capturing the mood of the period, "but calm abounded . . .; there were no telephones, no cars, no deaths on the road or in the air. There were less nerves, less noise; perhaps after all the world would give that peace which the prayer-book said it couldn't."

Weapons technology always plays a critical role in force and statecraft as well. The nineteenth century witnessed the emergence of the Industrial Revolution and with it the change from smooth-bore muskets firing solid balls to rifles projecting expanding bullets, from simple cannon to long-range artillery, from soldiers marching on their feet to being transported to battlefields by railroads, and from wooden-hulled sailing ships like the HMS *Victory* to heavily armored and turbine-driven battleships like the HMS *Dreadnought*. Each of these developments proved significant, but none produced anything that even came close to any weapon of mass destruction. Indeed, even if the volume, accuracy, and range of fire increased, most shots still missed. This meant that the limited state of weapons technology reinforced the limited political objectives of warfare and that the cost of diplomatic failure was not catastrophic ruin.

Yet, by the turn of the century, many of these limits and the basic simplicity and homogeneity of the system came under growing stresses and strains. The Spanish-American War of 1898 and the Russo-Japanese War of 1904–1905 revealed other actors like the United States and Japan, other regions like Latin America and the Asia-Pacific area, and other races eagerly waiting to assert themselves in international affairs. At the same time, there were more frequent crises, more agreements shrouded in secrecy, more army and naval attachés posted to embassies abroad, and more military officers itching to become makers of policy rather than instruments of policy. Of particular importance, the Great Powers came to lose sight of their common values and the necessity of self-restraint. This became painfully evident in the summer of 1914, when leaders abandoned their sense of responsibility to the system and turned instead to a war that would unleash revolutionary forces of destruction and disruption.

SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER EXPLORATION

The classical system of diplomacy long has fascinated students of international relations. See Beatrice de Graf et al., *Securing Europe After Napoleon: 1815 and the New European Security Culture* (Cambridge, UK, 2019); Keith Hamilton and Richard Langhorne, *The Practice of Diplomacy* (New York, 2011 ed.); Markus Mösslang and Torsten Riotte (eds.), *The Diplomat's World: A Cultural History of Diplomacy* (Oxford, 2008); R. Bridge and Roger Bullen, *The Great Powers and the European States System, 1815–1914* (New York, 2005 ed.); Ralph Menning, *The Art of the Possible* (New York, 1996) with its use of primary source documentary material; Henry Kissinger, *Diplomacy* (New York, 1994); Norman Rich, *Great Power Diplomacy, 1815–1914* (New York, 1992); Paul Gordon Lauren, "Crisis Prevention in Nineteenth-Century Diplomacy," in Alexander L. George (ed.), *Managing U.S.-Soviet Rivalry* (Boulder, CO, 1983); Charles Burton Marshall, "The Golden Age in Perspective," *Journal of International Affairs*, 17 (1963): 9–17; Hajo Holborn, *The Political Collapse of Europe* (New York, 1951); and many editions of Carl von Martens, *Guide diplomatique.*

Insightful discussions of system building and the personalities and motives that guided it include Wolfram Siemann, *Metternich: Strategist and Visionary* (Cambridge, MA, 2019); Brian Vick, *The Congress of Vienna* (Cambridge, MA, 2014); Mark Jarrett, *The Congress of Vienna and Its Legacy* (New York, 2014 ed.); David King, *Vienna 1814* (New York, 2008); Adam Zamoyski, *The Rites of Peace* (New York, 2007); G. John Ikenberry, *After Victory* (Princeton, 2000); Paul Schroeder, *The Transformation of European Politics* (Oxford, 1994); Alan Sked, *Europe's Balance of Power* (London, 1979); Henry Kissinger, *A World Restored* (New York, 1973 ed.); and C. K. Webster, *The Foreign Policy of Castlereagh* (London, 1963 ed.).

The Concert system is treated in Jacques-Alain de Sédoux, *Le concert européen* (Paris, 2009); Raymond Cohen, "Rules of the Game in International Politics," *International Studies Quarterly*, 24 (March 1980): 129–150; Richard Elrod, "The Concert of Europe," *World Politics*, 28 (January 1976): 159–174; Gordon A. Craig and Peter Paret, "The Control of International Violence," *Stanford Journal of International Studies*, 7 (1972): 1–21; and Carsten Holbraad, *The Concert of Europe* (London, 1970). For the balance of power, see F. H. Hinsley, *Power and the Pursuit of Peace* (Cambridge, UK, 1963); Gordon A. Craig, "The Great Powers and the Balance of Power, 1830–1870," in *New Cambridge Modern History* 10 (Cambridge, 1960); and E. V. Gulick, *Europe's Classic Balance of Power* (Ithaca, NY, 1955). The classic treatment of war as an instrument of policy is Carl von Clausewitz, *On War*, available in several editions.

The course of international politics and nationalism are explored in Winfried Baumgart, *The Peace of Paris 1856: Studies in War, Diplomacy, and Peacemaking* (Santa Barbara, CA, 1981); Paul W. Schroeder, *Austria, Britain, and the Crimean War* (Ithaca, NY, 1972); and A. J. P. Taylor, *The Struggle for Mastery in Europe, 1848–1918* (Oxford, 1954). Italian unification is treated by D. Mack Smith, *Italy and Its Monarchy* (New Haven, CT, 1989); and Derek Beales, *The Risorgimento and the Unification of Italy* (New York, 1971); and German unification by Jonathan Steinberg, *Bismarck* (New York, 2013); Otto Pflanze, *Bismarck and the Development of Germany*, 3 vols. (Princeton, 1990); and Fritz Stern, *Gold and Iron* (New York,

1977). The Bismarckian period is discussed in Klaus Hildebrand, *German Foreign Policy from Bismarck to Adenauer* (London, 1989); George Kennan, *The Decline of Bismarck's European Order* (Princeton, 1979); and William Langer, *European Alliances and Alignments, 1871–1890* (New York, 1964 ed.), and *The Diplomacy of Imperialism, 1890–1902* (New York, 1968 ed.).

Great Power relations on the eve of 1914 are discussed in Geoffrey Wawro, *A Mad Catastrophe* (New York, 2014); James Joll and Gordon Martel, *The Origins of the First World War* (London, 2006 ed.); Zara Steiner, *Britain and the Origins of the First World War* (London, 1977); Oron Hale, *The Great Illusion, 1900–1914* (New York, 1971); and Barbara Tuchman, *The Proud Tower* (New York, 1966). More specific topics such as naval competition are analyzed in Paul Kennedy, *The Rise of the Anglo-German Antagonism* (London, 1980); imperialism in Paul Gordon Lauren, *Power and Prejudice* (Boulder, CO, 1996 ed.); military interference with policy in Paul Kennedy (ed.), *The War Plans of the Great Powers, 1880–1914* (London, 1979) and Gordon A. Craig, *The Politics of the Prussian Army* (New York, 1955); big business and politics in Eckhart Kehr, *Battleship Building and Party Politics in Germany* (Chicago, 1975); and the impact of technology in David Paull Nickles, *Under the Wire: How the Telegraph Changed Diplomacy* (Cambridge, MA, 2003) and Stephen Kern, *The Culture of Time and Space* (Cambridge, MA, 1986 ed.).

CHAPTER 3

The Diplomatic Revolution Begins, 1919–1939

In 1814–1815, after almost twenty-five years of intermittent warfare, representatives of the European powers had been able to sit down together—in Metternich's phrase, "as friends"—and lay the foundations for a diplomatic system that with readjustments worked remarkably effectively for nearly a century. The First World War, which brought this system to a calamitous end, lasted only four years, but when it was over and new leaders came together in another great peacemaking conference in Paris, their achievement fell far short of that of their predecessors at Vienna. No viable system ever emerged from their labors, and although they tried at times to pretend that it had, the fact that an even greater world war than that of 1914–1918 broke out within twenty years provided dramatic proof of their utter failure.

The unprecedented destruction and dislocations of the war, as well as the personal shortcomings of the participants themselves, provide some of the explanation for this. But the larger, underlying reason for their failure to build a viable international system can be found in the beginning of a revolution, the features of which slowly emerged but then virtually erupted in fury before their very eyes. This was the diplomatic revolution characterized by radical changes in the distribution of power, the loss of empire, increase in the numbers and types of actors in international relations, expansion of the geographical scope of diplomacy, powerful domestic political forces pressing to ignore professional diplomats and instead elevate the role of public opinion and economic interests, new technology in communications and transportation as well as weapons, and the deliberate ideological rejection by many national leaders of traditional norms of diplomacy and self-imposed restraints on force and statecraft. In the end, these pressures overwhelmed them all and are still with us today.

ATTEMPTS AT PEACEMAKING AND SYSTEM BUILDING

Peacemaking, even in the best of circumstances, presents formidable challenges, always serving as a reminder that it is easier to destroy than it is to create. But when the First World War ended, the problems appeared particularly difficult as Europe and the world staggered in disbelief over the carnage and disruption that

confronted them. The century's new science and technology in the hands of mass, citizen-conscripted armed forces infused with intense nationalism had unleashed destruction that revolutionized modern warfare, seriously challenging many earlier assumptions of using armed force as a legitimate instrument of policy. The combination of semiautomatic rifles, systematic patterns of machine-gun fire, barbed wire entanglements, rapid-fire artillery capable of firing exploding shells to targets several miles away, poison gas, land mines, torpedoes, submarines and battleships mobilized on a massive scale, aircraft, and armored tanks provided unprecedented destructive capacity. Together, they laid waste entire provinces. They also obliterated the traditional distinction between combatants and civilians, as tragically revealed by the estimated 11,000,000 military deaths and 7,000,000 civilian deaths.

But there was more. The war destroyed four empires and their monarchies. It precipitated seismic shocks of democratic and Communist revolutions. It loosened the bonds of European empires, thereby unleashing the powerful force of self-determination in Asia and Africa and raising questions about the role that colonized peoples and races would play in any future international system. In leaving little distinction between "victor" and "vanquished," the conflict profoundly signaled the collapse of many of the restraints of classical warfare and diplomacy. Moreover, the internal and external dimensions of the First World War demolished the earlier cultural and psychological homogeneity and general consensus on many ethical values of European civilization itself. Death and exhaustion left, in the mournful words of German writer Erich Maria Remarque, "Fields of craters within and without." "The old Europe that we had known in 1914," wrote one French diplomat, "ceased to exist."

Structurally, for example, there was not much left of some of the best-known entities of the past. Of the five Great Powers that had dominated the classical system, more than half—the German Empire, the Russian Empire, and the Austro-Hungarian Empire—had been destroyed. The Ottoman Empire no longer existed. War and revolution radically transformed Europe and the Middle East by creating completely new nation-states from the ashes of these former empires, including Finland, Estonia, Latvia, Lithuania, a revived Poland, Czechoslovakia, Hungary, Yugoslavia, Iraq, Syria, and Saudi Arabia, among others. The war brought about direct American intervention into global affairs, thereby undermining European hegemony and setting the stage for a redistribution of world power. In addition, countries such as Canada, Australia, New Zealand, South Africa, and Japan that previously had played only minor or sporadic roles in international relations now emerged with objectives and policies of their own.

Moreover, the war of 1914–1918 far exceeded the conflicts of the nineteenth century in duration and ferocity. In revolutionary ways it divorced military strategy from foreign policy. It was fought not as a limited but rather as a "total" war that involved all of the resources of the participants. In this epic struggle, warfare moved from armed conflict among combatants on the "fighting front" to entire societies on what was now called the "home front" where unarmed civilians became targets to be deliberately attacked and killed. As the resulting suffering and sacrifice of the civilian population increased, and as the costs of the war mounted, so did the need to justify them. Governments thus turned to propaganda. Here they

Europe and the Middle East Transformed by War and Revolution

manipulated nationalistic passions by creating words and images that demonized the enemy as the agents of evil while portraying their own country as the very embodiment of righteousness. One of the leading propagandists, George Creel, noted the significance of this development by observing:

> It was in this recognition of Public Opinion as a major force that the Great War differed most essentially from all previous conflicts. The trial of strength was not only between massed bodies of armed men, but between opposed ideals . . . [and] raised issues that had to be fought out in the hearts and minds of people as well as on the actual firing line.

Once aroused, these passions and exaggerated claims of what victory would bring were exceedingly difficult to turn off. Consequently, when the war ended there was precious little patience or sympathy for the traditional practices of diplomacy, for a broad sense of proportion on behalf of the system as a whole,

or for compromise and reconciliation. Instead of working in partnership to build a consensus on system-wide principles, leaders focused on rivalry and allowed themselves to succumb to the emotional impulse seeking revenge. In this way, the heated passions used to mobilize populations in war became obstacles to peace.

These domestic pressures received powerful expression in those political leaders determined to go to the Paris Peace Conference in 1919 themselves, even though they often had little knowledge of history or international relations or understanding of just how complicated it would be to make peace. The mercurial British prime minister David Lloyd George had actively campaigned on a slogan not for a new order based on consensus, but rather for revenge against the Germans. "We will squeeze the orange," he ranted, "until the pips squeak!" He openly stated contempt for the professionals, saying that "diplomats were invented simply to waste time" and declaring simply, "I want no diplomats." Similarly, U.S. president Woodrow Wilson (described by one career diplomat as "The Dread Amateur") insisted on a "New Diplomacy" radically different from the "Old Diplomacy" in its origins, objectives, and methods. They and their fellow politicians Georges Clemenceau of France and Vittorio Orlando of Italy put these sentiments into practice at the peace conference when they often rejected the advice of their staff experts and relied more upon popular passions or personal intuition instead of facts to solve intricate international problems. As Winston Churchill so pointedly described it:

> The peoples, transported by their sufferings and by the mass teachings with which they had been inspired, stood around in scores of millions to demand that retribution should be exacted to the full. Woe betide the leaders now perched on their dizzy pinnacles of triumph if they cast away at the conference table what the soldiers had won on the hundred blood-soaked battlefields. . . . The multitudes remained plunged in ignorance of the simplest facts, and their leaders, seeking their votes, did not dare to undeceive them.

The intensity of such passions and pressures greatly complicated the tasks of peacemaking. Carried away with a desire for revenge, those who gathered at the Paris Peace Conference chose to completely ignore the lesson about reconciliation learned at Vienna a century earlier about former friends and foes sitting down together as necessary partners who realistically understood that they needed each other to lay the foundations of peace and security. Instead, they refused to allow the major powers of Germany, Austria, and Russia to even attend the conference at all. They determined to impose rather than to negotiate. The result, of course, was a manifest failure to secure any consensus on goals and objectives, on normative values, and on the very conceptual basis of international order itself. It soon would demonstrate how easy it is for victors of war to ultimately lose if they fail to include the defeated in creating a peace settlement. Festering grievances were easily exploited by those who played on the primal emotions of anger and resentment to demand an overthrow of the new system and its hated "dictated peace."

In the resulting absence of consensus, many leaders among the victors wanted to exploit their temporary advantages by creating treaties that would enforce their imposed peace settlement. But this idea was directly challenged by Wilson, who saw himself as a prophet of a new era. He believed that balance-of-power politics

was a contrivance of kings, soldiers, diplomats, and their states, and that the coming of the war in 1914 had been rooted in their machinations. He set out to eliminate this system, declaring:

> There must not be a balance of power but a community of power . . . I am therefore proposing that all nations henceforth avoid entangling alliances that draw them into competitions of power, catch them in a net of intrigue and selfish rivalry, and disturb their own affairs . . . When all unite to act in the same sense and with the same purpose, all will act in the common interest and are free to live their own lives under a common protection.

Wilson and his supporters, like the survivors of other major wars before and since, wanted to use this postwar opportunity to take measures that might enhance peace and security. Toward this end, they sought to go beyond the development of new practices as had been done earlier at the Congress of Vienna and now create a more permanent institution known as the League of Nations serving as an innovative "international organization to limit the burden of armaments and diminish the probability of war." Clemenceau and a number of others, however, refused to abandon their desire for revenge because of sermons by a man whom they regarded as a brash and idealistic schoolmaster from a country with little experience in world affairs. They wanted to punish the enemy by avoiding any self-imposed restraints, securing compensation for their sacrifices, and constructing a system that would extend their victory and promote their exclusive advantage.

Peacemaking and system building at Paris thus became the scene of intense dissension and protracted conflict. This explains why the final Versailles Treaty reflected all of these passionately held differences, described by Romanian foreign minister Ioan Bratianu as "Wilsonian garlands wrapped around Napoleonic clauses." In the end, Wilson gained his major objective, the creation of the League of Nations, but only at the expense of many of his own declared principles. This becomes strikingly evident when one compares the final punitive results with his earlier and highly publicized declarations about a "war to end all wars" and a "peace without victory." Indeed, the discrepancies between what had been promised and what was delivered were so palpable that Wilson's critics lashed out at him. His role in defeating a provision on the emotionally charged issue of international human rights and racial equality, for example, prompted the Japanese to publicly accuse him of being nothing more than a hypocrite of the worst possible sort.

Domestic opponents within the United States were even harsher as they mounted a powerful attack against the entire settlement itself. They argued that America should only look out for itself by retreating into a policy of isolation. They attacked the League as a dangerous international organization that would threaten national sovereignty, would interfere in domestic affairs, and, if collective action were required, would "entangle the American nation in a European-Asiatic balance of power." Senator James Reed of Missouri, impassioned about race, even declared: "Think of submitting questions involving the very life of the United States to a tribunal on which a nigger from Liberia, a nigger from Honduras, a nigger from India . . . each have votes equal to that of the great United States." Opinions like this fanned the flames of bitter partisanship between Democrats and Republicans, personal feuds, and the refusal of both Wilson and his "irreconcilable" opponents

to compromise. In the end, the Senate rejected the treaties and forbade American membership in the League entirely.

Others strongly believed that they had a responsibility to at least attempt some alternative to a mere perpetuation of anarchy and war by creating a formal international organization. They believed that the significant changes taking place in international relations needed to be addressed, that the First World War had demonstrated that the "winners" appeared to lose as much as the losers, and that *raison d'état* could best be served through partnerships promoting the values of peace. For this reason, they created the League of Nations to try to manage crises, to arbitrate international disputes, and to prevent war—a bolder, more comprehensive, and more egalitarian experiment than anything ever attempted before in history.

New creations, of course, present both new opportunities and new challenges. In order to acknowledge the reality of a growing number of states in the world and the pressure to respond to the wartime demands for "open" and "new" diplomacy, the founders of the League established the Assembly. It was to meet once a year and serve as a forum for multilateral interactions open to all member states represented with equal voting rights. At the same time, in order to respond to the reality of an unequal distribution of power in the world, they created the Council. It was a smaller group composed of the Great Powers who held permanent seats and a few temporary members who could meet at any time to deal with a crisis.

With specific reference to issues of force and statecraft, the Covenant of the League established a body of rules and procedures calling on its members to promote peace and security, to regulate their disputes by peaceful means, to honor international law and treaty obligations, and to respect and defend the territorial integrity and political independence of each other against external aggression. "Any war or threat of war," it stated, "whether immediately affecting any of the members of the League or not, is hereby declared a matter of concern to the whole League, and the League shall take any action that may be deemed wise and effectual to safeguard the peace of nations." If anyone resorted to war in violation of their promises, the Covenant provided for the possibility of diplomatic and economic sanctions, and, if necessary, the use of military, naval, and the new emerging technology of air forces. In this way, those who created the League hoped that they could deter aggression.

The formation of the League of Nations also revealed yet another aspect of the diplomatic revolution: a growing tendency, which would increase through time, to explore the relationship between peacemaking and system building and human rights. There are several reasons for this. The first is that wars disrupt and destroy, often tearing down power structures and prejudices heretofore resistant to change. In this regard, the First World War brought about new opportunities to extend rights to many, not the least of which were women. Second, one of the characteristics of "total" war is that in order to mobilize their full resources, governments make promises. Those who had been promised "justice," a world "safe for democracy," and "an equality of rights" as a reward for sacrifices made during the war were determined that leaders kept their promises. Third, modern wars and peacemaking, by their very nature, demonstrate the increasing international interconnectedness of shared life and death, and the fact that the fate of one country and its people and their rights are tied to those of others. Finally, peacemakers and system builders at

the end of a war generally want to do what they can to avoid another deadly conflict by creating a settlement reflecting normative values designed to enhance peace. They want their wartime sufferings to be worth something. As such, many people after 1919 began to envision peace as more closely connected with security, justice, and respect for human rights. This explains why the League set about to initiate a series of successful path-breaking international measures, mechanisms, and norms to protect the rights of women, children, ethnic minorities, workers, indigenous peoples, the sick, combatants, and refugees that are still with us today.

Those who worked to make the League effective, however, came to realize that not everyone agreed with their efforts and that international systems cannot be built or maintained unless there is genuine consensus among the major actors to agree on basic norms, objectives, and principles, including those of self-restraints, and to actively collaborate in defending them. This proved to be the critical problem from the very beginning when the Americans simply refused to join. With the loss of such vital weight and support, the League irreparably suffered from what political scientist Inis Claude calls "the problem of the empty chair." Moreover, other important powers stood outside its membership for most of the period: Germany did not join until 1926 and then withdrew in 1933 along with Japan, while the Soviet Union did not become a member until 1934, and was then expelled five years later.

To make matters worse, the only two major nations left participating in the League, namely Britain and France, could never agree on its purposes or methods, particularly when involving force and statecraft. They continually disagreed and actually worked at cross purposes concerning the League's authority to respond to danger. The French tried to put teeth into the organization by having its members sign binding guarantees to take action whenever confronted with threats to the peace. But the British consistently defeated these attempts, arguing that the League should not be a body that took punitive action against wrongdoers but simply a place for debate. They viewed the organization like an insurance policy that might provide some benefits but would never require them to pay any premiums. The League thus was forced to confront the fact that its members, especially the most powerful states, were unwilling to take responsibility for collective security seriously or to do anything that might jeopardize their claims of sovereignty. As a consequence, it could only issue weak resolutions. It did not take long for dictators with aggressive designs to draw their own conclusions. None of this boded well for the future. Said one observer in complete frustration: "The trouble with the League is not the *League*, it is the *Nations*."

Such unwillingness to address issues of force and statecraft collectively became manifest in other ways as well. At the Washington Naval Conference of 1921–1922, leaders signed the Five Power Treaty on capital warships, but refused to impose any meaningful restraints on their weapons. At exactly the same time, the Four Power Treaty on Asia and the Pacific demonstrated a similar lack of will. As Senator Henry Cabot Lodge, who previously had orchestrated opposition to both the Versailles Treaty and the League of Nations, announced with pride: "There is no provision for the use of force to carry out any of the terms of the agreement, and no military or naval sanction lurks anywhere in the background or under cover of these plain and simple clauses."

In exasperation, the French attempted to build their own security system by concluding separate alliances with Belgium, Poland, Yugoslavia, Romania, and Czechoslovakia. But these efforts at deterrence, as we shall explore in Chapter 9, looked far better on paper than they did in practice. The small states had disputes among themselves and could never contribute significant military force against powerful neighbors like the Germans or the Soviets. Moreover, France's resources were not sufficient to support their allies unless they received assistance from Britain, and the British were unwilling to do any such thing. In fact, when the British government signed the 1925 Locarno Pact guaranteeing the boundary between Germany, France, and Belgium, it wanted to make it "perfectly clear" that such offers of protection would not extend to borders in Eastern Europe. France cast even further doubt on its own system when it constructed the Maginot Line, a gigantic defensive rampart of concrete fortifications running from the Switzerland to Belgium, indicating that it would stay inert behind its own border and thereby abandon others to their fate. These developments could not possibly restrain the designs of any aggressors.

Those statesmen attempting peacemaking and system building also struggled with yet other features of the diplomatic revolution: the rapid expansion in the number and types of actors in international relations and the expanding geographical scope of diplomacy. Before 1914, only about a dozen nations in the entire world took continuous interest in global affairs, and these were largely European. The Paris Peace Conference provided the first clear demonstration of how radically that condition was about to change. Up to this point, for example, no American president had ever left the United States to negotiate an international treaty, and certainly none had ever before enjoyed the influence that Wilson now possessed. Another was the formal acceptance of English as a language equal to French in diplomacy. But there was much more. "THIRTY-TWO NATIONS, PEOPLES, AND RACES . . .," noted one observer, "Not simply England, Italy, and the Great Powers are there, but all the little nations . . . Not only groups, but races have come—Jews, Indians, Arabs, and all-Asia." Another participant at the conference described it as "Chinamen, Japanese, Koreans, Hindus, Kirghizes, Lesghiens, Circassians, Mingrelians, Buryats, Malays, and Negroes and Negroids from Africa and America were among the tribes and tongues forgathered in Paris to watch the rebuilding of the political world system and to see where they 'came in.'" This marked the beginning of what would become the transformation of the colonial world, the impacts of which are still with us today, especially in Africa, Asia, and the Middle East.

One of the results of this development was the realization that it would be much more challenging to create a working system for an international community than it had been when the participating states had been few. The original membership of the League of Nations, to illustrate, numbered forty-two, including (in addition to the Europeans) Australia, Canada, China, Haiti, India, Japan, the Latin American states, Liberia, New Zealand, Persia, Siam, and South Africa. Others came to join as well. But there was something more than just numbers. This expansion brought with it a breakdown in what had once been the internal homogeneity of the small, Eurocentric system of classical diplomacy. An important reason for the relative effectiveness of the nineteenth-century system was that its members were bound together by a common historical tradition and language, by shared cultural and

religious values, and by ties of race, class, and gender, all of which (despite their many other drawbacks) greatly facilitated communication, predictability, and cooperation. This did not survive in the aftermath of the First World War, and the adjustments necessitated by the new heterogeneity were sometimes painful. The British found it difficult, for example, to watch the League of Nations pay as much attention to the speeches of Nicolae Titulescu of Romania or Haile Selassie of Ethiopia as it did to their own representatives. They showed disrespect for the small powers, and it was said of Foreign Secretary Austen Chamberlain that when he spoke in the Assembly, he seemed to be saying, "We are perfect. We are British. And yet you, you dagoes, dare to come here and criticize US!" Attitudes such as this made it difficult to build any inclusive or effective international system.

Further complications arose as a result of technology that began to transform the pace of diplomacy. The staggering power and speed of invention and practical application affected diplomats as directly as it did the lives of millions of other people. Foreign ministries found themselves replacing their horse-drawn carriages with automobiles, their candles and gas lamps with electric lights, their elegant curving staircases with elevators, and their clerks skilled in handwritten script with typists who could do the work faster. Moreover, the growing use of electronic communication and aircraft revealed further nullifications of practical limits heretofore imposed by distance, geographical barriers, weather, national boundaries, and—perhaps most critically—time. All these devices reduced the length of time to analyze reports, contemplate, thoughtfully choose between alternative courses of action, assume responsibilities, and issue instructions without the luxury enjoyed just a few years before to calm emotions and reach careful judgment.

PUBLIC OPINION AND "PUBLIC DIPLOMACY"

One of the most salient features of the diplomatic revolution during this period was the heightened influence of public opinion on foreign policy. There were some who feared the dangers of ignorance and worked to develop ways in which that public might be genuinely informed. In a famous essay published in the newly created journal *Foreign Affairs*, former U.S. secretary of state Elihu Root stressed the necessity of serious education to help citizens learn lessons from international history and "acquire a knowledge of the fundamental and essential facts and principles on which the relations of nations depend," including those of force and statecraft. A number of professors, particularly those in departments of History and Political Science, worked to create a new and more specific discipline of International Relations for their bright university students. But these were exceptions, for the new emphasis focused more on emotion than facts for masses of disillusioned people set adrift by war, revolution, and then the outbreak of the Spanish Flu pandemic. This manifested itself in excessive preoccupation with the public mood that let domestic issues overpower vital international challenges, and pressured governments to follow rather than lead opinion in the conduct and forms of diplomacy.

Here again, it was the experience of the First World War that shattered traditional practices and the heretofore limited role of public opinion in international relations. The years and sacrifices required by "total" war and the deliberate use of propaganda on the "home front" to win "the hearts and minds" of people brought

rising and irresistible pressure from politicians, business interests, journalists, and vocal members of the public at large insistent on having a greater voice in foreign affairs. They deplored what they called the "secret diplomacy" and class "elitism" of the past and announced their determination to end, in the words of the *Berliner Tageblatt*, "an aristocratic collegium unapproachable to the ordinary mortal, like the table of the Holy Grail." Critics, like Arthur Ponsonby in his manifesto *Democracy and Diplomacy: A Plea for Popular Control of Foreign Policy*, argued that they had remained silent and subservient long enough, and thus began to insert themselves into diplomacy, creating pressure groups and legislative committees to deal with foreign affairs, and demanding that they be kept informed and consulted.

This forced the professionals in foreign ministries—who only a short time before had so assiduously refrained from providing any information at all about their activities to "the masses"—not only to respond to these public demands, but actually to attempt to shape opinion as well. They found themselves spending ever larger amounts of time and effort engaging in what came to be called "public diplomacy" by providing legislative or congressional briefings, guiding junketing politicians, hiring press attachés, recruiting publicists, holding press conferences, making public appearances and answering questions, producing broadcasts for the new technological invention of radio, publishing collections of heretofore classified diplomatic documents in order to win popular support, building political coalitions among pressure groups in order to conduct policy, promoting their national cultural achievements abroad, and referring ever more frequently to "world public opinion" and the League as "the court of public opinion." The German Foreign Ministry even created a special War Guilt Office for the sole purpose of convincing this public that Germany had not been responsible for causing the First World War, as stated in the Versailles Treaty. In some countries, as we shall soon see, diplomats increasingly were required to propagate the ideology of the regime they served. Professionals warned ominously that all these trends would replace the traditional norms of restraint and practices of discretion with cheap public displays and what they described as "the inflammation of national passions."

Such developments increasingly became a feature of diplomacy, and the retribution that public feeling could wreak upon political leaders seeking to deal with complicated problems of force and statecraft was real and intimidating. French prime minister Aristide Briand was forced from office by a wholly irrational rumor that his policy at the 1922 Geneva conference had been dictated by the British. Lloyd George met the same fate when his handling of a Middle East crisis led to a public outcry that he had been trying to drag the country into another war. When Churchill accused Prime Minister Stanley Baldwin of irresponsibility for having failed to take advantage of the 1936 election campaign to meet the growing international dangers by calling for increased armaments, Baldwin answered with a startling ingenuousness. "Suppose I had gone to the country," he replied, "and said that Germany was rearming and we must rearm, does anyone think that this pacific democracy would have rallied to that cry at that moment? I cannot think of anything that would have made the loss of the election from my point of view more certain."

Fear of alienating public opinion influenced the foreign policy of United States as well. During the Disarmament Conference of 1932, President Herbert Hoover might have persuaded the French to modify their position if he had been willing to adjust or abandon war debts owed to the United States, but he refused to do so because he believed that it would be unacceptable to American voters. Like Baldwin, he was afraid of losing an election. Similarly, when President Franklin Roosevelt warned in 1937 that the epidemic of lawlessness spreading in the world could only be checked by a quarantine imposed by the peace-loving states, the isolationist public outcry in his own country was so immediate, massive, and negative that the White House felt compelled to disavow the true intent of the speech and retreat into inactivity.

In addition to crippling the resolution of governments, the power of public opinion had a significant effect on the conduct of diplomacy itself. For one thing, it ended the virtual monopoly of the professionals. Popular opinion held the view that the professional diplomats and their way of doing business had been largely responsible for causing the war of 1914 and that the sooner their control was broken, the better. So strong was this feeling that politicians sought to reduce the role of the professionals by at times actually taking over the functions of the diplomats themselves.

This explains why Lloyd George so frequently dismissed the advice and sometimes even the existence of the Foreign Office, traveling around with his own staff and negotiating with foreign officials on complicated matters that he did not fully understand. Others did the same. Instead of letting ambassadors abroad do what they were trained to do, politicians sought to do their business for them. In this regard they were assisted by the new technological inventions of the telephone (that enemy of reflection, which became increasingly accepted as a means of communication) and the airplane to travel abroad, to conduct negotiations themselves, and to improvise as they went along. Moreover, when the participants acted in this way they felt that their personal reputations were at stake and that a successful result was imperative. This, in turn, often led to ringing declarations plainly designed to convince a credulous public that great objectives had been achieved—which later, however, proved to be completely unsubstantiated.

Along with these transformations in personnel came changes in format. Wilson had called for "open covenants openly arrived at," and it soon became an article of public faith that "open diplomacy" represented the only acceptable procedure. The result was a rapid growth of diplomacy by conference, which took the form of either large meetings in which many states participated in discussions of subjects of general interest or what came to be called summit meetings, such as the Locarno Conference of 1925, involving heads of state or foreign ministers. While introducing some of the benefits of inclusiveness and transparency, they all too often met under the pressure of public impatience and without preliminary talks adequate to lay a basis for fruitful negotiation. Indeed, they often seemed more for public spectacle than for the substantive issues at stake, as evidenced by the numbers of journalists, photographers, press conferences, government-inspired leaks to influence opinion, and other inventions of modern public relations. In these circumstances, not much could be expected, except for a final communiqué that sought to convey a success where none existed. A perfect example of this could be

seen in the Kellogg-Briand Pact of 1928, purporting with a simple stroke of the pen to outlaw war itself—a token gesture with no enforcement provisions of any kind, signed simply to appeal to popular sentiment.

As for summit meetings, the eminent expert on diplomatic practice, Sir Harold Nicolson, pointed out that the political leaders who participated were particularly busy and preoccupied men. "The time at the disposal of these visitors," he noted, "is not always sufficient to allow for patience and calm deliberation. The honors which are paid to a minister in a foreign capital may tire his physique, excite his vanity, or bewilder his judgment." This could be seen with striking clarity with the ill-fated Munich Conference of September 1938 in which the participants were anxious to go home with anything that might be called a success. British prime minister Neville Chamberlain desperately wanted to come back with something, so he persuaded Adolf Hitler of Germany to sign a hastily drafted and imprecisely stated "Anglo-German Declaration" of future cooperation. When Chamberlain flew home to joyous crowds who welcomed him as a hero, he smiled, ignored the facts, told them what they wanted to hear, and waved a piece of paper in his hand as proof that he had secured "peace in our time." They thus were completely shocked when Hitler invaded Czechoslovakia only a few months later, demonstrating that this agreement meant nothing at all.

A final result of the heightened importance of public sentiment could be seen in new efforts to shape that opinion with propaganda by utilizing the press, film, and the technology of wireless radio, and employing what might be called diplomacy by public declaration. This technique used an address to send a message not to another government, but rather to public opinion in another country, in the hope of influencing it to bring pressure upon its own leaders.

The real master of this technique was Hitler. Whenever he wanted to manipulate opinion, he would appeal to what he himself called the "prejudices of people" that are "not founded on reason," but rather on emotions. He would do this by speaking because he believed that the masses could be more easily swayed by the feelings conveyed by the human voice than by any other form of communication. As he observed with cunning:

> It is a thousand times more difficult to overcome the barrier of instinctive aversion, of hatred conditioned by feeling, of prejudiced rejection, than is the correction of a faulty or erroneous scientific opinion. Wrong conceptions and inferior knowledge can be abolished by instruction, but never obstacles of sentiment. Here solely an appeal to these mysterious forces themselves can be effective; and this the writer can hardly ever do, but almost exclusively only the speaker.

With this in mind, Hitler's speeches would simplify the complex, create distortions, tell lies of gigantic proportions, place blame on others, propose quick solutions, and appeal to wishful thinking. He would explain that, far from being provocative or aggressive, all he wanted to do was simply redress legitimate grievances, open up new opportunities for a better world, or remove the final obstacle to lasting peace. These speeches proved to be remarkably effective, principally because his listeners feared war—and they *felt* more than they *thought*. This made them more vulnerable and susceptible to manipulation. As such, they could be led

to believe that peace could be secured by giving dictators what they wanted and dissuading their own governments from taking action that might have deterred the aggressors from launching war.

ECONOMICS AND "ECONOMIC DIPLOMACY"

The diplomatic revolution from 1919 to 1939 also possessed a critical economic dimension. Part of the problem, of course, came as a result of the First World War itself. In no previous war had the economic life, trade, and industrial production of the belligerent nations been so completely placed under the political and military control of the state. "Total" war introduced the "economic front," intertwining warfare, politics, and economics as never before. But there was more. When the war finally ended, the survivors looked around them to survey the damage: millions killed in combat, millions more permanently disabled and unable to work, and the unprecedented destruction of homes and farms, livestock and forests, financial resources and investments, communication and transportation networks, and industrial plants and shops. The well-known economist Edgar Crammond described the magnitude directly: "There has been nothing approaching this destruction of life and wealth in the history of the world . . . [T]his stupendous conflict has produced the greatest economic revolution of which we have any record."

Added to this was the fact that most of Europe had relied on borrowing rather than taxation to meet the costs of the war, and now found itself confronted with the reality of staggering debts, astronomical inflation, and depreciating currencies. In the face of these problems, the victors often demonstrated remarkable insensitivity and ignorance about the simplest of economic facts, and the tactics that they employed were so unrealistic, shortsighted, and narrowly nationalistic that they fatally weakened the possibility of maintaining any diplomatic system.

Given the losses of the war, financial and monetary collapse, and the monumental reconstruction that lay ahead, it is not surprising that nations would intensify their economic competition. Bitter rivals increasingly spoke of each other and their postwar struggle in terms of "business enemies," "financial weapons," "commercial battles," "captured markets," "trade wars," and "economic warfare." In the past, chambers of commerce, exporters, businesses, and investors had stressed free trade and laissez-faire, or the importance of keeping government interference out of their affairs. Now they reversed course. Now they organized pressure groups and formed lobbies to demand that their governments and foreign ministries actively and aggressively engage in what they called "economic diplomacy." By this they meant making greater efforts to fuse economics with foreign policy, arguing that expanding trade and finance for their own private commercial gain should be seen as projections of collective national power.

Professional diplomats thus found themselves, as never before, being forced to abandon their traditional distinction between high "political" and low "commercial" affairs. They gathered business intelligence and trade statistics, trained more consular officers, hired more commercial and financial attachés, and included businessmen, bankers, and industrialists as participants in negotiations. No clearer evidence could be found than when Walter Rathenau, a part owner or

director of eighty-six domestic and twenty-one international enterprises, became German foreign minister in 1922, symbolizing the role that large-scale business would play in international politics.

But passion often overrode expertise and wise financial decisions. Many of the victors were determined to impose upon the beaten foe the burden of reparations without establishing shared goals and objectives or thinking through the possible consequences. They wanted to use reparations as a weapon of revenge to punish Germany and to keep it in a position of weakness for years to come. The famous economist John Maynard Keynes tried to warn them in his book *The Economic Consequences of the Peace* that if the victors insisted on excessive payments they would create disaster not only for Germany, but also for the world economy as a whole. Nevertheless, the majority chose to ignore his advice and the historical lessons of the generally counterproductive nature of reparations. They decided instead to exact from Germany a punitive amount twice as large as the original estimate, even though its capacity to make such payments had been significantly diminished as a result of losing the war. These terms helped to destroy not only the democratic experiment of the German Weimar Republic but also the postwar settlement itself.

Reparations also revealed sharply divergent approaches by the British and the French as to how economics should relate to issues of force and statecraft. Lloyd George, a former Chancellor of the Exchequer, eventually became convinced that only a scaling down of the burden imposed upon Germany would allow the diplomatic system to operate—a position that the French, under the leadership of the tough and rigid Raymond Poincaré, adamantly opposed. This irreconcilable difference between the two major powers most responsible for maintaining the peace settlement found fateful expression in January 1923 when a German default led, despite British protests, to a French and Belgian military occupation of the Ruhr mining area. The Germans responded with passive resistance, the costs of which could only be met by printing new money in such large amounts that the result was runaway inflation. This impoverished the middle class and strengthened the rapidly growing number of rabid nationalist, antirepublican, and discontented political movements, not the least of which was a group known as the Nazis. The termination of reparation payments, in turn, created a fiscal crisis and the collapse of the franc in France. In the end, the currency was saved and bankruptcy averted only when the government secured loans from the banking houses of J. P. Morgan in New York and Lazard Brothers in London.

The growing role of private bankers and business and financial experts in place of professional diplomats could also be seen in the various efforts made to devise new and reduced reparations payments and to extend loans to Germany. Indeed, they dominated the London Reparations Conference of 1924, and their decisions revealed their ability to impose serious restraints on the actions of governments. If any further doubts existed about the power of economics to alter global affairs, they were shattered by the Wall Street stock market crash of 1929 and the resulting Great Depression. In the United States, Britain, and France, this led to isolationism, trade protectionism with the imposition of tariff walls against rivals, and worldwide trade wars. In Germany, it resulted in collapse and helped to bring Hitler to power. None of this could be encouraging for those who desired international peace and security.

Realization that economics could be used as a powerful tool of diplomacy came quickly to leaders, particularly those in Germany. Bernhard von Bülow, the state secretary of the Foreign Office, for example, designed a strategy in 1931 to create a customs union between Germany and Austria in order to exert "the pressure of economic necessity" that would "lead to a solution, scarcely conceivable by other means, of vital political interests of the Reich." He continued:

> then Poland with her unstable economic structure would be surrounded and exposed to all kinds of dangers; we should have her in a vise which could perhaps in the short or long run make her willing to consider further the idea of exchanging political concessions for tangible economic advantages.

Hitler seized upon such calculations and pushed the idea of economic weapons even further. When launching the Four Year Plan in 1936, he made it clear that those making economic decisions must commit themselves to "the struggle for self-realization" that would enable Germany to assert itself in the world. Hitler called for a *Wehrwirtschaft*, or war economy, with an economic mobilization comparable to his military mobilization. "The German economy," he said, "must be capable of supporting war in four years." The key to his success in this effort was an offensive using economic penetration and a vast expansion of trade that deliberately targeted exchanges of weapons made in Germany for foodstuffs and raw materials from Eastern Europe in order to achieve political and strategic objectives.

Hitler's own admission that his economic diplomacy was predicated upon war and his rapid success in penetrating Eastern Europe alarmed the professional foreign policy establishments in Britain and France. Voices were raised to argue that acquiescence in Germany's economic hegemony would violate their national interests. Proposals that economic countermeasures be employed, however, encountered strong opposition on the part of the general public, private investors, businesses, and bankers, who argued that cooperation with Germany, rather than opposition, was the best way to secure peace. Their appeasement became such a force that one diplomat bitterly complained: "In spite of all our efforts, Mr. Montagu Norman [the governor of the Bank of England] continues to carry out his own foreign policy, certainly without consulting the Foreign Office and without, I suspect, taking even the Treasury very much into consideration." Such divisions of purpose and policy made an effective counter to Hitler's economic diplomacy virtually impossible, thereby making him the beneficiary.

A *DIALOGUE DES SOURDS* WITH CONTRASTING NORMS AND OBJECTIVES

When Chamberlain traveled to Germany in September 1938, carrying his allies' approval of the terms for a settlement of the Czechoslovakian crisis on which he and Hitler had agreed two weeks earlier, he was disagreeably surprised to find that his host had changed his mind and had rewritten the agreement, introducing severely harsher conditions. When Chamberlain was handed a paper embodying these changes, he is reported to have said angrily, "This is an ultimatum, not a negotiation!" Pointing to the title page, Hitler replied mildly, "It says memorandum."

This incident illustrates the failure of meaningful communication during these years. Indeed, diplomatic discussions took place between intense rivals rather than partners, often resembling what the French call a *dialogue des sourds*, or a conversation between deaf people. Here, words meant different things to different people, sides misheard what was being said, or the participants did not really listen at all. The victories of Bolshevism in Russia in 1917, Fascism in Italy in 1922, the militarists in Japan in 1931, and National Socialism in Germany in 1933, when combined with the marginalization of professional diplomats and a rejection of their established practices, created four major states determined to actually overthrow the peace settlement and to bring about a new ideological age. With this came one of the most fateful features of the entire diplomatic revolution: the deliberate rejection of heretofore commonly accepted norms and the resulting collapse of a consensus on objectives.

The basic reason for this condition emerged from a profound difference in values and aspirations. Great Britain, France, and the United States had developed in the liberal-democratic tradition, and their approach to international relations after 1919 was influenced by their faith in the primacy of reason and a repugnance for war. They viewed the conduct of diplomacy as a rational pursuit among responsible powers that operated according to reasonable and generally accepted rules, self-imposed restraints, and the peaceful settlement of disputes. They believed that after the First World War, any person competent enough to rise to the leadership of a great nation would be intelligent enough to see that war was not to anyone's advantage. In sharp contrast, there were other states that deliberately rejected these values and assumptions and, like playing chess by moving bishops as if they were rooks, operated according to rules that they made up on their own. This seriously diminished the ability of others to predict behavior, thereby increasing uncertainty and destroying any semblance of systemic international order.

It was clear from the very beginning, for example, that the Soviet Union had a fundamentally different approach to diplomacy from that of the West. The new Communist leaders had no hesitation in declaring an unremitting ideological war with capitalism, rejecting self-imposed restraints, and overthrowing international order. They repudiated the debts owed by the czarist government to its Western allies, confiscated foreign properties without compensation to the owners, published confidential treaties, and announced their intent to foment worldwide revolution. V. I. Lenin set about, as he had promised, "to prepare and conduct revolutionary war" and "to at once systematically start to incite rebellion." As a part of this strategy, he insisted on rejecting all forms of traditional diplomacy, which he regarded as no more than tools in the hands of blood-sucking capitalists determined to exploit the proletariat. Thus, when Leon Trotsky became the first commissar for foreign affairs, he announced his determination to "issue a few revolutionary declarations to the peoples and then shut the joint [the Foreign Office] up."

Believing that they could never coexist with bourgeois states, the Soviets created the Comintern as a "general staff of the world revolution of the proletariat" to engage in ideological propaganda and subversion against non-Communist governments. Such actions immediately provoked fear and suspicion. As U.S. secretary of state Bainbridge Colby concluded:

> It is not possible . . . to recognize the present rulers of Russia as a government with which the relations common to friendly governments can be maintained. [They] . . . have convinced the Government of the United States, against its will, that the existing regime in Russia is based upon the negation of every principle of honor and good faith and every usage and convention underlying the whole structure of international law, the negation, in short, of every principle upon which it is possible to base harmonious and trustful relations, whether of nations or individuals . . . There cannot be any common ground upon which [the United States] can stand with a Power whose conceptions of international relations are so entirely alien to its own, so utterly repugnant to its moral sense . . . We cannot recognize, hold official relations with, or give friendly reception to, the agents of government which is determined and bound to conspire against our institutions.

Leaders in the West struck back. They forced the Soviet Union into diplomatic isolation by refusing to recognize the new government and deliberately excluding it from all peacemaking and system-building efforts of the Paris Peace Conference. They then used the Versailles Treaty to take vast swaths of territory from what had been Russia and gave them to the new successor states, creating what they called a *cordon sanitaire*, or sanitary barrier, to protect against the "disease" of Communism. Its clear purpose, according to British general Sir Henry Wilson, was "to create a ring of States all around Bolshevik Russia, the object being to prevent Bolshevism from spreading; to deprive it of supplies and power of expansion, and to reduce it to absolute exhaustion." Not content with these actions, the West then actually launched a military intervention against the Communist regime in an attempt to overthrow it and its ideology by armed force.

Such an intense divergence of norms and objectives and its disastrous effect on any efforts to build and maintain a viable diplomatic system could be seen in subsequent Soviet behavior. Lenin boldly announced that he had purged the diplomatic corps of every "single influential person" from the old regime and reconstituted it with ideological loyalists charged with creating "a reliable Communist apparatus" for foreign affairs. This explains why Soviet negotiators like Georgii Chicherin, Maxim Litvinov, and V. M. Molotov engaged in what has been called "diplomatic guerrilla warfare." Here, they would automatically reject all initial proposals from others, persist in an uncompromising advocacy of Communist ideology, use negotiations not to reach genuine settlements but to block or delay them, and refuse to use diplomacy as a means of reaching real understanding or agreement. They often entered into discussions for the purpose of propaganda or rhetorical fireworks, as evident on the eve of the Anglo-Soviet Trade Agreement of 1921, when announcing, "We are convinced that the foreign capitalists, who will be obliged to work on terms we offer them, will dig their own graves." On other occasions, they engaged in negotiations primarily to ingratiate the Soviet Union with third parties, as they did during the Genoa Conference of 1922 and the Disarmament Conference of 1932.

These practices only reinforced the conviction that it was difficult under any conditions to carry on meaningful diplomatic conversations with the Soviet Union and impossible to rely on any agreements made. This belief proved to be a heavy

handicap when the Soviets began to be seriously alarmed by the threat of Hitler's Germany and shifted their diplomacy in order to secure some measure of protection. For example, they placed the Comintern under restraint, gained diplomatic recognition by the United States in 1933, secured admission to the League of Nations in 1934, and negotiated the Franco-Soviet Pact in 1935. But Western suspicion of Soviet motives remained unabated. Even as the war approached and attempts were made to secure an Anglo-French-Soviet alliance, Chamberlain remained unmoved, saying, "I must confess to the most profound distrust of Russia."

Further complications arose during these interwar years with the emergence of Benito Mussolini and his Fascist party in Italy. His previous experience in journalism left him with a preoccupation for newspaper opinion, for style rather than substance, and for a hankering after sensational strokes and dramatic coups that would look good in headlines. He was forever making emotional public statements about his contempt for conventional practices, professional diplomats, collaborative negotiations, and restraints on the use of force. Instead, he wanted to pursue what he called the *tono fascista*, or the "Fascist style" of diplomacy, designed to demonstrate a militant bearing, constant posturing and bombast, and a determination to impose ideological purity. "Note that I do not love the hesitant and conventional form," he declared. "I affirm!"

This approach became even worse when the impulsive and erratic Mussolini appointed his inexperienced son-in-law and former propaganda chief Galeazzo Ciano as foreign minister. One of his first acts was to boast, "In Italy, the most Fascist ministry is that of Foreign Affairs." He forced Italian ambassadors to conduct themselves not as partners of a diplomatic community, but rather as if they were in "an enemy camp." When one senior diplomat received orders to represent Italy in France, for example, he naturally requested instructions. "What ought I try to accomplish in Paris?" he asked. "Nothing," replied Ciano, more interested in insults rather than results. "It will be difficult," the ambassador responded, "but I will do my best." Blatantly rejecting the norms and objectives of traditional diplomacy, Mussolini turned instead to violence, launching the Italian-Ethiopian War of 1935–1936, flagrantly attacking a fellow member of the League of Nations.

Developments in Asia produced even more challenges. The outbreak of the Great Depression not only brought untold economic hardship to Japan, but enormously enhanced the popular appeal of the Japanese nationalist extremists and expansionists in civilian patriotic societies and in the armed forces. They denounced their government's emphasis on international partnership and peaceful conciliation, insisting that territorial spoils existed on the mainland, ripe for the taking. Frustrated with official policy that called for "patience and restraint," Japanese army officers deliberately precipitated a crisis in Mukden in 1931 to create an excuse for seizing the whole of China's province of Manchuria.

As historian Norman Rich observes, this conquest of Manchuria was the first significant breach in the international treaty system established after the First World War, the first blatant example of successful "revisionism," and the beginning of the Western policy of appeasement. Emboldened with their success and their appetite whetted for more, militant Japanese military and naval officers assassinated the prime minister, abolished parliament, and determined to become the makers rather than the instruments of policy. They marginalized

the professional diplomats and directed that Japan withdraw from the League of Nations, repudiate the Washington Naval Treaties, and begin a massive arms buildup. Japan seized control of Shanghai in 1937 and then engaged in the "Rape of Nanking" with brutal and shocking human rights atrocities against tens of thousands of innocent civilians. Providing evidence of a *dialogue des sourds*, the Japanese described their actions not as aggression, but as an effort to "protect" the Chinese people, to establish a New Order based on "justice," and to bring about "eternal peace."

The final element in this gathering storm took form in the coming to power of Hitler as the Reich Chancellor of Germany in January 1933. When this change of leadership occurred, the French government obviously wanted to know what it would mean for their own interests and security. Toward this end, they requested an assessment from their ambassador in Berlin, André François-Poncet. He responded immediately, before any policy initiative had even been taken, and offered a remarkably prescient dispatch. He warned that Hitler's character, fanatical self-confidence, craving for power, temperament, and complete lack of government experience made it highly unlikely that the customary norms and restraint of diplomatic convention would ever be followed. Hitler, he wrote, insisted on being in control, listened only to himself, refused to acknowledge the arguments of others, and simply did not respond to rational discourse. Germany was now led, he concluded, by a man who possesses a "fertility in ruses," demonstrates a complete "lack of scruple," "ignores all respect for his pledged word," and has succeeded "in tricking and seducing those with whom he has dealt."

What would this mean for force and statecraft? It was difficult to say with certainty, but the signs were ominous. Hitler actually had revealed some of his ideas in his autobiography, *Mein Kampf*, written well before he came to power. Here he wrote that his own personal experience in the First World War had convinced him of the necessity of manipulating public opinion through propaganda in order to create "a national passion rearing up in its strength" to stir aggressive nationalism, inflame hatred against enemies, portray international cooperation as betrayal, and justify war itself. He further revealed his objective of creating a *Machtstaat*, or power state, employing *Machtpolitik*, or the policy of using armed force in dealing with others without any consideration of ethical restraints.

Hitler further declared that he would tear up the *Diktat*, or dictated settlement of the Versailles Treaty, and secure *Lebensraum*, or living space, at the expense of others, even going so far as to identify his foreign targets in advance. "State boundaries are made by man and changed by man," he insisted, but this is "not won through solemn appeals to the Lord or through pious hopes in a League of Nations, but only by *the force of arms*." Importantly for our consideration, he never regarded diplomacy as a means of resolving conflict or preserving peace, but rather as an instrument of preparing for expansion and war. As he wrote himself, "An alliance whose aim does not embrace a plan for war is senseless and worthless. Alliances are concluded only for struggle." It is not surprising, therefore, that Hitler had a deep distrust of professional diplomats and refused to read their reports or follow their advice, referred to the German Foreign Ministry as "the Idiot House," and actually removed his ambassadors from foreign posts when he thought that they might be interested in seeking peace when he desired war.

"Only by Force of Arms": Hitler and Mussolini

As he planned for what he regarded as his "inevitable" war, Hitler received enormous assistance from the Western policy of appeasement. It was based on an ignorance of history and force and statecraft and an unwillingness to face up to unpleasant realities and accept the burdens that would have been necessary to stop aggression. Those who engaged in this disastrous policy wanted to believe that everyone surely feared another war and surely shared the same norms and objectives even when they did not. Their wishful thinking convinced them that the best way to maintain peace and security was to give the aggressors what they wanted in the hope that, once satisfied, they then would play by the rules.

Although practiced by others in the West, including the French and the Americans, appeasement is most frequently identified with Chamberlain, a man of arrogant bearing whose appalling ignorance about international relations was matched only by his overwhelming sense of self-assurance. Indeed, he had once been interrupted while airing his views on diplomacy by his own brother Austen, one of the authors of the Locarno treaties, who accurately said, "Neville, you must remember you don't know anything about foreign affairs." This proved in the end to be tragically true, but it never seemed to bother him. Like many other politicians during this period, and some of our own time, he was headstrong in his own opinions, ignored factual evidence in order to preserve his own prior convictions, resented professional diplomats, and sought to bypass the Foreign Office.

He dismissed the criticisms of those with considerable international experience like Foreign Secretary Anthony Eden or Churchill and surrounded himself instead with those whose views agreed with his own. In the end, Chamberlain's critics proved to be absolutely right, for appeasement helped to bring on the very war that he sought to avoid.

This disaster did not result solely from his own gullibility, however. Hitler possessed remarkable gifts of mesmerizing oratory and persuasion, and Chamberlain was not the only leader deluded by his ability to mask his true intentions until he felt strong enough to strike. Hitler showed calculating skill, sinister inventiveness, and an extraordinary facility for lying to advance his purposes. He adroitly used ingratiation and intimidation, exploited prejudices and fears, and played on the illusions and wishful thinking of what others wanted to see and hear, thereby hiding his real objectives and postponing the time when the scales finally fell from their eyes.

Hitler demonstrated these abilities as he designed and adjusted his foreign policy as circumstances permitted through four distinct phases on the road to war. The first of these involved concealment and obfuscation. During this first year in office, he wanted to convince other nations that they had nothing to fear. Toward this end, he did not change the personnel in the Foreign Office or the embassies, played down his earlier provocative statements from *Mein Kampf*, and pronounced constant reassurances that whatever unpleasant things or violations of human rights were going on inside Germany had no international implications. His public statements at this stage were soothing, disarming, and even ingratiating. All of this was designed to blunt criticism, divert attention from his real intentions, and prevent external interference while Germany was still vulnerable.

In the second phase, initiated at the end of 1933, Hitler's diplomacy was intended to remove the fetters of the past and to protect the country from the possible consequences of doing so. This began with Germany's secret rearmament and withdrawal from the disarmament conference and from the League of Nations itself, actions that Hitler carefully prepared by playing on the guilty conscience of the West with regard to the Versailles Treaty and the resentment that existed in some countries over France's uncompromising attitude. He used with effect tactics that were to be employed again: constantly raising the level of his demands so that a settlement became impossible, and then walking out, claiming that the German people would no longer tolerate an imposed inequality. Hitler also devoted considerable effort to avoid any punishment for these actions. This took the form of a flurry of assurances that he was willing to enter into new pacts with anyone, including a pact of friendship with Poland in 1934. His smooth promises had such a ring of sincerity that they lulled others into a dangerous false sense of security.

The third phase, extending from 1935 through 1937, was characterized by testing resolve, designed to discover how much resistance could be expected once Hitler decided to unmask his plans for expansion to the east. It began with the first of his "Saturday Surprises," when (after government officials and military personnel in other countries already had left for the weekend and were off duty) he announced that Germany had decided to create a new air force and that it would no longer be bound by the arms restrictions of the Versailles Treaty. In a revealing example of just how skillful he could be in disarming potential antagonists, Hitler explained his decision as reasonable and a matter of honor, saying that Germany

simply wanted to be free to have an air force like any other self-respecting state. Even the usually skeptical British ambassador in Berlin, Sir Eric Phipps, was won over and actually advised his government that Hitler had changed from his "old, somewhat gangster-like days at Munich" and that he could now be trusted: "His signature, once given, will bind his people as no other could." When this deception proved to be successful, Hitler then boldly decided in 1936 to invade and remilitarize the Rhineland, the last remaining protection for France against an immediate German attack. Only words (rather than actions) of protest occurred in response to this direct challenge to security, and no one marched—except for the Germans. As Hitler later admitted, "If the French had marched into the Rhineland we would have had to withdraw with our tails between our legs, for the military resources at our disposal would have been wholly inadequate for even a moderate resistance." He had tested the resolve of others to uphold the international order and found that they had none.

The fourth phase was the period of aggression, heralded by Hitler's strategic planning meeting of November 1937, the reorganization and expansion of the army, and the appointment of the ideologically pure but completely inexperienced businessman Joachim von Ribbentrop as foreign minister. He invaded Austria in March 1938, violating yet another provision of the Versailles Treaty, completely swallowing a sovereign state and member of the League of Nations. This enabled him to cover his southern flank and expand the territorial base of his new Reich. Then, with his own offensive coercion, and with the help of those who appeased him at the Munich Conference of September 1938 by simply giving him everything he wanted, an emboldened Hitler took control of the strategic Sudetenland on the German-Czech border, solemnly promising that it represented his "last demand."

Hitler was true to his word—for six months. In March 1939 he tore up the Munich agreement, ordered his military forces into Prague, seized control of the remainder of Czechoslovakia, and prepared for war against Poland. He then joined with Mussolini in signing the Pact of Steel for planned aggression. Last-minute attempts by the British and the French to practice a strategy of deterrence could not help but fail; for, as we shall see in Chapter 9, success requires credibility, and this had long since disappeared. Seeing unarmed appeasement from Britain and France, and unarmed isolation from the United States, Hitler had no reason at all to believe that any of them had either the will or the ability to enforce any threats they might make.

Hitler's most stunning diplomatic stroke came in August 1939, when he signed the Nazi-Soviet Non-Aggression Pact with blinding speed, literally under the noses of the French and British. This treaty between the two most powerful countries who had been deliberately excluded from peacemaking and system building in 1919, and who for their own reasons desired to overthrow the international system itself, now called for a division of spoils in Eastern Europe and relieved Hitler of any immediate military threat of a two-front war.

With this in his pocket, he had no further use for diplomatic tactics and thus turned to his poised and waiting troops, heavy artillery, armored tanks, Stuka dive bombers, and other new weapons made possible by the most recent technology. Now he had no more inhibitions about the ruthless use of force and foreign affairs than he had in using force in domestic affairs. In marked contrast to his opposite

numbers in London and Paris, he had never regarded diplomacy as a means of preserving peace but instead as an instrument for preparing for the war that he had always planned. "After all," he said once the war began, "I did not raise the army in order *not* to use it."

This statement underlines the fact that all of his diplomatic interactions with the Western governments, upon which they had placed such high hopes, had been nothing but a deliberately contrived *dialogue des sourds*, in which the words he used had secret meanings that the other side could not or would not hear.

SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER EXPLORATION

The central theme of a revolution in diplomacy is developed in Paul Gordon Lauren, "The Diplomatic Revolution of Our Time," in David Wetzel and Theodore Hamerow (eds.), *International Politics and German History* (Westport, CT, 1997); Paul Gordon Lauren, *Diplomats and Bureaucrats* (Stanford, CA, 1976); and Gordon A. Craig, "The Revolution in War and Diplomacy," in *War, Politics, and Diplomacy* (New York, 1966).

The Paris Peace Conference is treated in David Andelman, *A Shattered Peace* (New York, 2014 ed.); Margaret Macmillan, *Paris 1919: Six Months That Changed the World* (New York, 2002); Arno Mayer, *Politics and Diplomacy of Peacemaking* (New York, 1967); and Harold Nicolson's personal memoir, *Peacemaking 1919* (New York, 1939 ed.). For discussion on Wilson, see Erez Manela, *The Wilsonian Moment* (New York, 2007); Lloyd Ambrosius, *Wilsonianism* (New York, 2002); the chapter entitled "The New Face of Diplomacy" in Henry Kissinger, *Diplomacy* (New York, 1994); Arno Mayer, *Political Origins of the New Diplomacy* (New York, 1970 ed.); Gordon A. Craig, "The United States and the European Balance," *Foreign Affairs*, 55 (1976): 189–198; Alexander L. George and Juliette L. George, *Woodrow Wilson and Colonel House* (New York, 1964); and E. H. Carr, *The Twenty Years' Crisis* (New York, 1964 ed.).

For diplomacy during the interwar period, see Susan Pedersen, *The Guardians* (New York, 2015); Mark Mazower, *Governing the World* (New York, 2013); the chapter entitled "The 'New Diplomacy'" in Keith Hamilton and Richard Langhorne, *The Practice of Diplomacy* (London, 2011 ed.); Susan Pedersen, "Back to the League of Nations," *American Historical* Review, 112, 4 (October, 2007): 1091-1117; Zara Steiner, *The Lights That Failed* (Oxford, 2005); Paul Gordon Lauren, *Power and Prejudice* (Boulder, CO, 1996 ed.); Jonathan Haslam, *The Soviet Union and the Struggle for Collective Security in Europe* (New York, 1984); G. Ross, *The Great Powers and the Decline of the European States System* (London, 1983); Sally Marks, *The Illusion of Peace* (London, 1976); R. J. Sontag, *A Broken World, 1919–1939* (New York, 1971); Arnold Wolfers, *Britain and France Between the Wars: Conflicting Strategies of Peace* (New York, 1966 ed.); and Gordon A. Craig and Felix Gilbert (eds.), *The Diplomats, 1919–1939* (Princeton, 1953).

Public opinion and foreign policy are treated in John Milton Cooper, *Breaking the Heart of the World* (New York, 2001); Richard Cockett, *Twilight of Truth: Chamberlain Appeasement and the Manipulation of the Press* (New York, 1989); Ralph Levering, *The Impact of Public Opinion on American Foreign Policy* (New York, 1978); Winston Churchill, *The Gathering Storm* (Boston, 1948); E. H. Carr,

Propaganda in International Politics (New York, 1939); Elihu Root, "A Requisite for the Success of Popular Diplomacy," *Foreign Affairs*, 1 (1922): 3–10; and Walter Lippmann, *The Stakes of Diplomacy* (New York, 1917). Readers interested in economics and foreign policy should consult Paul Kennedy, *The Rise and Fall of the Great Powers* (New York, 1987); David E. Kaiser, *Economic Diplomacy and the Origins of the Second World War* (Princeton, 1980); Charles Kindleberger, *Power and Money: The Economics of International Politics and the Politics of International Economics* (New York, 1970); and John Maynard Keynes, *The Economic Consequences of the Peace* (London, 1920).

For studies on Hitler, see Gerhard L. Weinberg, *Hitler's Foreign Policy, 1933–1939* (New York, 2010 ed.); Alan Bullock, *Hitler: A Study in Tyranny* (New York, 1991 ed.); Chapter 19 of Gordon A. Craig, *Germany* (New York, 1978); Klaus Hildebrand, *The Foreign Policy of the Third Reich* (Berkeley, CA, 1974); Norman Rich, *Hitler's War Aims* (New York, 1973); Hitler's own revealing autobiography, *Mein Kampf*; France, *Documents diplomatiques français, 1932–1939* (Paris, 1949 ff.) 1st Series, II: 580–585; and the collection of captured materials published by the U.S. Department of State entitled *Documents on German Foreign Policy, 1918–1945.* For Soviet diplomacy, insights can be gained from Robert Service, *Lenin* (Cambridge, MA, 2002); Alan Bullock, *Hitler and Stalin* (New York, 1991); Anthony Read and David Fisher, *The Deadly Embrace* (New York, 1988); Andre Gromyko and B. N. Ponomarev (eds.), *Soviet Foreign Policy, 1917–1945* (Moscow, 1981); and Teddy Uldricks, *Diplomacy and Ideology* (Beverly Hills, CA, 1979). Appeasement is analyzed in Tim Bouverie, *Appeasement* (New York, 2019); David Faber, *Munich, 1938* (New York, 2009); Frank McDonough, *Hitler, Chamberlain, and Appeasement* (Cambridge, UK, 2002); Richard Davis, *Anglo-French Relations Before the Second World War* (New York, 2001); and Telford Taylor, *Munich: The Price of Tragedy* (New York, 1979).

CHAPTER 4

A New Postwar System of Security

Great Power Directorate or United Nations?

No war in human history created more devastation than the Second World War. It lasted for years and, long before it ended, proved to be more truly global than its predecessor, more total in its demands on resources and on all classes of society, more sophisticated in its weaponry, and infinitely more destructive in its results. Three-fourths of the world's population took part. It is estimated that more than 60,000,000 human beings were killed and that, for the first time, far more civilians lost their lives than combatants. As if that were not enough, this ruinous war ended with the use of a new category of terrible weapons of mass destruction that promised to multiply these dreadful statistics beyond the limits of human comprehension if statecraft could not control the use of force in the future. Allied leaders thus realized that if they failed to establish a viable security system at the end of this war and at a time of an unabated diplomatic revolution, they could face a repetition of the cataclysm—or something even worse.

LESSONS FROM THE PAST AND PLANS FOR THE FUTURE

Thoughtful men and women who are responsible for the conduct of force and statecraft try to learn lessons from history that might guide them in their formulation and implementation of policy, as we shall see in more detail in Chapter 7. In this regard, those who study the past know that there have been four times when serious efforts were made to create some form of international order: Westphalia in 1648, Vienna in 1815, Paris in 1919, and San Francisco in 1945. Each of these came about as a result of system-transforming wars: the Thirty Years' War, the revolutionary and Napoleonic wars, the First World War, and then the Second World War. Each revealed that military success on the battlefield alone is not an end in itself, and that peace and security are not something that spontaneously happens when the fighting stops. Each demonstrated the necessity of working together as partners in finding new and creative ways to manage their relations. Moreover, each taught

that *attaining* peace and security is much more difficult than simply *desiring* them, and that the task of successful statecraft is to seize the opportunities and anticipate the challenges ahead by taking action to address them.

Those leaders now called upon to make the world anew after 1945 could draw not only on these broad historical lessons if they chose, but also on those of their own immediate past. They had just lived through the harrowing experience of catastrophic systemic collapse and the *second* world war of their lifetime. To make it even worse, they staggered in disbelief when realizing that in this war they lost more than three times the number of deaths than in the first. When it was over, they were not only eager but desperate to succeed where their predecessors after the First World War had so tragically failed. They wanted to avoid any repetition of those mistakes that had led to such disasters as the Great Depression, the emergence and then appeasement of the juggernaut of aggressive regimes, the rejection of existing treaties and international law, the refusal to work as partners in collective security to protect the peace, the unwillingness to support the League of Nations, the suffering and carnage of a global war, the brutality of the "Rape of Nanking," the horrific genocide of the Holocaust, and the unleashing of weapons of mass destruction that could annihilate the planet. The survivors were terrified by the recent past and came to the conclusion that they simply could no longer afford to revert back to anarchy and the brutal realities of modern war without some measure of tangible cooperation.

As they began this task, they sought to learn what lessons they could from the past that might serve as guides and warnings. They believed that one of the mistakes made by the victors in 1918, for example, had been to sign an armistice with the German government without decisively defeating its armed forces and occupying the country. This had led to claims by rabid nationalists that Germany had not really been defeated, but that the army had been "stabbed in the back" by traitors. Resolved not to make this error again, the victors of 1945 agreed this time to convincingly defeat, disarm, and fully occupy former enemies.

Other lessons were more complex and profound. Their recent past forced the victors to seriously reexamine a number of previously held beliefs and to develop more sophisticated analyses of statecraft that would go on to influence the responses to challenges of our own time. It became increasingly evident to them, to illustrate, that so many of the problems in the world now were truly international in nature and scope and thus required more effective partnerships instead of single nation-states acting alone or sticking their heads in the sand as isolationists. Their experiences also suggested the necessity to reconsider the meaning of "power" and of "peace and security" themselves, going beyond the narrow measurement of armed force alone and taking into account broader and multifaceted dimensions such as economic well-being, normative values of human rights, and justice. Indeed, the principles of human rights appeared prominently and publicly in both the Atlantic Charter and the Declaration of the United Nations as the peace aims for which they had fought the war itself.

The results of these discussions about lessons learned took a variety of forms. One important example was drawn from the previous failure to develop economic policies and cooperation that would avoid future depressions and thereby encourage more lasting peace. The victors came to believe that the interwar years demonstrated a relationship between economic despair and political violence. Their plans for the future therefore called for a more carefully crafted form of "economic diplomacy" characterized by the removal or reduction of trade barriers, the creation of a new monetary system to stabilize currencies and facilitate the flow of capital, and the establishment of rules-based institutions like the International Monetary Fund and World Bank to expedite postwar reconstruction and healthy economic development.

Many postwar planners and survivors of the war and genocide came to believe that another lesson was to be drawn as well. That is, the recent past revealed the great dangers of letting governments claim special privileges by invoking the principle of "national sovereignty" as a cloak to hide gross violations of human rights against their own people that, in turn, constituted serious threats to the peace. Grievous and unspeakable abuses by Nazi Germany, they saw, became dangerous to the countries around them. As the influential Commission to Study the Organization of Peace, composed of scholars and foreign policy experts, concluded:

> It has become clear that a regime of violence and opposition within any nation . . . is a matter of concern to all the rest. . . . [T]he government that rests upon violence will, by its very nature, be even more ready to do violence to foreigners than to its own fellow citizens, especially if it can thus escape the consequences of its acts at home. The foreign policy of despots is inherently one which carries with it a constant risk to the peace and security of others. In short, if aggression is the keynote of domestic policy, it will also be the clue to foreign relations.

For this reason, they declared with as much intensity as they could command: "We are determined that hereafter no nation may be insulated and wholly a law unto itself in the treatment of its people." As a consequence, many statesmen and other observers began to give serious consideration to the proposition that there could be no security without peace, no peace without justice, and no justice without respect for human rights.

Other lessons emerged from the experience of the League of Nations. Many of those who watched it emerge and then collapse remained convinced of the necessity of a new form of international organization, but wanted to learn from their previous mistakes. They saw the error in preparing for the League as an afterthought only when the First World War was already over. They appreciated the expression, "In time of peace prepare for war," but realized that now they needed to reverse it to say, "In time of war prepare for peace," and thus began to do so. They also realized the earlier mistake of tying the League so completely to the vindictive Treaty of Versailles. As such, it became an instrument in the hands of the victors, thereby tarnishing its prestige and broader legitimacy from the very beginning. They came to see that the Covenant contained flaws in not clearly delineating the responsibilities and authority between the Assembly and the Council, and in restricting the League's secretary-general to performing only timid clerical and administrative duties. In addition, it certainly was not difficult to see the serious flaw in the Covenant of giving each and every member state the ability to veto any decision to take meaningful action.

With specific reference to force and statecraft, they saw particularly grave defects in two basic facts. First, that the Covenant had glossed over any serious mention of ever using military power to enforce collective security at all. Second, that governments had been unwilling to give the League any real power in practice. They allowed the Council to only "advise" and "recommend." Its decisions consequently were not binding and the League could not require its members to impose serious sanctions or take military action against aggressors. States thus did not have to contribute their armed forces or participate in deterrence or defensive coercive diplomacy unless they wished to do so. When combined with the fatal unanimity rule, this made it easy for any single nation to simply kill any enforcement measures. All this provided a recipe for impotence and inaction, thereby eviscerating collective security. Members of the League might be able to drive the aggressor states out of the organization—but, critically, not out of their territorial conquests. It is for these reasons that those now planning the future were much more realistic about the role of force in the world, and spoke of the necessity for any new postwar international organization to have "teeth" to confront aggression.

Still another lesson of history had to do with abject failure during the interwar years to obtain the support of the Great Powers for an international system to keep the peace. They learned that, for better or for worse, dreams cannot get too far ahead of political reality and that power matters. Power is not one dimensional and can take many forms, but no international system or organization can possibly succeed unless those with the most power are committed to make it succeed. The experience of the League starkly demonstrated the reality of this fact. Although the small and medium-sized powers eagerly joined and participated, the Great Powers did not. Only Britain and France were members, and their support was either lukewarm or sharply divided. Germany and the Soviet Union, as we have seen, were initially and deliberately excluded, and then participated as half-hearted or even antagonistic members before they either withdrew or were expelled. After paying only lip service to the League, Japan simply pulled itself out as it prepared for aggressive war.

And then there was the United States. It had gone into isolationism, wanting to believe that if it let the rest of the world alone, the rest of the world would let it alone. The nation had been largely unwilling to participate in partnership with others or to accept any international responsibilities commensurate with its growing power. It not only had adamantly refused to join the League, but actually worked to thwart some of its efforts to take action against threats to the peace. In addition, the United States pursued a policy of isolationism, often popular at home for domestic politics with its emotional appeal against "foreigners" and "entangling alliances," but fatal for diplomacy and collective security. This contributed significantly to the perception among the aggressors that they had little to fear, and thus led to the onset of the Second World War. Believing that this had been a profound mistake, President Franklin Roosevelt determined that this time it was essential for both national self-interest and for the world to not follow the same path. Toward this end, he instructed the State Department as early as 1942 to work with him in developing plans for a new postwar security system.

Such a system, in Roosevelt's view, could not possibly work unless the Great Powers that possessed preponderant force agreed to cooperate in creating and

in preserving the peace. He knew that only one thing had brought the successful coalition partners together in war: fear of a common enemy. Once victory removed that threat, serious differences would emerge and the alliance would collapse. Roosevelt concluded from his reading of lessons of history about the concert system established after the revolutionary and Napoleonic wars, and his own attendance at the Paris Peace Conference in 1919, that the immediate task would be to convert the wartime alliance into a more permanent and more serious structure to keep the peace. The League of Nations, he argued, had been "based on magnificent idealism," but that "good intentions alone" were not a sufficient safeguard against "the predatory animals of this world." "Peace, like war," he declared, "can succeed only where there is a will to enforce it and where there is available power to enforce it." He believed that the exclusion or abstention of any of the Great Powers would condemn any efforts for collective security to failure. To avoid the mistakes of the past, he determined that this time the United States would not retreat into isolationism, but instead would cast its leadership and power on the scales of the effort to establish a broader system of peace and security. The goal, he said, was not simply to win the war, but to "win the peace."

Roosevelt envisioned a plan that he called the "Grand Design." This would establish a new security system in which those possessing the greatest power—the United States, Britain, the Soviet Union, and China—would serve as an executive, Great Power directorate known as the "Four Policemen." They would have exclusive authority to decide on the use of military force, but would consult with each other as a means of collective rather than unilateral decision making. Together they would use force and statecraft to meet whatever threats might arise.

This "Grand Design" suffered from several problems. In the first instance, it did not take into account the interests and the visions for the future of the many other nations in the world who had actively fought and sacrificed in the war. Military victory had been secured by the combined forces and sacrifices of forty-six different countries, and each believed that it most assuredly had earned the right to plan for and to participate in whatever postwar security system might be created. Not one of these was willing to be excluded or to be preempted by only four nations acting arrogantly and exclusively by themselves.

Proposals like this, observed one outraged diplomat from another country that had contributed much to the war effort, amounted to no more "than an undertaking by the Great Powers to meet from time to time to discuss the situation as it appeared, and to decide what might best be done, and in taking this course they expected the assistance and collaboration of the smaller powers." Such an approach, if left unmodified, he and many others argued, would violate the democratic principles for which the war had been fought and thereby would fail to keep the peace. They realized, however, the fundamental fact that power in the world is unequally distributed and that by themselves they did not possess sufficient strength or resources to enforce collective security. They recognized that any effective use of armed force or economic sanctions could not possibly be achieved without the Great Powers. The central challenge for the small and medium-sized countries thus was—and remains to our own day—direct: how to get the Great Powers, who could make or break the organization, agree to participate in it while at the same time not letting them completely control it.

A further problem with Roosevelt's initial plan emerged with public opinion at home and overseas, which strongly supported widespread international cooperation and partnership rather than a Great Power directorate. Since so many sacrifices had been required of civilians and so many had been killed during the war under the allied coalition banner of the "United Nations," and since popular support would be critical for conferring legitimacy and sustaining any postwar security policy, this opinion had to be taken very seriously. As one foreign minister declared: "As we have had a people's war, so shall we now have a people's peace."

After considering these arguments and their implications, Roosevelt agreed to compromise on his original design and worked tirelessly to build support for a broad-based international organization in which the United States could work collectively with other countries to pursue its interests and secure its defense and, when necessary, accept certain self-imposed restraints and sacrifice its own freedom of action for the common good. With the lessons of history very much on his mind, he wanted to avoid Woodrow Wilson's mistake of failing to secure support among both parties in the Senate, and thus went before a joint session of Congress. Here he declared: "This time, as we fight together to get the war over quickly, we work together to keep it from happening again." Roosevelt said that the time had arrived

> to spell the end of the system of unilateral action, the exclusive alliances, the spheres of influence, the balances of power, and all the other expedients that have been tried for centuries—and have always failed. We propose to substitute for all these a universal organization in which all peace-loving nations will finally have a chance to join.

This new organization was to be called the United Nations. It would come to be described as "the most ambitious order-building experiment in history."

FORCE AND STATECRAFT AS ENVISIONED BY THE UNITED NATIONS CHARTER

Those delegates who solemnly assembled in San Francisco to create the organization of the United Nations met at a time of high risk and enormous uncertainty. Serious divisions among the victors threatened the complete collapse of the conference itself. Moreover, they had just barely survived the most catastrophic "total" war in human history, replete with genocide and some of the worst cases of man's inhumanity to man ever known. It was burnished into their minds. Hard-earned and often brutal experience taught them that their victory against the aggressors had come not from words of suasion, but from the application of superior power made possible by the combined armed forces and resources of many nations. They understood all too well that whereas the First World War may have been resulted from miscalculation, the Second World War was the result of deliberate and malicious calculation by leaders who actually wanted war. These harsh facts pushed them away from whatever impulses they may have had for pacifism or the belief that they might eradicate all wars and drove them instead

into the challenges presented by both the necessity and the dangers of force in statecraft. They realized that they had a common interest in keeping the peace and were realistic in their calculation that it could be secured in the future only if they continued their cooperation through partnership and collective action by finding, in the words of Roosevelt, "the courage to fulfill their responsibilities in an admittedly imperfect world."

The participants in this endeavor determined to try to accomplish this goal by establishing a more serious organization than anything ever attempted before. They delineated a wide range of guidelines and rules in its Charter not only to provide restraints but to minimize uncertainty with some measure of predictability on behavior that might make a new international order possible. But given the intensity of negotiations, its structural and legal apparatus not surprisingly reflected many compromises between competing principles and politics.

To address the principle of the sovereign equality of all states, for example, they created a large **General Assembly**. Here, each and every member nation would possess an equal vote, allowing them to actively participate in all deliberations. This body would serve as a barometer of global public opinion by providing a worldwide forum designed to discuss "any questions relating to the maintenance of international peace and security." At the same time, they recognized the reality that some states are more equal than others. In order to acknowledge the unequal hierarchy of power in the world—as well as to gain the necessary support of the Great Powers—they created a much smaller, but highly influential, **Security Council**. Here, and somewhat like the Concert of Europe in the nineteenth century, those with the greatest power would dominate through their permanent membership and with their exclusive power of the veto.

To address broader definitions of peace and security, and to acknowledge the demands of people who had suffered so much in the war, they set up the **Economic and Social Council**, charging it with focusing on achieving higher standards of living, well-being, and respect for human rights. To promote the principle of self-determination and to recognize the emerging political pressure of decolonization, they established the **Trusteeship Council**. To advance the rule of law, they charged the **International Court of Justice** with serving as the principal judicial organ of the United Nations. Finally, to give the organization a chief executive officer over the Secretariat, they instituted the position of **secretary-general**, giving them the authority to initiate debate and, if necessary, propose courses of action on "any matter which in his opinion may threaten the maintenance of peace and security."

Given their recent and hard-earned experience in war, those who created the United Nations concluded that they must do whatever they could to prevent another catastrophe of such magnitude, but at the same time they recognized that the challenges of force and statecraft would persist and would confront the world as they had throughout human history. The question before them, therefore, was not how to eliminate force, as much as they might desire it, but rather how to control and restrain it. They drew on lessons they had learned and described their purpose simply enough in the very first sentence of the United Nations Charter: "to save succeeding generations of the scourge of war, which twice in our lifetime has

brought untold sorrow to mankind, and to reaffirm faith in fundamental human rights." Toward this end, they pledged that they would "refrain in their international relations from the threat or use of force against the territorial integrity or political independence of any state" and "unite our strength to maintain international peace and security, and to ensure by the acceptance of principles and the institution of methods, that armed force shall not be used, save in the common interest."

It was envisioned that agreement on this critical phrase of "the common interest"—what it meant, who would define it, and how it would be defended—would be determined among the members of the United Nations by diplomatic negotiation (a subject we shall explore at length in Chapter 8). According to the Charter, the general principles of cooperation in this international system, including those dealing with human rights "for all without distinction as to race, sex, language, or religion," would be discussed in the General Assembly, where every country was represented equally and where recommendations could be made. Actual authority for action on specific problems and crises, however—especially those involving force and statecraft—would reside in the much smaller Security Council, which the five most powerful nations at the time (the United States, Britain, France, the Soviet Union, and China) could control as a result of their permanent membership and exclusive power to veto any substantive action they did not like. This was the price they extracted for their participation in the organization.

The preferred means of resolving conflict, of course, would be diplomacy, or what Chapter VI of the Charter called "Pacific Settlement of Disputes." Here, solutions would be sought "by negotiation, enquiry, mediation, conciliation, arbitration, judicial settlement, resort to regional agencies or arrangements, or other peaceful means of their own choice." But it was understood that in the real world such methods might not always work. For precisely this reason, Chapter VII on "Action with Respect to Threats to the Peace, Breaches of the Peace, and Acts of Aggression" specifically addressed armed force.

Those who founded the United Nations understood that in a world of violence and war no international system could possibly survive unless its members saw their own self-interests as being served by assuming a measure of responsibility to act collectively and with restraint. Agreement must be reached on a number of basic principles and normative rules that restrained their competition. States needed to make a commitment, for example, to collaborate in the suppression of aggression by enforcing collective security measures. Similarly, those who threatened the peace could not be allowed to unilaterally determine on their own when they were justified in using armed force against others. As the new American president Harry Truman quite realistically declared at the San Francisco Conference, "We all have to recognize, no matter how great our strength, that we must deny ourselves the license to do always as we please."

This explains why so much time and effort was spent wrestling with the question of exactly how the United Nations could serve as the source of collective legitimization for the threat or use of armed force in the world and as the forum where norms on force and statecraft could best be developed, interpreted, and enforced. The negotiators understood perfectly well that a state's use of its military potential is the most sensitive element of national sovereignty, and thus is carefully and

jealously guarded. After intense and extensive negotiations, those who crafted the Charter drew on principles from the just war tradition and agreed that only two kinds of cases would qualify for the legitimate use of armed force:

1. **Self-Defense** in the event of an actual armed attack. According to the text:

   > Nothing in the present Charter shall impair the inherent right of individual or collective self-defense if an armed attack occurs against a Member of the United Nations, until the Security Council has taken measures necessary to maintain international peace and security. Measures taken by Members in the exercise of this right of self-defense shall be immediately reported to the Security Council and shall not in any way affect the authority and the responsibility of the Security Council under the present Charter to take at any time such action as it deems necessary in order to maintain or restore international peace and security.

2. **International Enforcement Action** to collectively maintain or restore international peace and security. The Charter reads:

   > The Security Council shall determine the existence of any threat to the peace, breach of the peace, or act of aggression and shall make recommendations, or decide what measures shall be taken . . . [If peaceful means proved to be inadequate] it may take such action by air, sea, or land forces as may be necessary to maintain or restore international peace and security.

The Charter thus endowed the Security Council with a unique status and with considerable powers and responsibilities. It provided for a number of tools of coercive diplomacy, including interrupting economic transactions, cutting communication ties, imposing sanctions, and severing diplomatic relations. Should any of these measures prove to be insufficient in countering aggression or other threats to the peace, it explicitly recognized the need for more forceful means. This signaled a radical departure from the severely limited provisions of the Covenant of the League of Nations. The Charter specifically provided for the possibility of military demonstrations, blockades, threats of armed force, and the actual use of air, sea, and land forces. It obligated all members "to make available to the Security Council, on its call and in accordance with special agreement or agreements, armed forces, assistance, and facilities, including rights of passage, necessary for the purpose of maintaining international peace and security." No nation voted against this because they all wanted a guarantee that the United Nations would protect them against future wars.

Other articles established a Military Staff Committee to be composed of the chiefs of staff of its permanent members that would develop plans for "the application of armed force," for "the employment and command of forces placed at its disposal," and for "the regulation of armaments." Over time, these plans came to include various arms control agreements and arms embargoes as well as shows of force for deterrence or coercive diplomacy, peacekeeping forces, humanitarian intervention, and even war itself. In addition, the Charter allowed for the possibility of creating standing United Nations forces and regional security arrangements.

These numerous provisions on force and statecraft marked a strong and explicit endorsement of shared authority and shared responsibility for collective security. They also acknowledged the critical importance of providing "teeth" as instruments of policy when necessary and of actually *enforcing* decisions. As such, they boldly proclaimed that aggression or threats to peace and security would be met by the efforts of those on the Security Council and the collective military contributions of the members of the United Nations.

The Charter thus went considerably farther than any previous treaty or practice in history, giving every impression that the United Nations had the very real possibility of satisfying the requirements of a viable postwar security system. There seemed to be an agreement among the member states on the basic aims and objectives for creating and maintaining the system as a whole. The purposes of the organization were stated boldly: to take effective collective measures to maintain international peace and security, to develop universal principles of international law and friendly relations among states, and to promote and encourage respect for human rights and fundamental freedoms. In addition, there appeared to be a structure appropriate to the number of states interacting with each other, with a hierarchy among them and a recognition that new states likely would be added through time.

The design deliberately created a global organization rather than one of merely European membership, thus accurately reflecting the ever-expanding geographical scope of the diplomatic revolution. It acknowledged the principle of the equality of all nations—regardless of size, form of government, interests, or ideology—in the General Assembly. It simultaneously recognized the inequalities of the world by providing the most powerful with both privileges and responsibilities on the Security Council, thereby gaining the necessary participation of all of the Great Powers in the organization. Consequently, it seemed as though the founders of the United Nations had reached a consensus on values and procedures that would help them maintain the system as a whole, including restrictions on what could be regarded as the legitimate use of force. It is not at all surprising, therefore, that when the Charter was signed in June 1945, it met with widespread popular support. Many commentators emotionally and optimistically hailed it as "an epoch-making document" marking "one of the great moments in history."

But not everyone reacted so positively. Some critics complained bitterly that the United Nations Charter did too little. In their minds, it made little effort to eliminate armed force through disarmament. Nor did it define the meanings of expressions like "the common interest" or "self-defense." It promoted the principle of international human rights "for all" in Article 1, yet nevertheless in Article 2 sweepingly supported the opposing principle that the organization could not interfere with matters "essentially within the domestic jurisdiction of any state." Such a provision seemed to provide ready-made impunity to governments who violated the rights of their people from any outside scrutiny or intervention to protect abused victims.

Moreover, according to some commentators, despite the Charter's bold language in its preamble about "we the peoples" and "mankind," it was clear that the founders had no intention of establishing a world government. The fact remained

that the United Nations was created by and for the governments of nation-states arranged in a hierarchy of power with their own interests to protect. This made the organization completely dependent on whatever power its member states—jealous of their own national sovereignty—were willing to give it.

Critical observers also accused the Charter of granting far too much authority and privilege to the Great Powers who controlled the Security Council and could use their vetoes to prevent any collective enforcement measures that they, or those they wished to protect, did not like. The powers necessary for collective security, in other words, were the very ones that possessed the greatest capacity to threaten the security of other states. As E. B. White of the *New Yorker* wrote in despair, the fundamental problem could be found in the "steady throbbing" of one, single theme: "sovereignty, sovereignty, sovereignty." *Time* magazine compared the idealistic promises made during the war with the end result and concluded in disappointment that the final agreement represented no more than "a charter for a world of power."

Other critics complained that the Charter did too much. This applied particularly to those who valued the interests of their own nation much more than the needs of the international system. They claimed that allowing others to participate in collective decision making in an organization composed of "foreigners" would mark the beginning of "world government" or "global governance." This, they warned, would seriously threaten their sovereignty and restrict their freedom of action to pursue their own national ambitions as they saw fit.

A number of seasoned diplomats and observers, however, viewed the United Nations Charter neither as a magnificent achievement that would suddenly create heaven on earth nor as a horrendous tragedy that would destroy the cherished nation-state. Instead, they saw it in the historical context of the time and considered diplomacy to be the art of the possible, balanced somewhere between the cynics and the perfectionists. They knew that the organization represented a compromise between the principle of one state, one vote on the one hand and the realities of unequal power in the world on the other. They also appreciated the fact that no nation or group could obtain everything that they wanted over the course of a mere two months of negotiations. They believed that those who assembled at San Francisco had accomplished about as much as, if not more than, could realistically be expected given the traditional practices, the circumstances of the war, the magnitude of the tasks, the differences between the Great Powers and the medium-sized and small nations, the divergent opinions of the states and nongovernmental organizations (NGOs), and the often exaggerated hopes for the future. They would have agreed with the later conclusion of political scientist John Stoessinger, who writes:

> In not attempting the impossible, the founders of the United Nations were realists. But in seeking to go to the very limits of the possible, they were also visionaries. And necessarily so, for the idea of the United Nations had to take into account the full import of the cruel paradox that, in the nuclear age, the national sovereignty of nations would have to be controlled by an international order, but that this international order would have to be created and even controlled by sovereign nations. The plan therefore had to combine the dictates of national power with those of international order.

It is precisely this paradox and the need to combine both the specific interests of sovereign nation-states with the broader interests of the international order that present the central dilemma of any system. Collective security cannot work without the support of the most powerful, and collective security cannot work unless the most powerful can also be restrained.

Statesmen present at the creation of the United Nations proceeded with uncertainty. They had no idea about the magnitude of the diplomatic challenges and problems that lay ahead. As they attempted to learn lessons of history, however, they did know that treaties and agreements are not self-executing. *Creating* an organization is one thing, but *sustaining* it is something quite different. They thus knew that this new postwar system would require that its members be willing to keep their promises to resolve conflicts and enforce norms of behavior by honoring their obligations, make compromises and sacrifices for the common good, and adapt to new developments in order to survive. With this in mind, Truman announced: "This Charter, like our Constitution, will be expanded and improved as time goes on. No one claims that it is now a final or a perfect instrument. It has not been poured into a fixed mold. Changing world conditions will require readjustments."

CHANGING WORLD CONDITIONS AND READJUSTMENTS

The impact of some of these changes would be recognized only through time. Although initially appearing relatively unremarkable, for example, the decision to locate the new United Nations headquarters in New York City would go on to reveal a shift in global power that favored the United States. It also provided yet another marker that Europe's four-hundred year domination of much of the world was approaching its end.

But other conditions created by upheavals and crises occurred much sooner than expected. Within only months of the smiles and cooperation that characterized the approval of the Charter, the world watched with alarm as the United States, Britain, and the Soviet Union failed to reach agreement at the Potsdam Conference on fundamental features of the postwar settlement, as the Soviets moved troops into positions in Eastern Europe and entered the war in Asia, and as the Americans dropped the atomic bombs on Hiroshima and Nagasaki. With the end of the war and the elimination of the common threat that had held them together, the coalition partners of the "Grand Alliance" fell victim to their own rival national passions, histories, interests, and perspectives. Two days after the very first session of the United Nations, the presence of Soviet troops in Iran was brought before the Security Council, quickly followed by a countermove by the Soviet Union complaining about British forces in Greece and Indonesia and the refusal of Europeans to end their domination over colonial empires. Shortly thereafter, Winston Churchill delivered his famous "Iron Curtain" speech condemning Soviets for securing their grip on Eastern Europe by forcibly imposing Communist regimes. One diplomat painfully observed that "the clouds were gathering fast," and these gave every indication that the world was rapidly moving from one war into another, soon to be called the Cold War.

Given these frightening developments, widespread global sentiment strongly believed that the United Nations remained the best hope for peace and security. Even as late as 1948, public opinion polls revealed an overwhelming majority within the United States enthusiastically supporting the organization and its mission. Some of this ardor perhaps resulted from unreasonable expectations by those who wanted to believe that the new organization would be able to act on the international level in much the same way as a government acts on the national level. This was a profound misunderstanding, for as Brian Urquhart, a long-time civil servant posted to the United Nations, writes, "The UN is nothing like a [world] government. It has no sovereignty or power of sovereign decision-making. It is an association of independent, sovereign states which depends for its effectiveness on the capacity of its members to agree and cooperate." At times, such capacity to place the needs of the international system as a whole above those of the nation-state appeared quite limited.

This was certainly true in the case of the most powerful of its members. The dream of maintaining Great Power cooperation and consensus on principles that had formed the basis of Roosevelt's initial "Four Policemen" idea never materialized. Instead, narrow national interests prevailed. Just as under the League of Nations, states desired the benefits of an international organization, but they wanted the privileges of national sovereignty more. A pattern quickly emerged that one scholar describes as "the moral infection of Great Power disagreement." Britain and France resisted any attempts to dismantle their colonial empires, China fell into revolution and the coming to power of Mao Zedong and his Communist Party, and the Cold War rivalry between the Soviet Union and the United States seriously and dangerously escalated. Domestic opinion, which had so strongly supported the United Nations, began to erode. In the United States the public was outraged when other members of the General Assembly disagreed with American policies abroad or dared to criticize racial segregation or lynching at home. Congress increasingly complained about the influence of "foreigners" and "the colored peoples of the world" within the United Nations as well as the organization's failure to prevent crises. The "Red-baiting" hysteria of the McCarthy investigations provided a steady stream of highly public accusations that United Nations staff and certain delegates were "manifesting fellow-traveler tendencies," tainted with a "scarlet hue," and "unAmerican" "crypto-Communists."

In addition, some governments sought to belittle the achievements of the United Nations while blaming their own foreign policy failures on it, to insist that it stay out of their own particular areas of interest, or even attempt to emasculate it. Truman's self-styled "realist" secretary of state, Dean Acheson, contemptuously referred to those who supported the United Nations as the "True Believers" with "universal Plumb plans," criticized the Charter as "impracticable," complained that the Secretariat was no more than "a crowded center of conflicting races and nationalities," and revealed his attitudes about gender roles by asking V. L. Pandit of India, who became the first female president of the General Assembly: "Why do pretty women want to be like men?" During the critical crisis caused by Great Britain's admission that it could no longer support Greece and Turkey against external threats, Acheson chose to bypass the United Nations completely.

A similar disregard, bordering on contempt, came in 1948 when the organization was desperately seeking a plan for partitioning Palestine that might avert a war between the Arabs and increasing numbers of Jewish settlers from Europe. This time the United States negated the negotiations and precipitated hostilities in the area by abruptly recognizing an independent state of Israel without even informing its own delegation to the United Nations of its intentions. On other occasions, governments tried to deliberately subvert negotiations, as the British demonstrated when they sent ciphered instructions to their representative to kill a particular proposal, but "not give the impression that we are being obstructive. We suggest our right course is to play for time, leaving it as far as possible to other delegations to bring out the difficulties." Permanent members of the Security Council also cast vetoes to stop enforcement actions of collective security that they regarded as contrary to their national interests.

When the Great Powers agreed with the secretary-general they lavished him with praise, but when they disagreed they poured out their contempt and criticism. When Secretary-General Trygve Lie of Norway condemned the North Korean attack on South Korea in 1950, for example, the United States praised him for his courage, "unusual skill," "good judgment," and "understanding mind." When he publicly supported membership in the United Nations for the new Communist-led People's Republic of China, however, the Americans condemned him as no more than "a stooge of the Reds."

The British and the French similarly criticized Lie's brilliant successor, Dag Hammarskjöld from Sweden, for trying to "interfere" during their military action against Egypt in the Suez Crisis of 1956, but then eagerly welcomed his offer to provide a face-saving way out of their mistake with some semblance of dignity. When Hammarskjöld worked to facilitate the massive process of decolonization or tackled the problem of apartheid in South Africa, the Soviet Union praised him for his courage and wisdom. But when he worked against Soviet interests in the Congo, they criticized him for being a "tool of the colonialists and capitalists" and actually went so far as to demand that the position of secretary-general itself be abolished. Hammarskjöld viewed this vehement attack as a challenge not just to him, but to the principles of the Charter and the larger international security system and its future. He therefore announced that he would depart whenever the majority of members requested, but that he would not be intimidated by Great Power pressure designed to emasculate the organization. "It is not the Soviet Union or, indeed, any other big powers who need the United Nations for their protection," he said, "it is all the others." In the end, he forcefully declared: "I shall remain at my post." When he finished, the General Assembly rose to give him an emotional standing ovation.

One of the reasons for this widespread global support for the secretary-general and the organization, of course, resulted from the fact that the United Nations demonstrated remarkable success in adapting to new circumstances by facilitating one of the most momentous developments of the twentieth century: the collapse of colonial empires and the subsequent emergence of newly independent nations and peoples and the geographical expansion of the international system itself. When the delegates created the United Nations in 1945, only fifty-one states were admitted to membership. Among these, only three came from

Africa, and among the mere three from Asia, only China was independent of colonial rule. The great majority of member states therefore represented the countries of Europe, the Americas, and the white Commonwealth countries. Many assumed that this political dominance by the Western world would continue in the future, as it had for centuries in the past. They were wrong, for in the simple words of one observer, "time had run out." Within a single decade and in the name of national self-determination, twenty-five new states joined the United Nations. By the end of 1965, forty-one more had been added, swelling the membership to 117. This development marked one of the greatest geopolitical changes in international history, shifting power from whites to nonwhites and liberating more than 1,000,000,000 people from Western colonial rule in Asia, Africa, the Middle East, the Pacific, and the Caribbean.

These changes profoundly transformed the composition as well as the agenda of the United Nations. Expanded membership meant that the West lost its majority in the United Nations. As a consequence, America, Britain, and France became less and less able to control the direction and outcome of negotiations, and thus were less inclined to view the organization as beneficial to their interests. More importantly, it greatly accelerated that feature of the diplomatic revolution whereby the cultural homogeneity that had characterized diplomacy for so long increasingly gave way to heterogeneity. The similarities among diplomats of the European-dominated past were steadily being replaced with great differences of race, language, religious values, socioeconomic status, stages of development, and gender, among other factors.

This development demonstrated the remarkable ability of the organization to realize its goal of becoming truly universal in scope, as well as adjusting to the growing number of states and NGOs interacting with each other within the system as a whole. The United Nations became the one place in the world where many different nations, blocs, ideologies, and interests could be represented and where they could gather on a continuous basis to talk to each other, debate, and mobilize pressure

Such diversity nevertheless brought about new and different assumptions about the nature of international society. These new actors were not as interested in the political and military questions that absorbed the attention of the superpowers and their allies of the Cold War, not as eager to maintain a static system frozen at the time of the 1945 victory, not as willing to continue letting the Great Powers alone determine the agenda of the United Nations, and increasingly convinced that genuine peace and security could not exist without the dimensions of justice and human rights. Consequently, they began to broaden the global agenda to include issues of self-determination, decolonization, the rights of women, racial equality, voting, religious toleration, economic and social development, migration, population growth and urbanization, "people-to-people" diplomacy, relief operations, the plight of refugees, famine, education, medical care, environmental protection, and the rule of law.

Indeed, this expansion of the number of actors and the new majority of small-to-medium-sized states provided one of important features of the diplomatic revolution that increasingly helped to develop and articulate new norms and place the whole subject of human rights high on the international agenda. There were other

factors as well. When the technological invention of television was brought into the public deliberations of the United Nations, for example, it created what was called "media diplomacy," forcing representatives to explain abusive actions and policies of their governments under journalistic scrutiny and before the eyes of the world as never before in history. This growing openness or transparency of diplomacy in this international forum, in turn, encouraged segments of public opinion to organize pressure groups of very vocal human rights NGOs who passionately believed that respect for individual dignity was closely related not only to freedom and justice but to peace and security.

It is for this reason that they often were willing to challenge the claims of national sovereignty and the relationship between states and their own people by stressing the broader connection between individual, national, and international security and by developing standards and mechanisms that might bring life and substance to the vision proclaimed in the landmark Universal Declaration of Human Rights. Innovative treaties, treaty-monitoring bodies, and special procedures dealing with genocide, racial discrimination and apartheid, civil and political rights, economic and social rights, torture, and women and children, for example, all sought to provide protection to those who suffered and to transform victims of abuse from being mere objects of international pity into actual subjects of international law.

The United Nations also became the one permanent piece of diplomatic machinery that could be put to work at a moment's notice for crisis management (a topic to be discussed in Chapter 11). It served as the one body in which both traditional and democratic, bilateral and parliamentary forms of diplomacy could be brought to bear on critical problems and crises in order to avert danger. The United Nations became a place in which contacts could be made, communication networks established, and signals and messages passed, thereby sometimes saving governments from the possible consequences of their own mistakes. American ambassador Philip Jessup and Soviet ambassador Jacob Malik discovered the great advantages of this during their private conversations in 1949 that prepared the way to end the dangerous Berlin Blockade. The British and the French received the same benefits during the Suez Crisis of 1956. Two years later, after an anti-government coup in Iraq, the landing of U.S. Marines on the shores of Lebanon might have invited a Soviet response had Hammarskjöld not devised a face-saving formula by which the United States withdrew its troops.

Any doubts about this potential for crisis management by the United Nations should have been put to rest after the Cuban Missile Crisis of 1962, when the world stood on the brink of possible nuclear annihilation. In this situation, Secretary-General U Thant, a Buddhist from Burma, initiated direct communication with the Americans, Soviets, and Cubans, serving as a go-between, suggesting a way to avert catastrophic war, providing an impartial point of reference to which each side could respond without giving the appearance of weakness or surrender, and creating an supervision mechanism to ensure that the terms of settlement would be acceptable to the antagonists. In the end, courage and wisdom on the part of many individuals made it possible to defuse the crisis, but those who knew the inside details gave U Thant and the United Nations considerable credit. A highly unusual and joint official letter sent to him afterward, now

held in the archives, stated clearly: "On behalf of the Governments of the United States of America and the Soviet Union we desire to express to you our appreciation for your efforts in assisting our Governments to avert the serious threat to the peace which recently arose."

Such tense and dangerous crises always provide reminders to any international security system not only of the need to try to avert and, if that fails, to manage them, but also of the fact that it may be necessary at times to threaten or use force and statecraft to protect peace and security. This had been envisioned by the Charter itself. In working through changing world conditions and in making adjustments to new circumstances, the United Nations began to develop policies to do precisely this. Explicit provisions in the text for the possibility of collective action against aggressors or threats to the peace always provided some measure of deterrence. But if this failed, much more was needed. The Security Council thus invoked its authority in 1966 and used coercive diplomacy to impose the first-ever mandatory sanctions against the white minority regime of Rhodesia, and did so until power was transferred to a black majority and the country renamed Zimbabwe. Similarly, the United Nations imposed a series of political, economic, and military sanctions against the white minority government of South Africa for its racial policies and occupation of Namibia, including an arms embargo in 1977. These were lifted only when Namibia gained its independence and when South Africa repealed its racist apartheid laws and successfully held its first democratic election.

The United Nations also dealt with matters of force and statecraft by developing military options not foreseen in the original Charter. One of the most significant of these was the concept and the practice of armed international peacekeeping forces, or what was described as "using soldiers as the servants of peace rather than as the instruments of war." This creative innovation began when the General Assembly, in the absence of leadership from the Great Powers on the Security Council, seized the initiative and asked Hammarskjöld to set up an United Nations Emergency Force (UNEF) during the Suez Crisis of 1956 to keep the warring parties apart. It proved to be so successful that subsequent military forces were sent into troubled areas to separate enemies from each other, patrol buffer zones, supervise truce agreements, monitor cease-fire lines and the withdrawal of troops from disputed territories, guard election centers, protect civilians from violence, and safeguard humanitarian aid.

These blue-helmeted soldiers were authorized by the Security Council and operated in the collective name of the United Nations, being deployed in the Suez Canal and Sinai Peninsula, the Congo, West New Guinea, Yemen, Cyprus, the border between India and Pakistan, Dominican Republic, the Golan Heights, Lebanon, Afghanistan, Pakistan, Iran, and Iraq, among many other countries facing violence. By 1988, nearly 500,000 United Nations personnel contributed by fifty-eight different nations had been involved in a wide variety of peacekeeping operations. By the 1990s the United Nations became the second largest deployer of troops in the world after the United States, and the peacekeeping budget actually surpassed the regular operating budget of the organization itself. Viewing all this activity, often in nearly impossible circumstances, one feels compelled to ask where the world would have been during these years without the United Nations.

The most serious challenges of force and statecraft involved those international enforcement actions taken under Chapter VII of the Charter—that is, the actual use of armed forces to enforce the decisions of the Security Council when confronting acts of aggression. These cases entailed moving from limited peacekeeping to more extensive war making in the form of military "police action" in defense of states that had been attacked.

The first occurred when the Soviet-equipped armies of North Korea launched a surprise attack against South Korea in June 1950, beginning the Korean War and marking, in the words of one observer, "one of the great watersheds in the history of the organization." Since the Security Council was temporarily being boycotted by the Soviets at the time, it was able to avoid any veto of opposition and thereby invoke its power to employ as-yet-untested machinery for collective security and approve support for military intervention to defend the south. The General Assembly further passed its "Uniting for Peace Resolution," indicating widespread support for this United Nations-sponsored use of armed force to enforce violations of the peace. For the first time in history, armed force was used for collective security to carry out the decision of an international organization. Although nineteen nations contributed to the coalition, the majority of troops came from South Korea and the United States, under the command of American general Douglas MacArthur. In the end, the North Korean invaders were repulsed.

It was the Security Council, in what has been called one of the most important decisions in its history, that also authorized the use of force when Saddam Hussein of Iraq invaded Kuwait in 1990. President George H. W. Bush, who had previously served as a U.S. ambassador to the United Nations and therefore appreciated the importance of partnerships when confronting dangerous international crises, worked diligently with other leaders such as Mikhail Gorbachev of the Soviet Union to create agreement on mobilizing a coalition against Saddam. Efforts first focused on using coercive diplomacy (a strategy to be discussed in Chapter 10) to persuade him to yield to the demands of the international community. When this failed, the Security Council acted with unusual speed and decisiveness in authorizing the actual use of military force "to restore international peace and security to the area." A coalition of thirty-four nations, including Arab states, led by the United States, thus launched a massive land, air, and sea assault called Operation Desert Storm in January 1991. In less than seventy-two hours, they successfully routed the Iraqi forces and restored independence to Kuwait. As one contributor in *Foreign Affairs* wrote, "the concept of collective security as envisioned in the UN Charter worked" and "the United Nations reclaimed a major role in international relations."

In retrospect, much of the criticism leveled against the United Nations seems mean spirited and ill informed. Despite its problems, its successes in preventive diplomacy; peacemaking and peacekeeping; setting normative standards and putting moral and political pressure on states to observe them; promoting and protecting human rights; viewing peace and security as connected to justice and human rights; mediation in conflict resolution; crisis management; adaptability to an expanding and heterogeneous world; advancing international law; and the record of accomplishment made by its subsidiary bodies specializing in humanitarian assistance, development aid, women

and children, public health, relief, and refugees, are undeniable. In addition, its support for the principle of the inviolability of borders, under which borders cannot be changed unilaterally or by military means, was seen clearly in the collective use of armed force in both the Korean and Persian Gulf wars.

These wide-ranging achievements became even more impressive when seen in light of the sheer complexity of diplomatic challenges in the world, the claims of national sovereignty, the reality of a hierarchy in which some members are more equal than others, Great Power vetoes to protect themselves and their friends, the failure of members to honor their pledges under the Charter, and the critical central fact that the organization can never do any more than its sovereign member states allow it to do. They—and they alone—determine its budget, its assignments, its enforcement tasks, whether they will honor its resolutions, whether they will pay their assessed dues, whether they will participate in sanctions, and whether they will contribute soldiers and weapons when armed force becomes necessary. Nevertheless, despite these realities, there ran a current of carping and criticism from those with exaggerated expectations, governments that blamed the organization for problems in which they had themselves been impercipient before the event and unwilling to act after it, and adamant opponents who bashed the United Nations as an alien and dangerous presence and who sought to cripple it.

From his years as secretary-general, Hammarskjöld (a man once described by President Kennedy as "the greatest statesman of our century") tried to provide some perspective on all of this by employing nautical imagery:

> On the seas we sail, we have to face all the storms and stresses created by the ideological, economic, and social conditions of our world. Aboard this new *Santa Maria* we have to meet the impatience of those sailors who expect land on the horizon tomorrow, also the cynicism or sense of futility of those who would give up and leave us drifting impotently. On the shores we have all those who are against the whole expedition, who seem to take a special delight in blaming the storms on the ship instead of the weather.

Despite these kinds of problems, however, support for the United Nations as an indispensable organization in times of mounting international complexity remained strong throughout most of the world. Indeed, 1988 saw such a string of impressive successes that the often-critical *New York Times* declared it to be "The Year of the UN." In April, the Soviet Union agreed to withdraw its forces from Afghanistan after peace talks led by a United Nations mediator. In August, on the basis of a Security Council plan, Iran and Iraq agreed to a cease-fire in a bloody and wasting conflict that had lasted for ten years. In the same month, Secretary-General Javier Pérez de Cuéllar of Peru secured the agreement of Greece and Turkey to hold new talks on the problem of Cyprus, which had poisoned relations between the two NATO allies for more than twenty years. He also initiated talks to end the war between Morocco and the Algerian-backed Polisario guerrillas for control of the western Sahara. In September, United Nations peacekeeping forces received the Nobel Peace Prize for their significant—and sometimes vital—contributions to international peace and security. In December, United Nations forces began to monitor the withdrawal of Cuban forces from Angola. At the same time, the General Assembly served as the location for Yasser Arafat's declaration that his Palestine

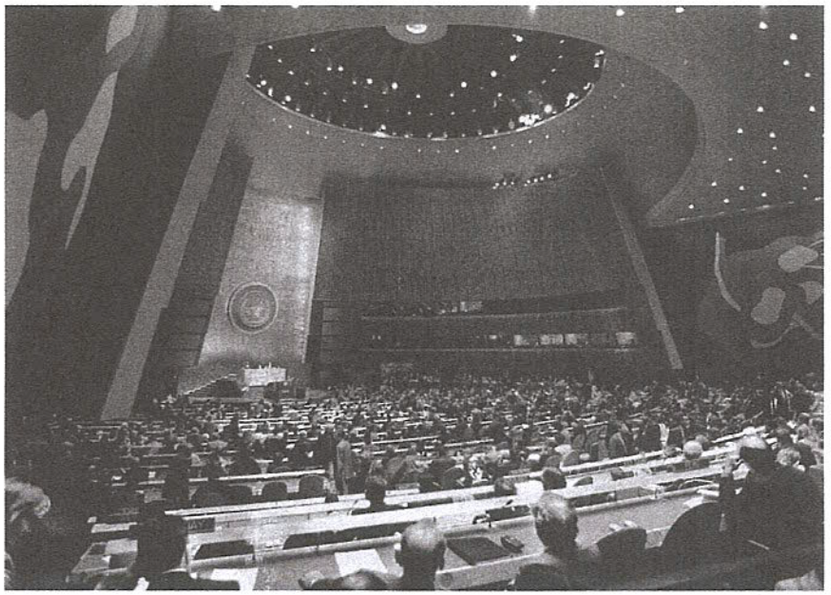
Liberation Organization would recognize the binding nature of pertinent United Nations resolutions and the right of the state of Israel to exist, thereby creating the necessary conditions for American Secretary of State George Shultz's decision to initiate efforts addressing the Palestine problem. Finally, and in sharp contrast to several decades of his country's determined exertions to emasculate the power of the organization and its secretary-general, Soviet leader Gorbachev made a breath-taking announcement before the General Assembly calling for a greatly enhanced role for the United Nations in global affairs.

There also was something more. Despite its restraints and imperfections, and the magnitude of the challenges and criticisms that confronted it, the United Nations managed to respond to pressing crises and to adapt to unforeseen challenges, thereby keeping its ambitious order-building experiment alive. It continued to hold out the vision created in the wake of a catastrophic war of a larger international community united by a shared desire for a security system with peace and justice rather than a world constantly divided by human frailties and the anarchy of parochial national interests. Toward this end, it also held out the hope of serving as a focal point for the evolution and implementation of widely accepted normative values.

Those who supported this experiment believed that sometimes they would succeed and sometimes they would fail; but that, through time, their efforts would matter. Perfection was not expected. As Hammarskjöld insightfully noted, "The United Nations reflects both aspiration and a falling short of aspiration. But the constant struggle to close the gap between aspiration and performance now, as always, makes the difference between civilization and chaos" Lest that observation seem too abstract, he made the point more directly when he said that the United Nations was created "not to bring mankind to Heaven, but to save it from Hell."

As a result of these achievements and a realization that this struggle might be worth the effort, the United Nations began to attract considerably more attention than it had at other times. In fact, a number of states appeared to have discovered new virtues in the organization they had often neglected and abused. This, in turn, led many thoughtful observers and participants to devote attention to how it might best respond to the needs of the future. "After forty-five uncertain, and sometime bleak, years, the prospects for international cooperation are brighter than at any time since the Second World War," concluded a study entitled *A World in Need of Leadership: Tomorrow's United Nations*. Others expressed similar enthusiasm for an increasingly dynamic and invigorated role for the United Nations. In a special issue called "Beyond the Year 2000: What to Expect in the New Millennium," *Time* predicted that in the future "cooperation with the UN will be the norm" and that "the world will have to utilize the powers of the UN" to solve the diplomatic challenges of our time.

Whether these predictions would be realized or not would depend—as always—on whether the Great Powers would let them happen. Historically, as we have seen, any viable order of international peace and security, including those of a balance of power, a concert of powers, or a broad-based strategy of collective security, has been dependent on a very high level of consensus on normative values and objectives among those with the greatest power. The United Nations was no different. A fundamental fact remained: the organization depended on the support that the major powers would give it and, importantly, whether they would accept any restraints upon themselves "in the common interest." Only the future would tell.



"Aspiration and Performance": Efforts to Find Peace and Security Through the United Nations

The years ahead would be dramatic and would entail major upheavals in the international system and the diplomatic revolution with profound implications for force and statecraft. These would involve the collapse of the Soviet Union, the emergence of the United States as the world's only superpower, new crises in Africa and Asia, the escalation of violence in the Middle East, civil wars, genocide in the former Yugoslavia and Rwanda, "failed" states and "rogue" regimes, the proliferation of weapons of mass destruction, the attacks of September 11, 2001, and the rise of global terrorism. Turmoil erupted when the George W. Bush administration completely ignored the Charter's clear prohibition on the use of force against the territorial integrity of another state by launching a war against Iraq in 2003. Further convulsions occurred when Vladimir Putin tore up his obligations under the Charter by attacking and then annexing Crimea in 2014. But these developments lay in the future and remained as yet unknown. Until then, as we shall see in the next chapter, the ability of the United Nations to function as its founders intended would be severely undermined, and at times completely paralyzed, by what happened in the grinding, debilitating, and terrifying struggle known as the Cold War.

SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER EXPLORATION

Insightful assessments can be found in Amy Sayward, *The United Nations in International History* (London, 2017); Mark Mazower, *Governing the World* (New York, 2013); and Paul Kennedy, *The Parliament of Man* (New York, 2006). For the history of plans for a postwar security system, see Stephen C. Schlesinger, *Act of Creation* (Boulder, CO, 2004); Townsend Hoopes and Douglas Brinkley,

FDR and the Creation of the U.N. (New Haven, 1997); Robert A. Divine, *Second Chance* (New York, 1967); Ruth Russell, *A History of the United Nations Charter* (Washington, DC, 1958); and United Nations Information Organization, *Documents of the United Nations Conference on International Organization, San Francisco, 1945* (London and New York, 1946–1955).

Further analyses can be found in Stanley Meisler, *The United Nations: A History* (New York, 2018 ed.); Thomas Weiss et al., *The United Nations and Changing World Politics* (New York, 2017 ed.); Paul Gordon Lauren, "The Diplomats and Diplomacy of the United Nations," in Gordon A. Craig and Francis Lowenheim (eds.), *The Diplomats, 1939–1979* (Princeton, 1994); Brian Urquhart, *A Life in Peace and War* (New York, 1987); John Stoessinger, *The Might of Nations* (New York, 1979); and the pioneering Inis Claude, Jr., *Swords Into Plowshares* (New York, 1971 ed.). On the relationship between security, peace, justice, and human rights, see Paul Gordon Lauren, *The Evolution of International Human Rights* (Philadelphia, 2011 ed.).

For specific treatment of force and statecraft in the United Nations, see J. Martin Rochester, *The New Warfare* (New York, 2016); Joachim Koops et al., *The Oxford Handbook of United National Peacekeeping Operations* (Oxford, 2015); Vaughan Lowe et al. (eds.), *The United Nations Security Council and War* (New York, 2010 ed.); David Bosco, *Five to Rule Them All* (New York, 2009); Paul Diehl, *International Peacekeeping* (Baltimore, 1995 ed.); and Michael Howard, "The Historical Development of the UN's Role in International Security," in Adam Roberts and Benedict Kingsbury (eds.), *United Nations, Divided World* (Oxford, 1993).

See also United Nations at www.un.org; the Security Council at www.un.org/security council; the UN High Commissioner for Human Rights at www.ohchr.org; peacekeeping operations at https://peacekeeping.un.org; the archival records available at https://search.archives.un.org; and the United Nations History Project at www.histecon.magd.cam.ac.uk/unhist.

CHAPTER 5

The Cold War

The Cold War became one of the longest and most costly international conflicts in history. It was fought first and foremost between the United States and the Soviet Union, along with their respective allies and the Chinese, who often intertwined messianic ideologies with global geopolitical ambitions. In this epic struggle they employed as many tools and methods as possible to gain advantage, including economic aid to win friends, propaganda to manipulate public opinion and create hatreds, psychological warfare, espionage, covert action and political assassinations, persecutions, military assistance, the construction of rival alliances, invasions and interventions, guerrilla and counterinsurgency warfare, proxy wars, and a massive and terrifying arms race with weapons capable of obliterating life as we know it. The Cold War was wider in scope than any of the world wars, for it was not only fought on every continent but, considering the space race, *over* each one as well. It also proved to be one of the costliest of all of the world's conflicts. The United States alone spent more than $13,000,000,000,000 on this struggle. As the authors of *A Hard and Bitter Peace: A Global History of the Cold War* describe its impact, "For decades the Cold War dominated international relations, profoundly influenced the global economy, and to some extent affected the life of almost everyone on the planet." The magnitude and totality of what has been called this "struggle for the soul of mankind" could not help but have profound consequences for the diplomatic revolution, domestic politics and institutions, cultural and social practices, foreign and national security policy, any attempts to create a viable international system, and, most certainly, force and statecraft.

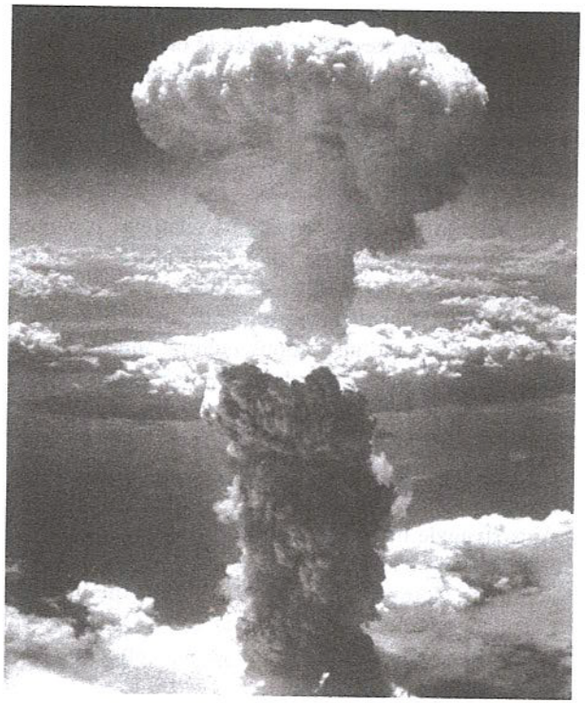
THE ORIGINS AND ESCALATION OF THE COLD WAR

In one sense, this struggle began with the Bolshevik Revolution in 1917 when Lenin announced that there always would be unremitting hostility between the capitalist West and the Communist Soviet Union. But the immediate origins of what came to be called the Cold War emerged at the end of the Second World War, once military victory had eliminated the threat of a common enemy. Any hopes

that the coalition that had cooperated to win the war would continue to cooperate to win the peace were dashed. Total war brought neither total peace nor total security. Problems surfaced immediately. As soon as he arrived at the San Francisco Conference to establish the United Nations, Soviet foreign minister V. M. Molotov threw down the gauntlet by speaking of the "many irreconcilable enemies in the camp of the most aggressive imperialists." President Harry Truman reciprocated this hostility by telling his advisors that "if the Russians did not wish to join us they could go to hell."

The United States, Britain, and France fiercely opposed Stalin's brutal use of the Soviet Red Army in Eastern Europe, particularly in Poland, and vehemently protested his refusal to coordinate policies in the postwar occupation zones of Germany. The Soviets, for their part, furiously lashed out when the British and the French moved back into control of their colonial possessions and when the United States announced that it would brook no opposition to its sole occupation of defeated Japan. They also grew intensely suspicious about the American monopoly of a weapon that would become one of the defining characteristics of the Cold War, with a most profound impact on subsequent force and statecraft: the atomic bomb.

Weapons in the past had always been characterized by their limited capacity to destroy. The existing state of technology imposed severe limits on their lethality, and large masses of people could never be killed at an instant. It is for this reason that Clausewitz could write with confidence about the historical experience of



"The Fate of Nemesis": The Atomic Age Begins

war genuinely being a continuation of policy by other means. Yet, this feature of all previous weapons changed in an instant with America's successful 1945 test in the desert at Alamogordo, New Mexico. As he personally witnessed the first-ever atomic explosion, General Thomas Farrell was nearly overwhelmed when he realized what a critical threshold had just been crossed. As he wrote in his official report:

> The effects could well be called unprecedented, magnificent, beautiful, stupendous, and terrifying. No man-made phenomenon of such tremendous power had ever occurred before. . . . Thirty seconds after the explosion came first, the air blast pressing hard against people and things, to be followed almost immediately by the strong, sustained, awesome roar which warned of doomsday and made us feel that we puny things were blasphemous to dare tamper with the forces heretofore reserved to The Almighty.

Serious escalation and complications followed. While visiting Fulton, Missouri, in 1946, Winston Churchill delivered his famous "Iron Curtain" speech, accusing the Soviets of ruthlessly eliminating their political opponents and using their military might to impose Moscow-controlled Communist regimes across Eastern Europe. He warned that there appeared to be no limits to their expansive and proselytizing tendencies, and declared: "I am convinced that there is nothing they admire so much as strength, and there is nothing for which they have less respect than weakness." Stalin angrily shot back in response that this was nothing less than a declaration of war against the Soviet Union.

Confrontations now appeared in rapid succession. One exploded in Iran as the British and Americans struggled with the Soviets over access to vital Middle East oil concessions and Stalin supported an ill-fated revolt in Azerbaijan. Another erupted in Turkey as the former allies contested who would control the strategic Bosporus and Dardanelles straits guarding naval access between the Mediterranean and the Black Sea. Severe differences burst out over how to treat occupied Germany. Yet another exploded in Greece when the British-supported government found itself teetering on the verge of collapse in a civil war against Communist insurgents.

The tension increased exponentially when United States enunciated the Truman Doctrine in 1947. The president argued that the time had come to abandon limited objectives of the past by dramatically redefining America's role in the world. He said that in the emerging global ideological struggle America would provide leadership in giving wide-ranging political, economic, and military support to all countries willing to resist Communism. "At the present moment in world history," Truman insisted, "nearly every nation must choose between alternative ways of life"—either democracy characterized by free institutions or totalitarianism based on terror and political oppression. The Soviets responded to this speech by describing it as "venomous slander," "aggressive," "hostile and bellicose," and specifically designed "to interfere in the affairs of other countries on the side of reaction and counter-revolution."

Further escalation occurred in 1948 when the United States instituted the Marshall Plan. Named after the secretary of state, General George C. Marshall, this innovative program sought to use financial resources as instruments of "economic

diplomacy" designed to rebuild war-torn Western Europe and develop partnerships while preventing the spread of Communism. At the same time, the Soviets dismantled the democratic government of Czechoslovakia and installed a puppet government of their own. They then dramatically cut off all Western access into West Berlin and imposed the Berlin Blockade, bringing the two major powers into an intensely dangerous face-to-face confrontation.

This vicious cycle of action and reaction continued with other events and crises in the relations between the West and the Soviet Union. Each side saw only virtue in its own motives and total malice in a devil image of its adversaries. The more sympathetic images that Soviet and Western leaders had held of each other during the Second World War were now completely transformed and darkened as each side perceived the other as completely hostile and hell-bent on destruction. This is not to say that the Cold War was caused merely by mutual distrust and misperception—its origins lie deeper than that, as already indicated, in the real and important conflicts of interests and ideologies that existed between the two sides. But there is no doubt that they were seriously exacerbated by the psychological dynamics of demonization and conflict escalation. False perception and psychological phenomena of this kind are, unfortunately, familiar in international relations, as they are in everyday life. Supreme Court Justice Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr. once remarked that in any argument between two persons, six persons are involved: the two as they actually are, the two as they see themselves, and the two as they see each other. No wonder, he exclaimed, that the two talk past each other and become angry! In international affairs, the same sort of psychological multiplication process is apt to take place, with much the same results.

When leaders deliberately seek to manipulate negative images of their adversaries in order to generate—and then exploit—ideological fervor, fear, suspicion, and hatred, this problem becomes even worse. The Cold War greatly accelerated that feature of the diplomatic revolution whereby the domestic pressures of mass politics and public opinion came to exert enormous influence on international relations. Both sides escalated their programs of information and propaganda for "public diplomacy" and its new variant called "cultural diplomacy," employing "cultural weapons" to win hearts and minds at home and abroad.

Some efforts were even more calculating. Secretary of State Dean Acheson, for example, freely admitted in his memoirs that he consciously exaggerated the threat of Russia in order to create a climate of fear that, in turn, could be mobilized to support Truman's policies. Others of both political parties followed suit, using inflammatory rhetoric, hysteria, and "Red-baiting" as useful political expedients. Senator Joseph McCarthy became so successful, in fact, that the term "McCarthyism" was coined to describe these shameful and debilitating activities. He and his followers gained sufficient political power to actually purge the professional diplomats known as the "China Hands" from the Department of State by baselessly accusing them of being a disloyal "nest of traitors," "sympathizers," "fellow-travelers," or "card-carrying" members of the Communist Party. The price for doing so, of course, was a further diminution of the professionals and the elimination of America's expert eyes and ears on Asia for many years to come.

Communists, for their own part, similarly discovered that generating fear of an enemy can be a very useful tool. Soviet leaders thus began their "Hate America"

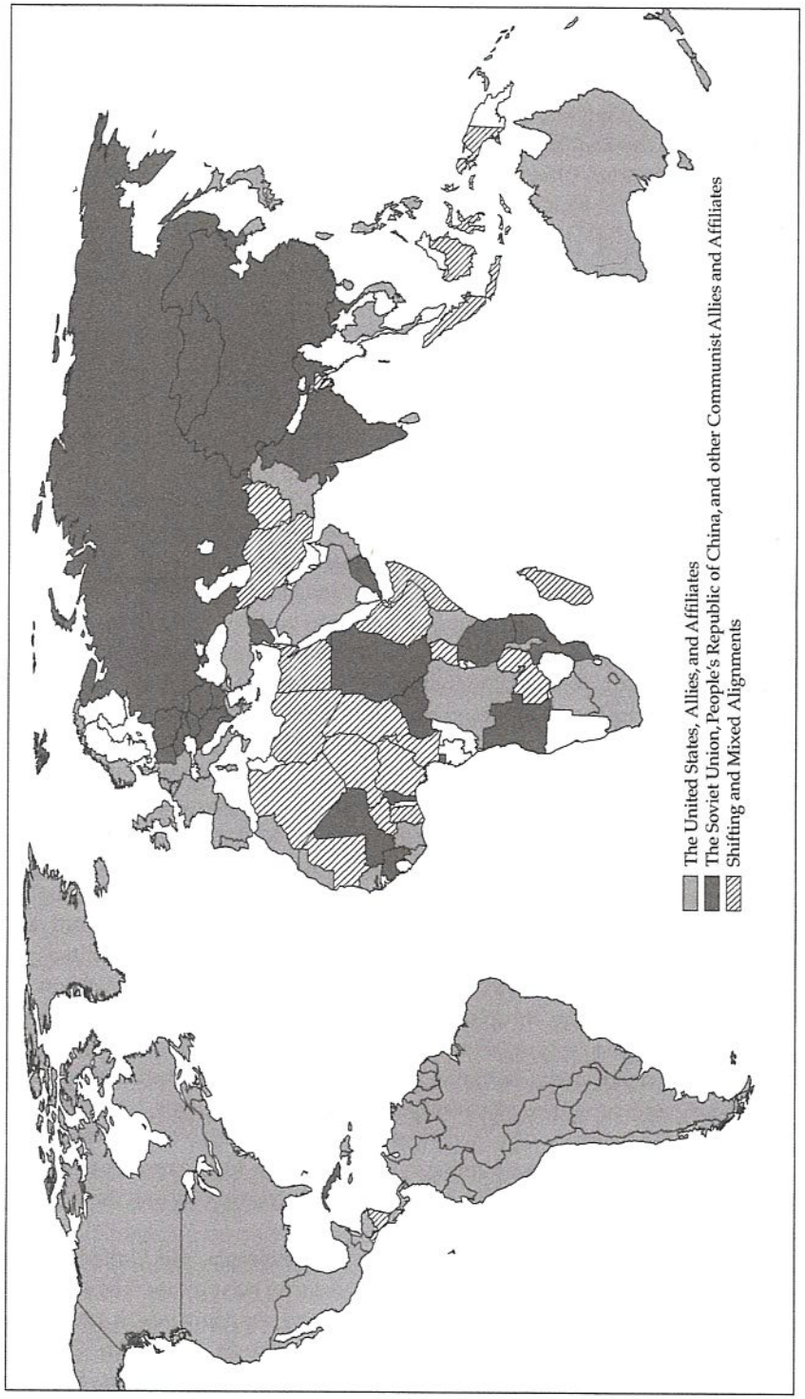
campaign, depicting the United States as leading the "monopoly bourgeoisie of capitalism," "fascist sympathizers," and "reactionary elements of world imperialism" bent on subversion, military adventurism, aggression, and global domination. When Mao Zedong and his Communist Party came to power in Beijing in 1949 and created the People's Republic of China as a result of their victory over the American-supported Chiang Kai-shek, they wasted no time in portraying the United States as a

> paradise of gangsters, swindlers, rascals, special agents, fascist germs, speculators, debauchers and all the dregs of society. This is the world's manufactory and source of all such crimes as reaction, darkness, cruelty, decadence, corruption, debauchery, oppression . . . Everyone who does not want the people of his beloved fatherland contaminated by these criminal phenomena is charged with the responsibility of arising to condemn her, curse her, hate her, and despise her.

In this contest of words, ideology, images, and symbols, it is important to understand that the Cold War coincided exactly with the midpoint of the twentieth century's revolution in communications technology. This happened just as radio, press, and film media were maturing and television was emerging. These tools—represented so well by the Voice of America in its rivalry with Radio Moscow—when placed in the hands of those increasingly trained in the scientific approach to psychological manipulation, such as public relations experts, advertising specialists, and image consultants, provided governments with unprecedented capacities to target public opinion, to mold it to their liking, and to use psychological warfare as a means of breaking the will of the enemy. Because they could shape the way that ordinary people viewed and reacted to their perceived friends and adversaries in the world, they became powerful weapons in a global battle for hearts and minds. Indeed, according to historian Kenneth Osgood, this combination of new media technologies and communication techniques explains why the Cold War became so ideological, so pervasive, and so all-encompassing. As he writes in *Total Cold War: Eisenhower's Secret Propaganda Battle at Home and Abroad*, "In this context, propaganda and public relations emerged as integral components of statecraft, altering the ways foreign policies were formulated, implemented, and presented . . . The Cold War reversed Clausewitz's famous dictum that war was an extension of politics: diplomacy became an extension of warfare, and propaganda became a critical weapon in this new type of international combat."

When these deliberately manipulated and ideologically driven perceptions and emotions were combined with seriously conflicting national interests, the Cold War escalated to terrifying proportions. In a few years, both the United States and the Soviet Union gained such strength that they came to be known not just as great powers, but as superpowers. Each moved quickly to organize and then dominate its respective alliance systems.

Under the policy known as Containment, for example, the United States sought to stop the spread of Communism with security guarantees. These began with the creation of the Rio Treaty with Latin American countries in 1947. The North Atlantic Treaty Organization (NATO) followed in 1949 with Canada and Western Europeans, adding Greece and Turkey shortly thereafter. Further military alliances in Asia came after the outbreak of the Korean War with the



Global Divisions of the Cold War: Formal Alliances and Informal Alignments

Philippines, the recent former enemy of Japan, South Korea, and the Republic of China on Taiwan. ANZUS with Australia and New Zealand followed in the Pacific, as did the Southeast Asian Treaty Organization (SEATO), and the Central Treaty Organization (CENTO) in the Middle East. Then, in a particularly significant and controversial move, the United States strongly pushed to have West Germany, which had been an archenemy defeated only ten years before, added to NATO in 1955. The Soviets condemned this development as an "imperialistic program of oppression and aggression" and a "revival of German militarism," accusing the Americans of stopping at nothing in order to secure "world supremacy." They immediately responded by creating the Warsaw Treaty Organization with their puppet states in Eastern Europe, claiming that it was "a purely defensive organization directed towards safeguarding the peace and security of the peoples of Europe and the rest of the world."

Whether an alliance is offensive or defensive, however, is often in the eyes of the beholder. Deterrence to enhance security and prevent a war by one side easily may be perceived as a prelude to aggression, and therefore insecurity, by the other. Indeed, this is a classic case of "the security dilemma" in which unpreparedness can invite attack, but preparedness can breed apprehension, fear, and a counter-response. Whatever the intentions of the Americans and the Soviets at the time, and despite the talk about "peaceful coexistence," the fact remains that their policies during the Cold War divided the world. This could be seen not only in the building of bipolar alliance systems, but in the efforts to arrange other alignments and create divided rivals, as evident by the two Germanies, two Koreas, two Vietnams, and two Chinas.

Each superpower sought to keep its hegemonic alliances under tight control and to expand its number of allies and influence wherever possible. In any number of cases, this led to foreign interventions and the use of armed force itself. Using the title of "Cold War" cannot be allowed to obscure the critical fact that thousands of people died in devastating proxy "hot" wars waged by the Americans and the Soviets with money, soldiers, and weapons in Africa, Asia, the Middle East, Central America and the Caribbean, and Southeast Asia. Both viewed any loss of an ally, a client, or an opportunity with great apprehension for fear of its effects on the rest of their alliances and thus the perceived credibility of their military threat.

These threats, like those of all military alliances in history, relied heavily on weapons technology. But now there was something new, for weapons came to be distinguished as either "conventional" or "nuclear." The human capacity to destroy had never known such possibilities, and this suddenly caused serious practical and ethical problems for those charged with policy involving force and statecraft. In a thought-provoking book entitled *Nuclear Weapons and Foreign Policy*, scholar Henry Kissinger observed:

> In Greek mythology, Nemesis, the goddess of fate, sometimes punished man by fulfilling his wishes too completely. It has remained for the nuclear age to experience the full irony of this penalty. Throughout history, humanity has suffered from a shortage of power and has concentrated all its efforts on developing new sources and special applications of it. It would have seemed unbelievable even fifty years ago that there could ever be an excess of power . . . Yet this is precisely the challenge of the nuclear age. Ever since the end of the Second World War

> brought us not the peace we sought so earnestly, but an uneasy armistice, we have responded by what can best be described as a flight into technology: by devising ever more fearful weapons [of mass destruction].

In this new and terrifying setting, the antagonists plunged headlong into the most serious, expensive, and potentially deadly arms race in human history. The Soviet Union broke the monopoly of the United States by exploding its first atomic weapon in 1949. This suddenly raised the frightening prospect of nuclear retaliation. In response, Truman's National Security Council issued a strategic policy statement known as NSC-68, later described as "one of the key historical documents of the Cold War." It predicted a future of indefinite rivalry and Communist aggression on a global scale and saw the contest ahead as primarily military in nature. It therefore called for a tripling of America's defense budget, a massive increase in conventional weapons, and the building of a more powerful nuclear arsenal. Even greater destruction became possible when the United States successfully exploded the first fusion hydrogen, or thermonuclear, bomb in 1952. (To provide a comparison, the fission atomic bomb dropped on Hiroshima released an explosive energy equivalent to approximately 15,000 tons of TNT, whereas this bomb produced a yield of 10,500,000 tons of TNT.) The Soviets responded in kind three years later. The measurable destructive power held by the superpowers thus suddenly went from thousands of tons of TNT, or kilotons, to millions of tons of TNT, or megatons.

The arms race was on, and both sides rushed to build not only their nuclear arsenals but ever more sophisticated means of delivering these weapons to their targeted adversaries. Recently declassified documents from the National Archives and Records Administration reveal that in 1956 the U.S. Strategic Air Command explicitly planned for the "systematic destruction" of Moscow, Leningrad, East Berlin, and Beijing should nuclear war break out. When the Soviet Union successfully launched the Sputnik satellite capable of orbiting the earth in 1957, the race entered space. Both nations then developed intercontinental ballistic missiles (ICBMs). These weapons made it possible to annihilate an enemy from continents away and led to a doctrine known as "Massive Retaliation." It quickly became clear, however, that such use of these weapons would bring not only devastation on an opponent but retaliatory mass slaughter on one's self as well. For this reason, strategists began to speak of "Mutual Assured Destruction." Critics used the first letter of each word in this strategy to describe its impact on the world: MAD.

This capacity to inflict massive, annihilating, nuclear devastation could not help but raise the issue of excess, or far too much, in terms of both the end result and the process itself. The superpowers could not possibly pursue their arms race unless they committed staggering human and material resources to the effort. To do so, they increasingly devoted the funding and bureaucratic power of their governments, the minds of their scientists, the skills and energies of their labor forces, and the capacities of their industries to their military forces. This "policy of strength" achieved some of its objectives, but at the same time began to present serious threats. Among those who voiced their concerns was none other than President Dwight Eisenhower. In his last day of office he delivered one of his most important and thoughtful speeches. Here he acknowledged military strength as a vital instrument in force and statement. But then he drew attention to the dangers

of combining "an immense military establishment and a large arms industry [that] is new in the American experience." He ominously warned:

> [W]e must not fail to comprehend its grave implications. Our toil, resources, and livelihood are all involved; so is the very structure of our society. In the councils of government, we must guard against the acquisition of unwarranted influence, whether sought or unsought, by the military-industrial complex. The potential for the disastrous rise of misplaced power exists and will persist.

Such deep concerns about these developments led many to look to the United Nations for assistance. But here, too, they found the pervasive influence of the politics of the Cold War. Despite all the hopes held about the "common interest" and the promises for "collective measures," as we saw in the previous chapter, each superpower attempted to turn the organization into an instrument to advance its own narrowly defined interests. More often than not, they used open debates as a forum for ideological polemics rather than as an opportunity to resolve disputes or address serious diplomatic challenges. Instead of honoring their pledge "to unite our strength to maintain international peace and security," they refused to empower the joint Military Staff Committee to implement its mandate as established by the Charter or to cooperate in collective measures. They also showed little hesitation about casting vetoes to prevent the Security Council from taking any action that might harm themselves or their clients.

Not surprisingly, these escalating tensions also intensified the use of intelligence activities. Statecraft throughout time always—and understandably—has attempted to obtain valuable foreknowledge that might help to avoid surprise attacks or threats. Governments historically have used a variety of means, including spies, to collect and analyze information and to protect their own intelligence sources and methods. During the Cold War, however, these traditional practices were augmented by the use of covert action, or clandestine operations, designed specifically to alter the course of events in another country. These included secret financial payments, weapons deliveries, subversion, paramilitary operations, destabilization and overthrow of unfriendly governments, and political assassination by the superpowers to advance their interests. The Soviets developed their massive apparatus of the Committee for State Security (KGB) to coordinate these efforts, drawing on a long national experience with the czar's secret police. The United States, which up to this point in its history always had resisted establishing a permanent intelligence organization, now enacted the National Security Act of 1947, creating the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA). The tenor of the time is well reflected in a top-secret government memorandum recommending that American intelligence operations jettison accepted normative standards and ethical restraints and instead become

> more effective, more unique, and if necessary, more ruthless than that employed by the enemy. No one should be permitted to stand in the way of the prompt, efficient, and secure accomplishment of this mission . . . It is now clear that we are facing an implacable enemy whose avowed objective is world domination by whatever means and whatever cost. There are no rules in such a game. Hitherto acceptable norms of human conduct do not apply. If the U.S. is to survive, long-standing American concepts of "fair play" must be reconsidered . . . We must learn to subvert, sabotage, and destroy our enemies by more clever, more sophisticated, and more effective methods than those used against us.

SEEKING RESTRAINTS THROUGH DETERRENCE, DIPLOMACY, AND *DÉTENTE*

Such unremitting hostility, unrestrained competition, enormous costs, and recommendations to become "more ruthless" and observe "no rules" created diplomatic challenges of the first magnitude. Without some form of restraint, as we shall explore in Chapter 12, international competition becomes utterly unbridled and leads to anarchy. At this stage in the Cold War, the superpowers appeared to be careening toward destruction. Every major crisis, whether in Berlin during 1948, 1958–1959, and 1961, in Cuba during 1962, or in any other location around the world, always was coupled with the fear that *any* shooting war between American and Soviet forces, no matter at how modest a level initially, could escalate completely out of control. It therefore eventually became evident to the United States and the Soviet Union that, despite their intense rivalry, they in fact shared one essential goal in common: the prevention of a third world war and what would very likely bring about their mutual annihilation.

Both superpowers thus had to confront the serious dilemma of determining how they would compete in the Cold War while at the same time avoiding a catastrophic thermonuclear war. To address this challenge, they began to appreciate the value of developing a set of self-imposed restraints. These included accepting certain spheres of influence, avoiding direct military confrontations with each other, making a sharp distinction between conventional and nuclear weapons, and recognizing that not all things were possible. If a Communist success in a certain area might critically weaken them or their allies, for example, American policymakers demonstrated a willingness to do what they could to prevent that particular outcome, even though to do so meant accepting some danger of war, as in Korea. If, however, a Soviet success would not seriously undermine the Western alliance, then they determined not to overreact in ways that would risk armed confrontation between themselves. This explains why Eisenhower, despite his talk about the "roll back" of Communism and the "liberation" of Eastern Europe, greatly feared the possibility of provoking the Soviets into a war and thus refused to intervene when the Hungarians called for help during their revolution in 1956.

In some ways, this use of balance-of-power criteria in making critical foreign policy decisions during the Cold War was similar to its employment by the Great Powers in the classical European system. But it is important to recognize that a "balance of terror" is not the same as a multipolar, system-wide balance of power, especially when the major actors lacked a consensus on basic values. The major difference, however, was the fear not of limited conventional war, as in the past, but of a thermonuclear holocaust. The sheer destructiveness of weapons of mass destruction provided a powerful deterrent by discouraging both the superpowers from resorting to war as a way of preventing an undesired change in the existing balance of power if to do so would result in a direct military clash between them.

The strategy of threatening force with deterrence, which we will explore in detail in Chapter 9, at times played an invaluable role in restraining both the superpowers in their rivalry. But this occurred only in the most dangerous of circumstances and certainly did not cover all the other aspects of Cold War competition or of American-Soviet relations. Critics complained that the strategy of

Containment, with its constant repetition of "a policy of strength," was static and provided no place for diplomatic initiative. They argued that it often failed to utilize the techniques, institutions, and practices of diplomacy as developed over centuries to help resolve conflict and to facilitate relations among states.

Fearing the consequences of such neglect, as well as the lost opportunities for negotiation that might result, some policymakers sought to learn lessons from history about diplomacy and find methods for seeking restraint, regulating rivalry, and promoting some level of cooperation. These included experimentation with crisis prevention, crisis management, and accommodation, or, as we shall see in Chapter 8, negotiation to arrive at agreements to settle or moderate certain conflicts. On some occasions, agreements were reached on arms control, as with the decision in 1958 to temporarily suspend nuclear testing. These negotiations sometimes were conducted within the context of the United Nations when it suited the interests of the superpowers. But most of the time they were not, for neither the Americans nor the Soviets were prepared to consistently honor their obligations under the Charter. Efforts to find restraints thus were episodic and inconsistent, and often remained less than effective as long as the two superpowers persisted in placing a higher priority on winning the Cold War.

The dangers of rejecting diplomacy became painfully evident. Major confrontations occurred over the Taiwan Straits and over Berlin in 1958. Two years later, the Soviet Union announced that it had shot down an American U-2 spy plane deep inside its own territory, and armed struggle broke out in the Congo and in Laos. After his earlier bombastic threat to the West that "we will bury you," Soviet leader Nikita Khrushchev in the single year of 1961 declared that the Soviet Union would actively support "wars of national liberation" in the developing world; forced another crisis over Berlin and built a hideous wall that carved the city in two; and issued menacing threats of what came to be called "atomic blackmail." One particularly dramatic example of this was evidenced by the detonation of what he called the "*Tsar Bomba*," or "King of Bombs," a thermonuclear weapon with a staggering yield of over 50,000,000 tons of TNT, causing the largest man-made explosion in history and demonstrating just how terrifying Soviet capabilities had become.

The fear of nuclear war became so intense that thousands of Americans began building fallout shelters in their backyards. Also in 1961, the United States launched the ill-fated Bay of Pigs invasion of Cuba in an attempt to overthrow its Communist leader, Fidel Castro, and President John F. Kennedy decided to increase production of nuclear weapons and the missiles to deliver them, double the number of ships in the navy, enlarge the army, build up the number of tactical air squadrons, create special counterinsurgency forces to fight Communist guerrillas, and expand covert actions to provide what he described as a "flexible response" to as many contingencies as possible. It is thus not surprising that even the seasoned and normally calm U.S. ambassador in Moscow, Llewellyn Thompson, worried aloud: "All of us are going to be dead!"

The potential for catastrophe was revealed with vivid and frightening clarity by the most acute confrontation of the entire Cold War: the Cuban Missile Crisis. In the late summer and early autumn of 1962, and despite his promises to the contrary, Khrushchev secretly deployed a number of medium- and intermediate-range ballistic missiles to Cuba, capable of obliterating most cities in the United States.

When this was discovered by U-2 reconnaissance aircraft, it brought the superpowers—and the world with them—to the very brink of thermonuclear war. Rejecting the recommendation from his military advisors to use force immediately by launching an air strike against the missile sites, but nevertheless threatening to do so if necessary, Kennedy undertook a naval blockade of Cuba instead. American and Soviet leaders placed their armed forces on full alert, an invasion force was assembled for combat in Cuba, and Strategic Air Command planes were sent airborne with nuclear weapons and with prearranged targets.

Kennedy then announced ominously that he would "regard any nuclear missile launched from Cuba against any nation in the Western Hemisphere as an attack by the Soviet Union on the United States, requiring a full retaliatory response upon the Soviet Union." This brought the antagonists, in the words of one leading participant, "eyeball to eyeball." The world held its breath. In the end, as we shall analyze in more detail in Chapters 10 and 11, the combination of crisis management by both Washington and Moscow, successful diplomacy at the United Nations, and Kennedy's use of the strategy of coercive diplomacy proved effective. The crisis ceased with a quid pro quo in which Khrushchev agreed to remove the missiles in return for a pledge by Kennedy not to invade Cuba in the future, as well as a secret agreement to remove U.S. Jupiter missiles from Turkey on the border of the Soviet Union.

Once it became more fully understood just how terrifyingly close the world had come to a nuclear holocaust, the impact of the Cuban Missile Crisis became even more profound. Indeed, this crisis marked one of the major turning points of recent history. It had a dramatic, catalytic effect by facilitating a transition from the era of the acute Cold War to a more serious search for a less dangerous system of peace and security. In doing so, it thereby demonstrated that fear during an international crisis sometimes can have positive results by leading policymakers to question and to revise some of the old beliefs and policies that led to the confrontation in the first place, perhaps making previous antagonists more willing to reach out in new directions.

The Cuban Missile Crisis produced precisely this kind of effect by moving others to begin challenging the premises and the structure of the Cold War itself. Allies of the antagonists, for example, began to explore ways that they might disengage from dangerous military blocs controlled by their respective superpowers whose misjudgments and arrogance could pull them into unwanted wars. It also stimulated those new states emerging with decolonization throughout Asia, Africa, and the Middle East with nationalism on their minds, and the bitter taste of racial discrimination still in their mouths, to avoid being drawn too closely into the wakes of either the Americans or the Soviets by seeking an option that they called Third World "nonalignment."

In the same way, the terrifying horror of the missile crisis provided a form of shock therapy for the superpowers. It brought to a sobering head fears on both sides and strengthened their determination to seek better alternatives. "Evil has brought some good," wrote Khrushchev to Kennedy. "The good is that now people have felt more tangibly the breathing of the burning flames of thermonuclear war and have a more clear realization of the threat looming over them . . . Everything in our relations capable of generating a new crisis should be erased now."

The two leaders thus came to recognize the necessity for wise statecraft and creative diplomacy to attain some measure of partnership to restrain their escalating path of confrontation and possible disaster. Each side came to realize the importance of not pushing the other too far: that is, to the point where it faced the stark choice of either escalating a crisis and risk losing control, or backing down and risk humiliation. They quickly instituted the Hot-Line Agreement, establishing a cable link between Washington, D.C. and Moscow in order to provide direct, secure, and rapid communication. They also imposed restraints on themselves by successfully negotiating the Limited Test Ban Treaty prohibiting atmospheric nuclear tests and marking the first major arms control agreement of the Cold War. At the same time, many Americans came to transform their image of the Soviet Union from that of a total enemy to a *limited adversary* and began to see the virtues of diplomatic negotiation.

Kennedy himself conveyed this change during a moving speech at American University in which he spoke of peace as "the most important topic on earth" and "as the necessary rational end of rational men," calling upon his fellow citizens to reexamine their dogmatic views on the Cold War if they wanted to save humanity from annihilation. In sharp contrast with previous presidential statements (and in some that would follow), he said about the Soviet Union that "no government or social system is so evil that its people must be considered as lacking in virtue." He called for a renewal of traditional diplomacy and warned his listeners not to take "a distorted and desperate view of the other side, not to see conflict as inevitable," and not to regard "accommodation as impossible and communication as nothing more than an exchange of threats."

Heartening as this sounded, the fact remains that people learn different lessons from history and from their own experiences, leaders change, entrenched habits and patterns of thought are hard to break, and not everyone is capable of escaping their fears or ideological shibboleths, even when it is in their interest to do so. The assassination of John Kennedy in 1963 and the removal of Khrushchev from office the next year robbed the world of the two leaders who had been most personally transformed by the dangers of confrontation. After the initial terror of the Cuban Missile Crisis had passed, some American policymakers and members of the public alike began to believe that the "success" in Cuba had been the result not of careful diplomacy, but rather of acting tough and threatening to use armed force. Moreover, they found themselves continuing to be dominated by simplistic thinking and the exaggerated hubris of believing that their military might and technological superiority could solve all challenges.

It was the persistent and indiscriminate assumption that all Communist regimes were identical, linked, and deadly, for example, that fostered the so-called domino theory (arguing that if one country fell to Communism, others automatically would do the same) and that drew the United States into the long agony of the Vietnam War. This involvement, made against military advice and without any careful assessment of ends and means or of costs and possible outcomes, escalated dramatically under President Lyndon Johnson, who ordered a bombing campaign known as Operation Thunder against North Vietnam in 1965. The United States ultimately would send more than half a million troops into the conflict. At the same time, Khrushchev's successor, Leonid Brezhnev, committed the Soviet

Union to supporting America's adversaries in Vietnam, escalated the arms race by more than tripling the number of strategic Soviet ICBMs, invaded Czechoslovakia in 1968, and announced with the Brezhnev Doctrine that he would intervene militarily in other countries as well if Soviet and/or Communist interests were threatened further.

Trouble brewed in Asia as well. The People's Republic of China under Mao Zedong persecuted domestic opponents and then descended into the chaos of the Cultural Revolution, which consumed perhaps a half-million Chinese lives. Its ideological fervor also permeated foreign affairs, as Beijing instructed its representatives to be "proletarian diplomatic fighters" and charged them to "wage a firm, blow-for-blow struggle against the imperialists." The government accused the Soviets of losing their revolutionary zeal and becoming "soft" on capitalism, stationed troops on their border with the Soviet Union, and escalated the conflict known as the Sino-Soviet split that greatly increased tension between the world's two largest Communist powers. China also directed its wrath against Americans, accusing them of practicing imperialism and racism, supporting its hated rival regime in Taiwan, killing its soldiers during the Korean War and its allies in Vietnam, arming its neighbors like Japan and the Philippines, excluding it from assuming its rightful membership in the United Nations, and denying it diplomatic recognition.

The renewed international dangers, in addition to the severe domestic turmoil and economic costs resulting from these problems and others involving various allies and client states, forced leaders to look once again at the merits of diplomacy. To describe their efforts, they increasingly came to use the French word *détente*, taken from traditional diplomacy and meaning a relaxation of tension between adversaries by means of a conscious and more rational policy of engagement, cooperation, and accommodation. Each country, for its own reasons, had strong self-interests in creating some restraints for the Cold War competition threatening to engulf them. By this time, the U.S.-Soviet strategic balance had reached what was called "essential equivalence," or rough parity. Both sides came to understand that they could never attack the other without suffering catastrophic retaliation themselves.

The Americans and the Soviets thus began by negotiating an arms control agreement known as the Nuclear Nonproliferation Treaty (NPT) in 1968. The following year, West German chancellor Willy Brandt initiated a policy he called *Ostpolitik*, or Eastern Policy, designed to improve relations with the governments of the Soviet bloc in Eastern Europe, including Communist East Germany, and to reach an agreement on the divided city of Berlin. The Chinese had their own fears as well, not the least of which were Soviets threats and military confrontation on the Sino-Soviet border, and therefore began to consider better relations with the United States as a means of providing a counterweight to the Soviet Union. For their part, the Soviets feared the deployment of new U.S. multiple warhead missiles (MIRVs) aimed at them, continued unrest among their satellite states, and what they regarded as the unpredictable Chinese, and thus sought to find ways of relaxing a number of Cold War tensions.

These interests coincided with those of the United States trying desperately to extricate itself from the Vietnam War, which was consuming lives, revealing the

limitations of military power, creating tensions with allies, wreaking havoc with other diplomatic efforts, escalating budget deficits in order to finance the war, and (especially after the American invasion of Cambodia in 1970) intensifying public opposition to such an extent that it divided the country more than at any time since the Civil War. The United States simultaneously found itself engaged in antagonism with the Chinese Communists and confrontation with the Soviets, who were pursuing an unrestrained arms race with strategic weapons and developing an antiballistic missile (ABM) system to defend itself against the U.S. arsenal. These problems help to explain why President Richard Nixon, despite his reputation as a militant anti-Communist and ardent Cold Warrior of the past, declared in his inaugural presidential address that America was prepared to enter a new "era of negotiation" with its major adversaries. But he and his new national security advisor, Henry Kissinger, wanted *détente* to mean not only a relaxation of tension between antagonists but the eventual creation of a strategic balance of power. Their own political experience and understanding of history convinced them that all nations, including their own, based their policies on what they perceived as their national interests and that this factor should be used to create some arrangement of accommodation to maintain peace and security.

To begin this process of creating restraints by using mutual interests, Nixon and Kissinger began negotiating constructive relationships with their major rivals, trying to minimize ideological differences, and using a combination of threats as "sticks" and inducements as "carrots" in a triangular configuration of power for leverage. They began with the People's Republic of China, for as Nixon had written in an article in *Foreign Affairs*, "any American policy must come urgently to grips with the reality of China. There is no place on this small planet for a billion of its potentially most able people to live in angry isolation." After lengthy negotiations, the Chinese agreed to reduce their level of support for America's adversaries in the Vietnam War and to settle the issue of Taiwan by peaceful means, while the United States promised to gradually reduce its troops in Asia and to reverse its long-standing opposition to Beijing's admission into the United Nations. Both agreed to establish offices for diplomatic representation in their respective capitals of Washington, D.C. and Beijing. Nixon, who traveled to China in 1972 to meet Mao Zedong and solidify these agreements, described his trip as "a week that changed the world."

The most important element of *détente*, of course, involved the two most powerful nations on earth: the two superpowers of the Cold War. Here, a whole series of remarkable agreements ranging from trade and technical exchanges to strategic weapons were signed in a very short period of time in order to create mutual benefits in what was called a "web of incentives." In 1971, the United States and the Soviet Union negotiated accords on Berlin as well as a treaty prohibiting the emplacement of nuclear weapons on seabeds or ocean floors, and agreed to participate in a security conference on Europe and further discussions on mutual and balanced reduction of forces. The next year, Nixon and Brezhnev signed two arms control agreements, the first Strategic Arms Limitation Treaty (SALT I) and the anti-ballistic missile (ABM) treaty placing limits on their strategic weapons. "Never before," announced Kissinger, "have the world's two most powerful nations . . . placed their central armaments under formally agreed limitation and restraint."They also signed

an accord called "Basic Principles of Relations," creating new rules of cooperation and competition, pledging to prevent situations that might dangerously exacerbate their relations, to do their utmost to avoid military confrontations, and to "exercise mutual restraint in their relations and be prepared to negotiate and settle differences by peaceful means." At their 1973 summit, they further signed the "Agreement on the Prevention of Nuclear War," promising "to refrain from the threat or use of force" against either "the other party" or "the allies of the other party" in situations that could risk thermonuclear holocaust.

PERSISTENT PROBLEMS AND THE FINAL DEMISE OF THE COLD WAR

Given all these agreements, it was not difficult to imagine the world moving away from the intense rivalry of the Cold War. The efforts to create new restraints and to regulate conflict appeared to have a reasonable chance of success. But, as we have seen from historical experience, such efforts ultimately succeed only if the participants are willing and able to shift away from intense competition and move toward more cooperative behavior by actually honoring their agreements regarding shared norms and objectives. And this is done only if they regard it to be in their interest and can gain sufficient international and domestic support to do so. *Détente* suffered from both of these problems, and, by so doing, revealed much about the nature of efforts to create and maintain viable international systems for peace and security.

The expectation that the superpowers would act with greater self-restraint, for example, was not always realized in practice. In fact, at times it seemed to be completely ignored. Both superpowers persistently refused to give up the economic, diplomatic, and military advantages that came from being the world's two largest weapons manufacturers and exporters of arms to other nations and rebel factions. Each continued to support its respective client states in the Middle East, with the United States announcing that it was supplying an additional forty-eight Phantom jets to Israel and the Soviet Union responding with increased military supplies to Egypt and Syria, which they promptly used to launch an attack in October 1973. The resulting Arab-Israeli War immediately escalated into superpower confrontation and demonstrated that both sides were willing to ignore their mutual pledges by trying to intimidate each other, with the Soviets threatening to intervene with troops and placing their air force and strategic rocket forces on full alert and the Americans moving to DEFCON III (the maximum defense condition state of readiness short of war) to simultaneously deter and coerce.

Moreover, when the citizens of Chile democratically elected a Marxist leader, Kissinger responded that "I don't see why we need to stand by and watch a country go Communist due to the irresponsibility of its own people," and Nixon approved a covert operation to overthrow the government. This brought to power the repressive dictatorship of General Augusto Pinochet. The agreements similarly did little to restrain the Soviets and their support for what they called "progressive" and "liberation" movements in the Third World. All this raised serious doubts about whether the superpowers would place any restraints upon themselves, let alone think about the possibility of the larger international system as a whole.

In this regard, their attitudes toward and policies in the United Nations made tensions even worse. American and Soviet pledges to work together in "the common interest," as envisioned by the Charter, evaporated. Their promises to act in partnership, to show self-restraint, to develop a sense of responsibility to protect shared values and objectives, and to harness their considerable power to advance the goals of the organization vanished. Instead, the two superpowers continually emasculated the Security Council (which had been designed as the focal point for managing matters of force and statecraft in international peace and security), thereby preventing it from taking action that might threaten their perceived interests. They cast more vetoes by far than all others combined. As we have seen, the Soviets attempted to actually eliminate the position of secretary-general. Moreover, both nations chose to ignore the Charter's provisions on the legitimate use of armed force and kept the United Nations from addressing their proxy wars and unilateral use of military action against other countries, as evident with the Soviets in Hungary, Czechoslovakia, and Afghanistan and the Americans in Central America, the Caribbean, and Vietnam.

This persistent problem plagued *détente* by contributing to its failure to gather widespread legitimacy or support. Many countries, including a number of allies, complained that whatever understandings or accommodations had been made, there could be no such thing as a truly international "system" as long as the United Nations was ignored and they, as legitimate nation-states, were deliberately excluded from negotiations conducted in secret and confined exclusively to the Americans, the Soviets, and the Chinese.

Domestic support also proved difficult to secure. There were bureaucracies, defense industries, and constituencies with vested interests in preventing any relaxation of tension. In addition, the pursuit of *détente* required a more sophisticated mental and emotional analysis than that of an ideological Cold War rivalry. Previous American leaders had successfully exploited fear, hysteria, and a simplistic image: Communists were bad and anti-Communists were good, and that is all that one needed to know. The policy of *détente*, however, imposed the more complicated intellectual task of viewing the Soviets and the Chinese as limited adversaries, neither completely friend nor foe, but something in between, depending on circumstances.

The nature of that "something" in the context of force and statecraft was not easy for many people to understand. Members of Congress and the public often demonstrated an inability or an unwillingness to grasp the subtleties of a strategy that combined both sticks of punishment and carrots of incentive. Whenever the administration engaged in efforts at conciliation and the bestowal of benefits, critical hawks on the Right complained that it simply rewarded Communist "adventurism" and thus was nothing less than "appeasement." Whenever the administration engaged in threats or punishments, critical doves on the Left complained that America risked nuclear war or the descent down a slippery slope into another Vietnam disaster. Added to this was a growing cynicism and distrust of government leaders after the Watergate scandal and revelations of shocking CIA activities conducted in the name of "national security." The outrage was sufficient to cause Congress to pass the 1973 War Powers Act, seeking to restrain a president's ability to commit armed forces abroad. Many Americans grew weary of such abuses, of

disputes and duplicity, of diplomacy that required subtlety and nuance, and of the distrust and acrobatics that accompanied balance-of-power maneuvers, and thus withheld their support.

Given all of these factors, it is not at all surprising that *détente* came to resemble a roller coaster. As both Gerald Ford and Jimmy Carter came to realize once they became president, the pursuit of consistent and effective foreign policy in the absence of public support is difficult, if not impossible. There were times when the superpowers found ways to successfully collaborate on areas of mutual interest, letting pragmatism transcend ideological rivalry, as with the SALT II accords seeking to reduce a further escalation of the arms race. There were times when others would largely take the initiative in using diplomatic negotiation to reach accommodation and relax tension. This occurred, as we shall see in Chapter 8, when thirty-five nations negotiated the historic 1975 Helsinki Final Act at the Conference on Security and Cooperation in Europe (CSCE), tying individual human rights to national and international security and pledging the signatories to refrain "from the threat or the use of force against the territorial integrity or political independence of any state, or in any other manner inconsistent with the purposes of the United Nations."

There were other times when the antagonism grew worse, as when the Soviets dramatically escalated their military buildup, expanded their influence in the Horn of Africa, intervened to support their clients in the civil war in Angola, enlisted Castro's Cuba to contribute additional weapons and eventually 11,000 combat troops to the struggle, and publicly rejoiced when radicals of the Islamic Iranian Revolution overthrew America's ally the Shah of Iran and seized hostages from the U.S. embassy, shouting, "Death to America!"

But the real *coup de grâce* was delivered in December 1979, when the Soviet Union, against the advice of its military commanders, forcefully invaded Afghanistan. This rocked American leaders to the core and led immediately to a renewal of the Cold War. A shaken and beleaguered Carter, who came into office with the intention of developing a more constructive foreign policy that stressed human rights, disarmament, and working with the Soviets, condemned the invasion as "the greatest threat to world peace since the Second World War." He responded by recalling the U.S. ambassador from Moscow, cutting off sales of technology and grain, withdrawing SALT II from consideration by the Senate, substantially increasing American military spending, accelerating the development of a Rapid Deployment Force to project military power abroad, and signing Presidential Directive 59, shifting U.S. strategic emphasis from merely deterring nuclear war to planning to actually fight it. All this prompted the well-known political scientist Hans Morgenthau to declare: "The world is moving ineluctably toward a third world war—a strategic nuclear war. I do not believe that anything can be done to prevent it."

Détente was dead.

If any doubts still existed about the renewal of confrontational attitudes in the Cold War, they ended when Ronald Reagan became president in 1981. In his very first press conference, he depicted Brezhnev and other Soviet leaders as dangerous individuals who were bent on world domination and who would "reserve unto themselves the right to commit any crime, to lie, to cheat" in order to achieve

their goals. Later, in the most widely quoted speech of his presidency, he expansively described the Soviet Union as "the focus of evil in the modern world" with all "the aggressive impulses of an evil empire." With this as the premise, he called upon Americans to realize their historical destiny by becoming fully engaged in the worldwide battle with Communism—"the struggle between right and wrong and good and evil."

It was in this spirit that the Reagan administration launched its offensive of force in statecraft. The first thrust challenged the Soviet Union with a massive increase in conventional and nuclear weapons. This began with expenditures funding the largest peacetime buildup in American history, at a level doubling the national debt. Billions of dollars were spent on developing and deploying the B-1 bomber, "Stealth" aircraft capable of minimizing radar detection, Trident II submarines with their sub-launched ballistic missiles, air- and ground-launched cruise missiles, Pershing II intermediate-range missiles, the neutron bomb, and highly accurate MX missiles carrying ten independently targetable nuclear warheads. Reagan also resumed production of poison gas for chemical warfare and called for the development of a space-based defense system that mated lasers, mirrors, particle beams, and other kinetic-energy projection technology with the power of computers designed to destroy Soviet missiles before they reached their targets. He described it as the Strategic Defense Initiative (SDI). His critics dubbed it "Star Wars." From recently declassified documents and the memoirs of former Soviet leaders, we now know that they thought that the United States was preparing to launch a preemptive strike against the Soviet Union and believed SDI to be but one step toward that end.

At the same time, the United States set out to counteract any Communist attempts to spread influence in the Third World. It intervened in the civil war in El Salvador, mined harbors in Nicaragua, invaded Grenada, sent Marines to Lebanon, and conducted the largest naval exercise in its history to demonstrate its power. Various forms of support went to authoritarian anti-Communist regimes, whatever their lack of democracy, rule of law, or record on human rights, such as those in Chile, El Salvador, Guatemala, Haiti, Pakistan, the Philippines, and South Africa, among others. Arms and money were covertly funneled through the Pakistani Inter-Services Intelligence directorate to militant Islamic fighters known as *mujahideen* battling the Soviets in Afghanistan (including one by the name of Osama bin Laden); anti-Communist forces in Angola, Cambodia, and Ethiopia; and the Contras fighting against the Communist-backed Sandinistas in Nicaragua. The obsession to promote this fight grew to such an extent that specific laws passed by Congress to restrain or even prohibit certain actions were broken. The campaign against the Sandinistas, for example, was financed in part by laundered money gained from secret arms contracts with some of the same Iranian revolutionaries who had captured American diplomats, thereby creating the Iran-Contra scandal. But critics of individual aspects of Reagan's foreign policy were outnumbered by the majority of voters, who found pleasure in seeing America act forcefully again after a decade of setbacks and disappointments.

Popularity at home, however, does not necessarily translate into popularity abroad, and Reagan's vitriolic rhetoric and confrontational policies alarmed many other nations. Even close allies in Europe deplored the passing of *détente*

and listened in horror as the Americans and Soviets openly spoke about force and "counterforce" strikes. This was particularly true of Germany, where the Social Democratic party repudiated its own chancellor, Helmut Schmidt, because he supported deploying intermediate-range Pershing II and cruise missiles if the Soviets did not agree to remove their large number of mobile, land-based SS-20 missiles. A large peace movement opposed this deployment and urged withdrawal from NATO if it took place. The Soviets took advantage of this situation to rain threats down upon the new West German government of Helmut Kohl, warning of a sharp deterioration of relations between Moscow and Bonn and the end of any arms control negotiations. In the end, the deployment took place and forced the Soviets to change their strategy, but it came at a heavy price and revealed deep and widespread concerns within allied countries about the direction of superpower confrontation.

This episode served as a good reminder that diplomacy, by its very nature, involves the interaction among different states, and, within these at the time of the diplomatic revolution, each is heavily influenced by domestic politics. In this regard, a monumental change occurred in 1985 when Mikhail Gorbachev became the new leader of the Soviet Union. More energetic, better educated and traveled, more thoughtful, more skeptical of military force, and less ideological than his predecessors, Gorbachev nevertheless faced not only an openly hostile administration in the United States, an exhausting war in Afghanistan, unrest in Eastern Europe, and tension with China, but a country in profound crisis at home. The long-term, debilitating effects of military and territorial overextension, arms race competition, bureaucratic stultification, mismanagement of a planned economy, absence of accountability, and a system that resisted independent initiative all had driven the Soviet Union into a political and economic state of near collapse.

Gorbachev attempted to salvage this situation by launching a dual policy of what he called *perestroika* (restructuring) and *glasnost* (openness) at home and "new political thinking" abroad. He announced before a meeting of his stunned diplomats that the Soviet Union needed to make a radical paradigm shift in its perception of threat. In a fundamental transformation from all previous ideologically oriented Soviet leaders who viewed the Cold War as a zero–sum contest between two diametrically opposed revolutionary and imperialist camps, Gorbachev argued that the most serious challenge facing Soviet foreign policy was no longer the class struggle against capitalism, but rather the immense danger of the arms race that threatened humankind itself with mutual destruction. He believed that the ever-mounting stockpiles of nuclear weapons created dangerous insecurity rather than security and that nuclear war could never be won. As such, he insisted on a monumental shift in the way that the Soviet Union approached not only the United States but international relations as a whole. Gorbachev thus called for a "fresh start."

Toward this end, he immediately announced that he would freeze the deployment of Soviet intermediate-range missiles in Europe, begin to negotiate the elimination of all tactical nuclear weapons, impose a moratorium on Soviet nuclear testing (while expressing the hope that the United States would do the same), and replace the inflexible Andrei Gromyko, who had served as foreign minister for twenty years. He then declared that the Soviet Union would no longer seek

to maintain exact numeric parity in strategic armaments, but instead would shift to a new and less threatening policy of "strategic sufficiency." At the same time, Gorbachev began to cultivate a more personal relationship with Reagan, who, through time and in turn, became more willing to modify some of his earlier positions. The two met in Geneva, Reykjavik, Moscow, and Washington, D.C. and agreed on the remarkable 1987 Intermediate-Range Nuclear Forces (INF) Treaty that actually eliminated an entire category of weapons.

Gorbachev then undertook a series of surprise, unilateral, and seismic actions that accelerated his course, over the objections of many of his own military and intelligence advisors. These included completely removing Soviet troops from the Afghan War, which he described as a "hopeless military adventure" and a "bleeding wound"; reducing the military budget by 14 percent; cutting weapons expenditures by 20 percent; and withdrawing 200,000 troops from Asia. Then, in his electrifying 1988 speech before the United Nations, Gorbachev announced that his government would work as partners in cooperation with the international community, reduce the Soviet stock in conventional weapons, slash troop strength by 500,000, and support the right of all nations to choose their own form of government, including those in Eastern Europe—"without exception."

Such a dramatic and unexpected statement signaled that the Soviet Union would exercise military self-restraint by renouncing the use of armed force to protect its empire and propping up its puppet regimes. This initiative from above triggered a deluge from below. Within the single year of 1989, every one of the Communist governments behind the Iron Curtain—Poland, Hungary, Czechoslovakia, Bulgaria, East Germany, and Romania—either changed its political orientation or was overthrown by popular uprisings. People held free elections and crowds tore down the despised Berlin Wall, dancing joyously on its ruins. "Rarely in history," wrote one journalist, "has such a sweeping reorientation of political, economic, and military power taken place so swiftly without military conquest or bloodshed." *Time* magazine reflected on these tumultuous events and in January 1990 concluded:

> With remarkable imagination and daring, he has embarked on a course, perhaps now irreversible, that is reshaping the world . . . He has been breaking up an old bloc ..., altering the relationship of the Soviet empire with the rest of the world and changing the nature of the empire itself. He has made possible the end of the Cold War and diminished the danger that a hot war will ever break out between the superpowers. Because he is the force behind the most momentous events of the 1980s and because what he has already done will almost certainly shape the future, Mikhail Gorbachev is *Time*'s Man of the Decade.

Little could *Time* or even Gorbachev himself imagine what lay ahead, for these events unleashed unanticipated forces that appeared impervious to control. Although often praised abroad, Gorbachev's reforms and new policies generated great discontent, resistance, and even sabotage at home, especially among hardline Communists, impassioned nationalists, and those in the military, KGB, and defense industries, who had vested interests in keeping the Cold War going. They watched in staggering disbelief and then anger as their power and prestige collapsed around them, as the ruble plummeted and their economy fell into chaos,

as the Soviet Union's most valuable ally of East Germany disappeared as it was absorbed into a reunited Germany and brought into the rival alliance of NATO, and as Lithuania, Estonia, and Latvia all declared independence and broke away from centralized Soviet control.

In November 1990, the leaders of thirty-four member states of CSCE, including the Soviet Union, signed the Charter of Paris, reaffirming their belief in the intimate connection between human rights and security and pledging themselves to "a new era of democracy, peace, and unity." Several months later, the Warsaw Treaty Organization formally dissolved. This proved to be too much for some of Gorbachev's opponents. They plotted against him and in August 1991 placed him under a humiliating house arrest and attempted a bizarre *coup*. In the midst of all these upheavals, Boris Yeltsin, the outspoken and reformist president of Russia, asserted that the Russian Republic also would become independent and that the Communist Party would no longer hold a monopoly of power. Finally, in December 1991, he and the leaders of most of the other republics announced that the seventy-four-year experiment was finished and declared their independence. The Soviet Union ceased to exist.

Why this massive geopolitical earthquake occurred so abruptly, and with so little bloodshed, remains a matter of enormous controversy. Just as there are intense arguments over the origins of the Cold War, so there are over the reasons for its demise. Some, including many Americans, give the credit to Reagan, who was steadfastly determined to drive the Soviets into a massive and expensive arms race that they could not possibly win, challenging them from a position of strength at every turn, giving support to their enemies, denying them technical and economic assistance, and thereby driving them to collapse. Others claim that Reagan's military buildup and ideological zealotry actually prolonged the Cold War, and instead praise Gorbachev. They point to his assessment of how thermonuclear weapons had changed the world and the necessity to change course, his capacity to transcend ideology, his bold initiatives, and his willingness to take unilateral and unreciprocated action to reduce the level of tension between the superpowers, describing him as "the architect of a world transformation" and the "indispensable agent" most responsible for bringing the Cold War to an end.

Some credit a whole series of American presidents, Democratic and Republican alike, who together sustained a policy over four decades and across party lines that eventually shifted the balance of power toward the West and persisted in containing the Soviet Union until it finally fell apart. Others explain these events as the logical result of the inherent weakness, impoverishment, and structural decay of the Soviet system and the failure of the ideology and the practice of Communism itself, with its centrally controlled economy and one-party state, rather than any pressure imposed on the Soviet Union by the United States, arguing that no one could indefinitely ignore market forces or such a repressive regime supposedly representing the dictatorship of the proletariat and somehow "reform the unreformable." Still others credit the ultimate power of ideas and values in the vision of liberal democracy, personal opportunity, civil society, and human rights for being able to inspire those who were oppressed with a dream of eventual freedom.

Whatever the reason, or combination of reasons, the fact remains that the seemingly intractable struggle that had defined international relations for decades, which many people thought would last indefinitely and end in a cataclysm, now came to an end. Thus, in 1992, Gorbachev stood at exactly the same spot where Winston Churchill years before had delivered his rallying cry "Iron Curtain" speech. This time there was a new message. Gorbachev spoke of the tortuous past and its many mistakes, urging leaders and peoples alike to learn lessons from history in order to avoid any repetition. He then told his audience what so many had waited so long to hear: "The Cold War is over—and a new era has begun."

SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER EXPLORATION

For excellent treatments of the Cold War, see Jenny and Sherry Thompson, *The Kremlinologist* (Baltimore, MD, 2018); Edward Judge and John Langdon, *A Hard and Bitter Peace* (Lanham, MD, 2017 ed.); Odd Arne Westad, *The Cold War* (New York, 2017 ed.); Carole Fink, *Cold War: An International History* (Boulder, CO, 2017); Melvyn Leffler, *For the Soul of Mankind* (New York, 2008); John Lewis Gaddis, *The Cold War: A New History* (New York, 2006); and Walter LaFeber, *America, Russia, and the Cold War* (New York, 2006 ed.). The statecraft of particular leaders is discussed in Gordon A. Craig and Francis L. Lowenheim (eds.), *The Diplomats, 1939–1979* (Princeton, 1994). New articles of analysis and interpretation constantly appear in the *Journal of Cold War Studies* and the *Cold War History* journal.

The controversy surrounding the origins of the Cold War can be seen by comparing the "orthodox" interpretation of Herbert Feis, *From Trust to Terror* (New York, 1970), with that of "revisionist" authors William A. Williams, *The Tragedy of American Diplomacy* (New York, 2009 ed.); Gar Alperowitz et al., *The Decision to Use the Atomic Bomb* (New York, 1996) and "neo-revisionist" writers Thomas Paterson, *On Every Front* (New York, 1993 ed.) and Melvyn Leffler, *A Preponderance of Power* (Stanford, CA, 1993 ed.).

Students of diplomacy need to appreciate that international relations involve the interaction among different states, rather than simply the unilateral policies of a single country. Valuable perspectives can be found in Vladislav Zubok, *A Failed Empire* (Chapel Hill, NC, 2009); Aleksandr Fursenko and Timothy Naftali, *Khrushchev's Cold War* (New York, 2006); Andre Gromyko and B. Ponomarev, *Soviet Foreign Policy, 1917–1980*, 2 vols. (Moscow, 1981); and Chen Jian, *Mao's China and the Cold War* (Chapel Hill, NC, 2001).

The role of images and perceptions is treated in Robert Jervis, *How Statesmen Think* (Princeton, 2017); Kenneth Osgood, *Total Cold War* (Lawrence, KS, 2006); John Stoessinger, *Nations at Dawn* (New York, 1994 ed.); and Alexander L. George, "The Transition in U.S.-Soviet Relations," *Political Psychology*, 12 (1991): 469–486. McCarthyism is explored in Paul Gordon Lauren (ed.), *The China Hands Legacy* (Boulder, CO, 1987). Containment is discussed in John Lewis Gaddis, *George F. Kennan* (New York, 2012) and *Strategies of Containment* (New York, 2005 ed.). The arms race is analyzed in Robert Jervis, *The Meaning of the Nuclear Revolution* (Ithaca, NY, 1990) and Henry Kissinger, *Nuclear Weapons and Foreign Policy* (New York, 1957). Intelligence and covert action are treated in Loch Johnson, *America's Secret Power* (New York, 1991); Christopher Andrew and Oleg Gordievsky, *KGB: The Inside Story* (New York, 1990); and Paul Gordon Lauren, "Ethics and Intelligence," in Alfred Maurer et al. (eds.), *Intelligence* (Boulder, CO, 1985).

Race is discussed in Mary Dudziak, *Cold War Civil Rights* (Princeton, 2000) and Paul Gordon Lauren, *Power and Prejudice* (Boulder, CO, 1996 ed.). *Détente* is explored in U.S. Department of State, *Soviet-American Relations: The Détente Years* (Washington, DC, 2007); Alexander L. George et al. (eds.), *U.S.-Soviet Security Cooperation* (New York, 1996 ed.) and *Managing U.S.-Soviet Rivalry* (Boulder, CO, 1983); and Henry Kissinger's autobiographical *Years of Upheaval* (Boston, 1982) and *White House Years* (Boston, 1979).

The debate over the end of the Cold War can be explored by comparing Robert Service, *The End of the Cold War* (Philadelphia, 2015); Jack Matlock, Jr., *Reagan and Gorbachev: How the Cold War Ended* (New York, 2005); Richard Herrmann and Richard Ned Lebow (eds.), *Ending the Cold War* (New York, 2004); Peter Schweizer, *Reagan's War: The Epic Story of His Forty-Year Struggle and Final Triumph Over Communism* (New York, 2002); Don Oberdorfer, *From the Cold War to a New Era* (Baltimore, 1998 ed.); Archie Brown, *The Gorbachev Factor* (New York, 1997); Richard Ned Lebow and Janice Gross Stein, *We All Lost the Cold War* (Princeton, 1995); and Francis Fukuyama, *The End of History and the Last Man* (New York, 1993).

New findings are increasingly being made available on the Internet, including declassified documents, material obtained under the Freedom of Information Act, and previously inaccessible archival sources once hidden behind the Iron Curtain. See the Digital Archive collection of the Cold War International History Project at www.wilsoncenter.org/program/cold-war-international-history-project; the Parallel History Project on Cooperative Security at www.php.isn.ethz.ch; U.S. Department of State, Foreign Relations Series, at https://history.state.gov/historicaldocuments; and the National Security Archive at https://nsarchive.gwu.edu.

CHAPTER 6

The Evolving International System

The end of the Cold War and the Soviet empire created a widespread mood of euphoria. The struggle that had dominated global politics for so long was over and seemed to open up a vast new horizon of possibilities. Some reacted with strident triumphalism, believing that their own superiority had brought about victory and now would allow them to shape the world in their own image. Others, however, sighed in quiet and grateful relief that the world had managed to escape from completely destroying itself in nuclear annihilation. But despite their enormous differences of opinion, all sides shared one thing in common: the opportunity to think about a new future. For the first time in decades, serious consideration could be given to what the world might be like without the dangerous and costly confrontation between the superpowers. Many hoped that they would see less reliance on the sword as portrayed in the allegorical statue of *Diplomacy*, and greater use of the olive branch. They looked eagerly for a "peace dividend," an end to the arms race and the "balance of terror" of "Mutual Assured Destruction" (MAD), the elimination of rival alliance systems and covert action, advances in the rule of law, enhanced human rights, and thereby greater peace and security. U.S. secretary of state James Baker gave expression to this mood when he proclaimed: "We live in one of the rare transforming moments in history, with the Cold War over and an era full of promise just ahead."

"A WORLD IN A RAPID STATE OF TRANSITION"

One of the most important lessons of history is that any international system must be able to adapt to geopolitical shifts and to internal changes within its member states in order to survive. With this in mind, and with the new possibilities of a post–Cold War world, people thus increasingly began to speak of their hopes for creating a "New World Order." They quickly realized, however, that this could not be accomplished without addressing the issue posed directly by the United Nations secretary-general Boutros Boutros-Ghali from Egypt, "how the international community can best equip itself to respond to a world in a rapid state of transition."

Accomplishing this task was not as easy as many had hoped. Indeed, it immediately led to intense debates that continue today over the best way to achieve peace

and security. Boutros-Ghali, for example, strongly opposed any arrangement controlled by a single country or group of countries, no matter how great or powerful, and advocated a broad-based system centered around the United Nations. As he observed:

> History is accelerating. The pace is alarming. The direction is not entirely known. At this time of stress, the hard fact is that no power or combination of powers is prepared to take on its shoulders the responsibility for collective security worldwide.

In contrast, Henry Kissinger argued that this evolving system should be guided by strong American leadership, but also acknowledged in his book *Diplomacy* the uncertainty ahead:

> Never before has a new world order had to be assembled from so many different perceptions, or on so global a scale. Nor has any previous order had to combine the attributes of the historic balance-of-power systems with global democratic opinion and the exploding technology of the contemporary period.

The challenges that they and others anticipated appeared soon enough.

One of these was the dramatic expansion of the international community itself. In 1990, Namibia and Liechtenstein became members of the United Nations. The following year witnessed the admission of North and South Korea, Estonia, Latvia, Lithuania, Micronesia, and the Marshall Islands. Twenty new states then joined over the next two years, including Slovenia, Bosnia and Herzegovina, Croatia, and former Soviet republics such as Armenia, Georgia, and Kazakhstan. Today, a walk along the front of the United Nations headquarters reveals a display of the national flags of 193 members. This phenomenal number represents nearly a quadrupling of independent nation-states since 1945, each with its own history, perceptions, interests, and values. All of these, especially when combined with the burgeoning number of nonstate actors in global politics, as we shall discuss shortly, marked a dramatic escalation of the diplomatic revolution in the sheer number of participants, expanding geographical scope, and resulting complexity within the evolving international system.

Other challenges emerged in this transformation as well, including political instability and the outbreak of violence and wars. Indeed, just when the revolutions in Hungary, Poland, Germany, and Czechoslovakia consolidated themselves and the Soviet Union began to crumble in the summer of 1990, the Iraqi dictator Saddam Hussein lashed out and sent his armed forces smashing into neighboring and militarily weak Kuwait. In quick response to this invasion, with its enormous geopolitical implications, President George H. W. Bush and other leaders skillfully worked to obtain authorization from the United Nations to build a multilateral military coalition for international enforcement against Saddam. Now freed from the constraints of the Cold War, the Security Council became more invigorated, demanding that Iraq immediately and unconditionally withdraw from Kuwait. It voted to employ coercive diplomacy by imposing progressively stiffer sanctions, backed by a naval blockade, and then, momentously, issued an ultimatum threatening military force by authorizing member states "to use all necessary means" to evict Iraqi forces from Kuwait if they did not leave voluntarily.

Despite this pressure, Saddam stubbornly refused to disgorge his spoils. American and allied war planes equipped with sophisticated technology thus began the Persian Gulf War in January 1991. In the end, they liberated Kuwait, but an unrepentant Saddam and his elite Republican Guard remained in power. Instead of bright possibilities, as hoped, this led to the emergence of new questions about the future of the Middle East, vital oil reserves, and the rise of sectarian strife and Islamic fundamentalism.

Still further challenges of warfare and the use of force and statecraft emerged, seemingly one exploding right after the other. These were complicated by the fact that they entailed very different kinds of security threats than those posed by aggressor states, involving instead civil wars, religious and ethnic violence, collapsed states, and horrific violations of human rights. Saddam, for example, continued to brutally persecute the Kurds in Iraq, prompting the dispatch of international armed forces in 1991 and the eventual establishment of "no-fly zones" to protect them. During the same year, Somalia erupted into civil war and anarchy. American and United Nations peacekeeping forces were deployed in the name of humanitarian intervention, but by 1993 the policy ended in dismal failure.

At exactly the same time, centrifugal forces in Yugoslavia careened out of control. Slovenia and Croatia declared their independence from the Serbian-dominated government in Belgrade, and violence broke out in Bosnia in which Bosnian Serb nationalists, with the support of Serbian president Slobodan Milosevic, engaged in intimidation, rape, fighting, and mass murder known as "ethnic cleansing." Member states of the United Nations responded by combining diplomacy with the sending of peacekeeping forces and imposing an arms embargo on all sides. Although such a position possessed some advantages in theory, in practice it seriously disadvantaged Bosnian government troops against the already well-equipped Serbs. This became evident with massive mortar attacks against civilians in Sarajevo and with the shocking 1995 massacre of 8,000 men and boys of Srebrenica, an event described as "the worst human rights disaster in Europe since the Holocaust." In response, NATO deployed its Rapid Reaction Force, and President Bill Clinton authorized U.S. troops to launch Operation Deliberate Force in the Balkans. During 1994, civil war also broke out in Rwanda between Hutus and Tutsis, taking the lives of an estimated 800,000 in genocide.

Political and military alliances also shifted in this period of transition. Once the Cold War ended and the Iron Curtain and the Warsaw Treaty Organization collapsed, states formerly bound by the straitjacket of the Soviet bloc looked for ways to draw closer to the West. They hoped that this would allow them to enjoy greater economic prosperity and to benefit from common foreign and security policies, as well as protecting them from once again being pulled into a Russian sphere of influence. This dramatic process began immediately with the absorption of East Germany into a united Germany and then into NATO in 1990. Poland, Hungary, and the Czech Republic became members in 1999. Seven other states joined in 2004, and then Albania and Croatia in 2009. At the same time, most of these states eagerly pursued membership in the ever-enlarging European Union, pledging themselves to its criteria of having a democratic government, operating a free market economy, and respecting the rule of law and human rights.

These shifts provoked strong opposition from Russia, which had assumed the successor status of the former Soviet Union. It neither fit, nor was welcomed, into NATO or the European Union. Resentment against Russians from Eastern Europe and the Baltic states previously under the control of the Soviet empire remained strong. Many Russian political elites reciprocated by deliberately distancing themselves from the West and turning within. As a result, Russia remained apart from the "new" Europe and the evolving international system increasingly being shaped by the United States. But things were even worse at home. Russians found themselves and their post-Communist country mired in anarchy, political instability, corruption, economic recession, violence, the disappearance of social programs, the loss of enormous state assets to privatized criminal groups and business oligarchs, and a brutal war against separatist irregulars in Chechnya. In these desperate and humiliating circumstances, it is not surprising that Russians would look to a strong leader to save them and to restore their prestige. They thus supported Vladimir Putin, a former KGB officer, in his bid to become their president in 2000.

These developments appeared to turn the dream of a post–Cold War "New World Order" into a nightmare of a "New World Disorder." Here one faced challenges of uncertainly, diffusions of power, an expanding number and type of actors, different agendas and values, and dramatic transformations in technology.

Over half of all the scientists and engineers who have ever lived, for example, are alive today, and this dramatically affects force and statecraft. The diplomatic revolution has been made all the more potent with the emergence of what is called the revolution in military affairs (RMA), especially with the application of advanced sensing and information-reporting computer technologies and precision-guided munitions (PGMs). These include cruise missiles with guidance systems capable of comparing landmarks with prerecorded maps to guide them to their targets, jet fighters with radar-evading Stealth technology based on new aerodynamic shapes and composite materials, electronic jamming equipment, night vision devices, and so-called smart bombs and unmanned aerial vehicles (UAVs) or drones guided by global positioning satellites, heat-seeking sensors, lasers, infrared signals, or cameras.

Advanced research continued apace for developing and refining weapons using biotechnology, robotics, artificial intelligence (AI), and nanotechnologies manipulating matter on an atomic or molecular scale with highly sophisticated delivery systems capable of sending nuclear, chemical, or biological agents toward targets thousands of miles away. At the same time, scientists worked to develop electromagnetic pulse (EMP) weapons and new space and counter-space technologies using particle beams and kinetic energy to project military potential beyond earth's atmosphere. This enabled strategists to go beyond the previous arenas of land, sea, and air warfare into the new "fourth medium": space. Diplomats and military planners of previous generations, schooled on ideas of limitations from Clausewitz, could not have even imagined such sophisticated developments and their implications for what is today known as C^5ISR: command, control, communications, computers, combat systems, intelligence, surveillance, and reconnaissance.

These technological transformations provide new instruments of statecraft by greatly impacting the collection, analysis, and transmission of information. A visit to a communications center of any major foreign ministry today reveals the effects of the "digital revolution" produced by the microchip and its staggering array of complex devices to encrypt and decrypt classified messages, create and store elaborate databases, compress and retrieve vast amounts of material, conduct highly complex mathematical computations, convert photons into electrons and then process these into images, and use Internet links that span the globe. Those charged with statecraft in an age of cyberspace possess sophisticated computers, fiber optics, and wireless devices to instantaneously send and receive satellite transmissions and maintain constant and secure communications virtually anywhere on the planet. A secretary of state can now sit in the Situation Room of the White House with the president and other advisors in front of a high-definition screen and watch a clandestine raid or military operation taking place thousands of miles away in real time.

Digital technologies also have created an "information revolution" that makes it possible to gather and analyze extraordinary intelligence about others in world affairs. Capacities now exist to collect data from billions of e-mails, telephone calls, and electronic transmissions like specks of dust from a carpet through technical means of intercepts, embedded relay chips in telecommunications equipment, hydrophones on the ocean floors, and space-borne satellites equipped with multi- and hyper-spectral sensors and synthetic aperture radar, and then to provide analysis through sophisticated processing, such as integrating overhead photographic imagery with terrain elevation data to produce three-dimensional depictions of territory. The impressive images available on Google Earth to anyone with access to the Internet, for example, simply pale next to the capabilities of the National Security Agency, National Reconnaissance Office, and National Geospatial-Intelligence Agency with its computer-assisted map tailoring and spatial-statistical and imagery analyses. The intelligence thereby provided to policymakers and military commanders when confronting challenges in force and statecraft staggers the imagination.

This vast amount of information and the ease of transmitting much of it to widespread audiences also contributes further to that other feature of the diplomatic revolution discussed previously: namely, the acceleration of public opinion and "public diplomacy." Indeed, one insider estimates that the staff of the U.S. Secretary of State spends 80 to 90 percent of its time thinking about the media and how policies will "play" with the public. This is further confirmed by the existence and the size of the office of the Under Secretary of State for Public Diplomacy and Public Affairs and by the fact that U.S. Foreign Service personnel now can select a career track specifically designated as "public diplomacy officers." According to an official job description, they are assigned a variety of tasks, including to "explain and defend the substance of American foreign policy to ensure that U.S. positions are well understood and that misrepresentations are corrected."

Technology increasingly makes it infinitely easier to not just inform and represent but to influence or shape opinion in what is sometimes called "media diplomacy." Indeed, the foreign ministries of every major nation-state in the world today, in addition to the United Nations, regional organizations, and nongovernmental

organizations (NGOs), maintain active websites full of reports, explanations, briefings, news releases, video streams, and digital images designed to build relationships, to advocate for particular policies, and to discredit adversaries. The U.S. State Department now even has a Department of eDiplomacy. One recent government commission consequently concludes that "public diplomacy is a strategic component of foreign policy" and, as such, must be regarded as "indispensable" to contemporary statecraft.

These transformations are matched, if not exceeded, by those in "economic diplomacy," thereby accelerating yet another feature of the diplomatic revolution. Business firms, bankers and financiers, manufacturers, shipping companies, chambers of commerce, private investors, and many analysts argue with increasing effectiveness that survival depends not on military success but rather on the ability of states to successfully compete in the international economic sphere and thereby provide for the well-being of their people. Diplomats, they urge, therefore must become more aggressive in promoting trade and financial investment in the global marketplace. At the same time, writes one observer,

> Governments increasingly recognized that the distribution of goods and capital abroad might be utilized as an instrument of diplomacy. Investment could buy friendships or build and solidify alliances, while monies withheld or economic reprisals could coerce opponents into making certain diplomatic concessions. Financial penetration could facilitate political hegemony in developing countries. Commercial advantages offered to foreign suppliers of strategic raw materials could strengthen security. Moreover, profits from overseas markets could contribute to national wealth and perhaps increase international prestige.

The combination of these private and public interests has resulted in more determined efforts than ever before to protect and promote trade and investment by recruiting economic specialists, creating career tracks for "economic officers," employing commercial attachés, compiling databases of vital import and export statistics for their nationals, reporting on foreign market conditions and tariff policies, utilizing successful businesspeople as trade negotiators, and upgrading the quality and professionalism in the consular services. Over time, these activities have expanded even further to include close cooperation between business and diplomacy in areas of investment, trade, technical assistance, foreign aid, and reconstruction projects. Said one high-ranking diplomat: "We are going to have to acknowledge that our economic health and our ability to trade competitively on the world market may be the single most important component of our national security . . . We must also become more activist in promoting American exports and in serving U.S. business interests overseas."

CHALLENGES TO NATION-STATES AND NATIONAL SOVEREIGNTY

Many of these transformations also increasingly and significantly have rendered the traditional borders and power of nation-states less consequential than in the past. Ever since the emergence of the Great Powers in the seventeenth century, as we have seen, states were regarded as the sole actors of international relations, as

the only entities capable of mobilizing sufficient force to threaten the security of others, as the singular protectors and authority governing people within their own territories, and as the exclusive possessors of sovereignty whose leaders claimed immunity from any scrutiny abroad. Various features within the evolving international system, however, have steadily challenged all of these features, assumptions, and claims.

One of the most direct challenges comes from the surging process of international interconnectedness and integration in telecommunications, transportation, and economics, widely known as "globalization." As a result of technologies, it is possible for data in the form of words, images, and sounds to transcend national borders and geographical and cultural barriers, and to override government authority nearly at will. "Nations once connected by foreign ministries and traders," notes the Center for Strategic and International Studies report entitled *Reinventing Diplomacy in the Information Age*, "are now linked through millions of individuals by fiber optics, satellite, wireless, and cable in a complex network without central control."

The capabilities of this technological globalization enable news and ideas from the most remote locations and circumstances to be uploaded, transmitted, and then downloaded from cyberspace within seconds and then to international organizations, broadcasters such as Cable Network News (CNN), BBC World Service, Qatar's Al Jazeera, NGOs, social networking sites such as Facebook and Twitter, file exchange and video sharing sites such as YouTube and Vimeo, personal e-mail accounts, blogs, and cloud-computing servers. Some measure of the power of this technological globalization can be seen in the strenuous—but often ineffective—efforts made by the Chinese government to erect "the Great Firewall of China" to block information, of the Iranian government to stop the release of a video taken from a smartphone showing a girl named Neda bleeding to death while protesting rigged elections, or of the American government to prevent WikiLeaks from releasing masses of classified documents to the world all via the Internet.

This inability of nation-states to protect themselves and their once seemingly impregnable sovereignty from cyberspace challenges was made starkly evident when Russia weaponized existing information technology to spread misinformation, manipulate public opinion, and sow social discord and political division when it interfered in the 2016 U.S. presidential elections.

The evolution of economic globalization with its worldwide market of trade and finance creates vast and interlocking networks of relationships and interests that by definition also bypass the borders of nation-states. National economies are being subsumed into an increasingly integrated and complex global economy through the exchange of goods and services, the flow of capital, direct foreign investment, international production and labor markets, migration, and the spread of technologies. This results in the diminution and sometimes even the elimination of state-enforced restrictions on transactions across borders. Trillions of dollars are exchanged every day in international money markets, to illustrate, outside any government control. Try as they may, nation-states simply cannot govern this process.

Further challenges to nation-states come from problems that render borders and passports nearly meaningless. The magnitude of these in our time simply

exceeds the capacity of any single national government, even the largest and strongest, to protect its own people and territory. These are "beyond the border" challenges. One of the most obvious, of course, is climate change, for which national borders mean absolutely nothing. The same can be said of environmental pollution of the atmosphere and oceans, deforestation, and unsustainable pressure of what is called the "water-food-energy" nexus, and the impact of 7,000,000,000 human beings trying to exist on an increasingly fragile planet. Other challenges that often dwarf the capacities of single nation-states include the proliferation of weapons of mass destruction, international terrorism, cyberattacks, widespread epidemics such as HIV/AIDS or Ebola and COVID-19, migration and the flood of refugees, transnational crime, corruption, economic disparities, currency volatility, fiscal crises, collapsed or "failed" states, and "outlaw" or "rogue" regimes.

In each of these cases, it is clear that what happens inside one state increasingly crosses the ever-more porous borders of others and influences what happens elsewhere. It thus is not at all unusual to hear observers speak of a growing sense of broad planetary consciousness rather than narrow territorial-based political identity or to hear experts on statecraft increasingly speak of broad "complex interdependence" requiring "global governance," "cooperative security," and the "indivisibility of security." Indeed, as political scientists Dan Caldwell and Robert Williams argue in *Seeking Security in an Insecure World*, the security of individuals, nation-states, and the international system has become so interconnected in our time that narrowly defined notions of "national security" protected by absolute borders are no longer relevant.

Of particular importance, as we shall discuss in more detail later in this book, modern weapons of mass destruction render the defense of national boundaries meaningless. Radioactive fallout and chemical and biological agents cannot be stopped at the political borders of nation-states, for they go wherever the winds blow or the oceans flow.

When facing these common threats, many of those responsible for force and statecraft have realized their mutual vulnerability and that they can no longer "go it alone." "No country and no region, no matter how powerful," observed Secretary-General Ban Ki Moon, "will be able to address these threats alone." For this reason, they have sought greater security through partnerships and collective efforts, and have been willing to voluntarily surrender some measure of their sovereignty to do so.

There is perhaps no area of greater sensitivity to the claims of sovereignty, for example, than the jealous control by states over their use of armed force. Nevertheless, even here many states have agreed to accept certain self-imposed restraints. They thus have become parties to international legal agreements such as the Non-Proliferation Treaty (NPT) dealing with nuclear armaments and its monitoring agency of the International Atomic Energy Agency (IAEA), the 1993 International Convention on the Prohibition of Chemical Weapons, and the 1996 Comprehensive Nuclear Test Ban Treaty, as well as the 2014 Arms Trade Treaty seeking to regulate the illicit circulation of small arms, light weapons, and their ammunition, which today cause the majority of combat deaths in the world. Other treaties include the Geneva Conventions seeking to protect civilians in armed conflict, a protocol to the International Convention on the Rights of the Child

prohibiting the use of child soldiers in warfare, and the 1998 Rome Statute of the International Criminal Court, designed to hold national leaders personally responsible for crimes against humanity, war crimes, or genocide. Such treaties recognize that a correlation exists between respect for human rights and international peace and security, thereby emphasizing the rights of individuals over the rights of nation-states.

These many developments present formidable challenges to traditional notions and claims of sovereignty. In fact, according to former United Nations secretary-general Kofi Annan of Ghana, within the evolving international system there is an evolving redefinition of sovereignty itself:

> State sovereignty, in its most basic sense, is being redefined. States are now widely understood to be instruments at the service of their people, and not vice-versa. At the same time, individual sovereignty—by which I mean the fundamental freedom of each individual, enshrined in the Charter of the UN and subsequent international treaties—has been enhanced by a renewed and spreading consciousness of individual rights. When we read the Charter today, we are more than ever conscious that its aim is to protect individual human rights not to protect those who abuse them.

Although some states vociferously resist this movement, the international community is increasingly willing to challenge claims by leaders that national sovereignty allows them to do whatever they please and grants them complete immunity from any kind of accountability. One need only consider the condemnation of dictators such as Augusto Pinochet of Chile and the prosecution of war criminals such as Slobodan Milosevic of Serbia, Radovan Karadžic of Bosnia, and Thomas Lubanga Dyilo of the Democratic Republic of Congo. In addition, and as observed so tellingly by the International Commission on Intervention and State Sovereignty in its report entitled *Responsibility to Protect*, there is a growing determination to use force if necessary in humanitarian intervention within the territory of other nations to protect victims who cannot protect themselves from their own governments.

Further challenges to nation-states and national sovereignty continue to come from other actors with claims to actively participate in global affairs. Among these are the United Nations and its many related specialized agencies such as the International Labor Organization and World Health Organization, as well as supranational or regional intergovernmental organizations (IGOs) such as the European Union, Organization for Security and Cooperation in Europe, North Atlantic Treaty Organization, Organization of American States, Arab League, African Union, and Association of Southeast Asian Nations. Others include the International Monetary Fund, World Bank, World Trade Organization (WTO), and commodity cartels such as the Organization of Petroleum Exporting Countries. Still another is the Group of Twenty Finance Ministers and Central Bank Governors, or G-20, whose collective economies represent over 80 percent of the world's gross domestic product, global national product, and world trade. Although composed of nation-states, each of these organizations or groups sometimes is more powerful than the sum of its parts, often challenging traditional attributes of national sovereignty itself.

There also are international actors today do not represent nation-states at all. In fact, they directly challenge the statist assumptions of international relations. Among the most striking of these are transnational corporations (TNCs) of businesses and banks that have their own trans-governmental networks and spheres of influence and actively engage in negotiation and espionage across borders like states. These include Apple, General Electric, Exxon Mobil, Nestlé, Royal Dutch Shell, the Sinopec Group, Toyota, and Walmart, among others. They carry neither the burdens nor the limitations of governing, but their size, enormous wealth, and sophisticated ability to move goods, services, and capital worldwide often give them significant global influence far beyond the control of national governments. Indeed, some possess annual revenues that far exceed the gross national products of many nation-states. For this reason, their executive officers and directors can have a much greater impact on people and world events than many heads of governments. The same can be said about transnational crime syndicates (especially those in the drug trade), whose vast and unregulated wealth, willingness to use violence, and global influence enable them to circumvent and undermine the authority of states.

Still other actors in the evolving international system today are groups of private citizens in NGOs that confront nation-states and national sovereignty by actively inserting themselves. This is a dramatic transformation that often is overlooked. When the Economic and Social Council of the United Nations first granted official consultative status to NGOs in 1948, for example, the number was forty-eight. Today there are more than 5,000. These organizations, plus many others, operate internationally, building networks across borders and mobilizing support for particular policies when they believe that governments have not been sufficiently responsive to their concerns. They range from those focused on the environment such as Greenpeace, or on hunger such as Oxfam, to philanthropic organizations such as the Ford Foundation, the Rockefeller Foundation, and the Gates Foundation. They also include those specifically interested in aspects of force and statecraft such as the Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists, Carnegie Endowment for International Peace, Center for Security Studies, Institute for the Study of War, International Crisis Group, and Nuclear Threat Initiative.

Particularly in issues of human rights, NGOs directly pressure and challenge states, since states are usually the greatest violators of rights. They contest the claims that national sovereignty allows government leaders to do whatever they wish to their own people without fear of ever being held responsible. It is estimated that there are well over 26,000 human rights NGOs operating in the world today. Amnesty International (claiming more than 7,000,000 members and supporters around the world), the International Committee of the Red Cross, Human Rights Watch, and Médecins sans frontières have extensive influence. Others, such as the Afro-Asian Peoples' Solidarity Organization, Asian Coalition of Human Rights Organizations, or Arab Organization for Human Rights, transcend borders within regions. Together, they argue that the protection of victims of abuses within states should be matters of legitimate global standards, thereby eroding traditional boundaries between "domestic" and "international" jurisdictions. Some measure of the threat that these NGOs present to states can be seen in the often extraordinary efforts made by certain governments, including those of China and Russia, to silence and to shut them down completely.

The impact of these NGOs—greatly enhanced by globalized communication technology that places power in the hands of those previously marginalized or excluded—sometimes has been phenomenal. In fact, their influence has helped break the monopoly of nation-states to control information and to conduct foreign affairs as they wished by creating what has been called the "advocacy revolution." Human rights NGOs can have great influence on public opinion and the emergence and empowerment of transnational civil society, especially in an age of public diplomacy. This is demonstrated by their successful campaigns to enact the International Convention Against Torture, the International Convention to Ban Land Mines, and the Paris Accords on climate change, among others. There are times when their highly motivated and Internet and social media connected networks can be mobilized long before nation-states can act or when political restraints prevent any governmental action at all. Indeed, said one United Nations official recently, "Without the people of the NGOs, our program for human rights would be a mere shadow of itself."

If any doubts about the growth in the prominence and influence of these transnational, nonstate actors and their capacity to challenge nation-states and national sovereignty, to possess sufficient power to threaten the ability of governments to protect their security and the well-being of their own people, and to enormously influence contemporary global affairs in the evolving international system remained after all these developments, they should have been irrevocably shattered by the premeditated terrorist attacks of September 11, 2001—a date now known simply as 9/11.

TERRORISTS AND THE "GLOBAL WAR ON TERROR"

Within less than two shocking hours on this single day, nearly 3,000 people were deliberately killed in New York City, Washington, D.C., and rural Pennsylvania, starkly revealing the power of terrorist cells to use commercial aircraft as weapons to destroy human lives and wreak havoc. Osama bin Laden, a radical Islamic militant, and his nonstate terrorist organization known as al-Qaeda based in faraway Afghanistan, claimed responsibility. He described the suicide strikes as "blessed attacks" against the "Great Satan" of the United States, which he accused of supporting Israel against the Palestinians, violating Islam's holiest sites with its military presence in Saudi Arabia, and spreading a message of secularism and materialism that threatened the beliefs of more than a billion Muslim followers around the globe. Emboldened by this successful attack, he ominously declared: "We no longer fear the so-called Great Powers."

Terrorism possesses a long history of using violence against innocent civilians to leverage the psychology of fear. Attacks had been made on American and other targets previously, but never before had a single episode made the world so painfully aware of its collective vulnerability to this kind of nonstate actor. Indeed, the most powerful military on the planet could not stop a small number of terrorists willing to die for their cause and armed only with a few box cutters. Although the main target had been the United States, eighty different countries lost citizens in the attack. The international community reacted with outrage. Almost all nations expressed sympathy and support, with even the leading French newspaper

Le Monde memorably declaring: "We are all Americans now." "All of us," continued Annan, "feel deep shock and revulsion at the cold-blooded viciousness of this attack. All of us condemn it and those who planned it—whoever they may be—in the strongest possible terms . . . A terrorist attack on one country is an attack on humanity as a whole. All nations of the world must work together to identify the perpetrators and bring them to justice."

This devastating attack became a seminal event, forcing the world to confront the fact that terrorism presented a security threat that raised extremely difficult questions about the vulnerability of even the strongest of states, the effectiveness of the international system, and the role of force and statecraft. Collective intelligence sources revealed the extensive and highly concealed network of terrorist cells with a worldwide reach, and this persuaded most countries that this global challenge required a global response. NATO gave the United States its full support within twenty-four hours of the 9/11 attacks by invoking Article Five of its founding treaty for the first time, stating that an attack on one of its members was an attack on them all. The United Nations Security Council and General Assembly then quickly created the Counter-Terrorism Committee and set about to develop specific security measures to identify and apprehend suspected terrorists, to facilitate greater cooperation among intelligence services, and to freeze the financial assets and prohibit the transfer of funds to those supporting terrorism.

But major issues remained. Terrorist groups did not control specific territory and did not appear to be intimidated by deterrence or coercive diplomacy as used against nation-states. American leaders therefore concluded that the actual use—rather than the threat—of force would serve as the best response. Although it did not issue a declaration of war, the U.S. Congress passed with only one dissenting vote the 2001 Authorization for the Use of Military Force, a resolution granting the president power to use force against those who had aided the attacks. The United States thus quickly launched retaliatory cruise missile attacks and bombing raids against al-Qaeda targets and the radical Taliban regime that harbored bin Laden in Afghanistan. Ground forces followed immediately with an invasion. Little did they know that they would confront some of the very same individuals and Islamic fundamentalist forces of *mujahideen* that they had armed to fight the Soviets in the 1980s. Nevertheless, at the time the United States received not only widespread domestic and international support for this military action, but also the actual contributions of many states willing to commit forces and participate in a coalition to fight against these terrorists.

Such remarkable and widespread support for the United States, however, did not last long. There began to be serious concerns about the escalation of the rhetoric about what American leaders increasingly, broadly, and indiscriminately called the "global war on terror." In his State of the Union speech in January 2002, for example, President George W. Bush said nothing about the Taliban or bin Laden. Instead, he argued, "What we have found in Afghanistan confirms that, far from ending there, our war against terror is only beginning." Bush then went on to dangerously simplify the complexities of the world by claiming that other nations were either "for us or against us" and expansively claimed the existence of "the Axis of Evil," asserting the existence of a connection between Iraq, Iran, and North Korea in their support of terrorism. His national security advisor, Condoleezza Rice, ominously declared that these governments now had been "put on notice." By May, this ever-expanding list included Cuba, Libya, and Syria. The Department of Defense then announced a rapid acceleration of its Integrated Global Presence and Basing Strategy to restructure and reposition combat brigades from their Cold War bases in Germany and South Korea in order to increase its military capacity to project force globally as a means of fighting a protracted struggle against terrorism.

International anxiety and alienation became even greater in September when the administration released a document entitled *The National Security Strategy of the United States of America, 2002.* This unusually swaggering and combative statement enunciated the "Bush Doctrine," asserting unmatched American superiority, declaring that armed force would no longer be considered as a last resort, and that the United States henceforth would take unilateral and preemptive action whenever it chose to do so. Other nations reacted with outrage, arguing that such strident and arrogant assertions of preeminence, preemption, and unilateralism not only violated the rule of law as embodied in the United Nations Charter's provisions regarding the use of force, but in the context of ever-growing and unparalleled American military capabilities, presented extraordinarily serious threats to peace and security for the entire evolving international system.

Their fears were only exacerbated when Secretary of State Colin Powell pressed the United Nations Security Council for a resolution explicitly authorizing the use of armed force against Iraq. He tried to argue that there existed a "nexus between Iraq and the al-Qaeda terrorist network" and to claim that Saddam possessed stockpiles of "weapons of mass destruction" that posed an "imminent threat." But most other national leaders and professionals believed that sufficient, credible evidence simply did not exist for these charges to be persuasive—and said so. They worried that the United States was trying to exploit the expansive expressions like "terrorists" and "global war terror" as excuses or justifications for pursuing completely different objectives. The French and the Russians therefore threatened to cast vetoes, as did the Chinese. Although they had participated in sanctions against Iraq and threatened significant consequences against Saddam, the overwhelming majority of other countries seriously doubted that any connection existed between terrorism and Iraq, and wanted United Nations inspectors to be given time to actually find the alleged weapons.

This incensed President Bush, who resented being challenged. He lashed out, accusing the United Nations of making itself "irrelevant" and declaring that he did not need a "permission slip" to take military action. Knowing that he could not obtain the necessary authorization from the Security Council for a mandate to use force, he refused to even bring a resolution to a vote at all. He instead launched a war in 2003 against Iraq. Bush and his advisors confidently announced that American technological superiority would completely "shock and awe" the opponent and that victory would come quickly, easily, and inexpensively.

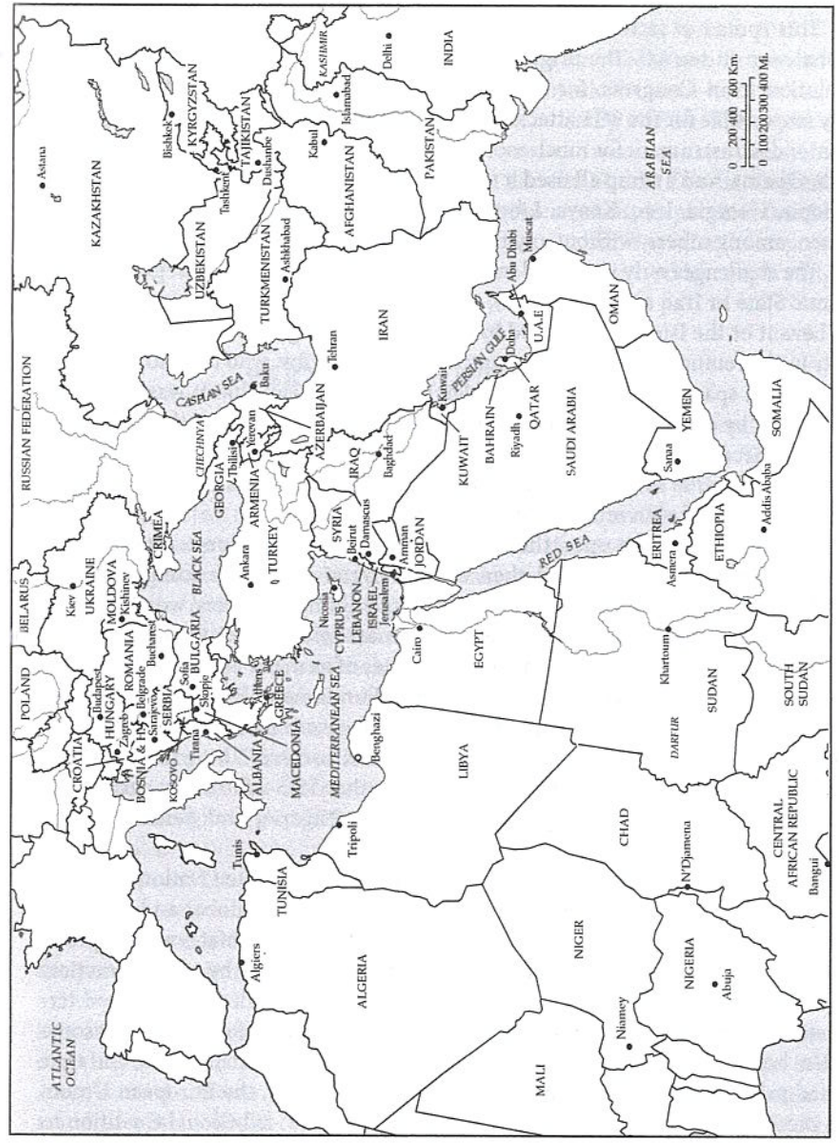
The results proved to be very different. Indeed, the invasion against Iraq turned into a protracted insurgency that lasted for years, severely draining America's resources at home and damaging its reputation abroad. The alleged weapons of mass destruction were never found because they did not exist. Although the war brought Saddam's tyranny to an end and afforded Iraqis an opportunity to create

a new government, it created a massive humanitarian tragedy, exacerbated bitter Sunni–Shia rivalries throughout the Middle East, produced geopolitical chaos, and strengthened the position of Iran in the region. All this forced the commander of U.S. Central Command, General Anthony Zinni, to declare that it had been "the wrong war at the wrong time with the wrong strategy." Even the National Intelligence Council concluded: "[T]he Iraq war made the overall terrorism problem worse."

At the same time, the war in Afghanistan against al-Qaeda and the Taliban became the longest war in American history. Thousands of troops were sent into this conflict by their political leaders. Estimates placed the cost of supporting each solider there at $1,000,000 per year. Despite the efforts, sacrifices, new offenses, surges and drawdowns, counterinsurgency and special operations strategies, changes in commanders, the mission by U.S. Navy SEALs that killed bin Laden in 2011, and an historic election for Afghanistan, little seemed to be accomplished. After more than eighteen years, the Taliban still remained a serious political and military force in more than half of the country, terrorist attacks occurred almost daily, corruption increased, and coalition partners pulled out. Afghanistan gave every appearance of living up to its description from the nineteenth century as "the graveyard of empires." But then not everyone paid attention to this past. Indeed, as the Pentagon's own special inspector general noted recently, the military effort was undermined from the very beginning by arrogance and by an ignorance of the "historical, social, legal, and political traditions" of the country.

The human and material costs of the wars in Afghanistan and Iraq were staggering. Nearly 3,000,000 Americans served and sacrificed in deployments to these war zones. We will never know how many millions of refugees were created. We will never know how many people, including men and women in uniform, contractors, and civilians, were killed, meeting their deaths from weapons ranging from sophisticated precision-guided Hellfire missiles fired from Predator drones to small handguns or simple, but very deadly, homemade suicide bombs or improvised explosive devices (IEDs). Reliable estimates report that the United States spent well over $5,000,000,000,000 on these campaigns, almost entirely on credit, which helped to drive the country into staggering debt. Moreover, in the name of fighting the "global war on terror," the United States and several other countries at times suspended the rule of law at home and abroad, conducted warrantless wiretaps, and apprehended and detained suspects, hiding them in "black sites" and sometimes torturing them.

Although further terrorist attacks on American soil were successfully thwarted, Islamic fundamentalist assaults actually expanded in scope and increased after 9/11. Thousands of innocent victims suffered death or maiming while simply riding on commuter trains, sleeping in their beds, shopping in stores, studying in classrooms, relaxing on beaches, drinking in bars, worshiping in prayer, or simply trying to survive in dangerous war zones. Unrelenting attacks continued year after year in Afghanistan, Iraq, and Pakistan. Hundreds of others occurred, including those with considerable loss of life in 2002 in Indonesia; 2004 in Spain; 2005 in Britain; 2008 in India (as will be discussed more fully in Chapter 11); 2012 in Libya; 2014 in Nigeria, Egypt, and Syria; 2015 in France, Nigeria, and Egypt; 2017 in Egypt and Turkey; 2018 in Somalia, Nigeria, and



Turmoil in the Evolving System

Iran; and 2019 in Kenya and Sri Lanka. At the same time, terrorist cells and networks, often with increasing sophistication using the Internet, Twitter accounts, and video sharing platforms to secure new recruits, grew in Europe, Central and South Asia, the Middle East, the Arabian peninsula, and highly troubled areas of trans-Sahara and East Africa.

This spread of terrorism, in turn, led to an ever-burgeoning and borderless "global war on terror." The original Authorization for the Use of Military Force resolution from Congress, for example, was designed to confront those specifically responsible for the 9/11 attacks in 2001. Through time, however, it became an open-ended instrument for much more expansive targets and purposes. Presidents Bush, Obama, and Trump all used it to justify military actions in Djibouti, Eritrea, Ethiopia, Georgia, Iraq, Kenya, Libya, Niger, the Philippines, Somalia, Syria, and Yemen, among others, without any further Congressional debate or approval.

The challenges only increased with the emergence of the terrorist group of the Islamic State in Iraq and Syria (ISIS), also known as the Islamic State of Iraq and the Levant or the Islamic State, and by its Arabic language acronym Daesh. It had roots in the remnants of Saddam's Sunni-dominated army, who took advantage of ungoverned spaces in weak states. Undeterred by criticism that it was not really a "state" or by charges from Muslim religious leaders and scholars that it was not "Islamic" because it warped the real teachings and virtues of Islam, it nevertheless proclaimed itself to be a self-styled caliphate, or strict theocratic religious-political government based on a model from the seventh century.

ISIS suddenly burst upon the world in 2014 when it unexpectedly launched lethal attacks against Iraq and then against Syria. It quickly conquered vast swaths of territory in both countries, capturing billions of dollars' worth of bank assets, oil fields and refineries, tanks, and armaments with which to extend its fight. By the end of 2015, ISIS controlled the fates of as many as 8,000,000 people who fell victim to its extraordinary brutality. Fundamentalist indoctrinations, persecutions, sexual violence, and mass executions were accompanied by highly public mutilations, beheadings, crucifixions, and torture. The widespread attention given to these developments inspired other ISIS-affiliated terrorists to launch insurgencies into Egypt, Lebanon, Libya, Nigeria, and Yemen, among other locations.

Given these developments, it is not surprising that the United Nations Security Council would reach the conclusion that ISIS presented "a global and unprecedented threat to international peace and security." All member states were urged to follow the United Nations Global Counter-Terrorism Strategy by taking practical measures such as freezing sources of funding, stopping the flow of recruited terrorists, denying access to weapons, and sharing intelligence information. But some leaders believed that these efforts would never be sufficient to defeat ISIS, and thus turned to military force. Seventy nations, as well as NATO, the European Union, and the Arab League, for example, agreed to join the U.S.-led Global Coalition to Counter ISIS. Others chose to fight ISIS terrorists in their own ways, including states that would never agree to cooperate on other matters, such as Iran, Israel, Russia, and Pakistan. Still other partners included a number of nonstate actors such as the armed forces of the Kurdish *Peshmerga* and even other radical Islamist groups such as Hamas and Hezbollah. Through time, their combined efforts and military strikes began to push ISIS forces out of their fortified strongholds, reclaim thousands of square miles of territory in Iraq and Syria, and seriously degrade its infrastructure and networks.

The losses suffered by both ISIS and al-Qaeda meant that they were down—but not out. Indeed, they appeared to have a new lease on life when the United States suddenly pulled its forces that had countered them out of Syria in 2019. They, their affiliates, and others like Al-Shabaab, Boko Haram, Lashkar-e Taiba, and the Taliban continue to demonstrate their ability to break the once-held monopoly of states alone to possess armed force and launch deadly attacks. This presents a widely shared, global threat. It explains why so many diverse nations from Africa, the Americas, the Asia Pacific region, Europe, and the Middle East have agreed to actively participate in collective efforts to combat terrorism, despite the often fierce differences between themselves. As such, it cannot not help but raise the important issue in force and statecraft of whether interests are best served by cooperating as partners and/or competing as rivals.

PARTNERS AND/OR RIVALS?

Successful statecraft always has appreciated the fact that international politics—like all aspects of life lived with others—revolves around relationships. These, quite naturally, involve a mixture of intertwined cooperation and competition. This, indeed, is the crux of international relations. The members of every international system in history always have had to wrestle with the extent to which they would be partners and/or rivals with each other. They came to reach a critical conclusion: *that complete rivalry in anarchy is intolerable, while complete partnership is unattainable.* This led most of them to see the necessity of avoiding extremes by balancing themselves at some point along a fluid scale of cooperative partnerships and contentious rivalries. At times they realized that they could not attain what they wanted solely by themselves and that they needed others in facing common challenges and dangers. Shared interests and values brought them together as partners in various agreements, coalitions, or alliances. Simply stated, they believed that there was strength in numbers and that allies could become force multipliers. On other occasions, they vehemently disagreed and became bitter adversaries competing against each other. Their particular position at any given time depended on the circumstances.

When the Cold War ended, for example, the United States suddenly became the preeminent state in the world. It stood at a veritable pinnacle of power. Its major rival had collapsed and it now possessed an unparalleled ability to use its political influence, its wealth, its values, and its military might to shape the evolving international system. For precisely this reason, the persons whom Americans elected as president and what policies they pursued with such unmatched power would be watched with utmost care and caution by all others who had a great stake in the outcome. We therefore need to turn our attention to these individuals as well.

From the very beginning of his presidency, George H. W. Bush sought to address this concern directly. He drew on his vast personal experience in statecraft over many years and articulated the theme of partnership in building a

"New World Order." In a widely quoted 1991 speech before the General Assembly, he declared that although "the United States is now the world's only remaining superpower," it

> has no intention of striving for a Pax Americana. However, we will remain engaged. We will not pull back and retreat into isolationism. We will offer friendship and leadership, and in short, we seek a Pax Universalis, built upon shared responsibilities and aspirations.

Bush's words were matched by actions. He actively engaged with allies and the United Nations, helped to secure the peaceful reunification of Germany, negotiated the North American Free Trade Agreement (NAFTA) with neighbors Canada and Mexico, and worked with Gorbachev to sign the Strategic Arms Reduction Treaty (START). Nowhere were his skills in partnerships more evident that when he played a major role in forging the successful coalition for collective security against Saddam. When starvation struck Somalia, he sent American troops to help with the international effort to distribute food and save lives, announcing that he could not ignore shared global responsibilities and aspirations "even though the United States has no military, economic, or political interests at stake in such crises."

This pattern of working as partners with others was followed by Bill Clinton when he assumed the presidency in 1993. His administration coincided with the time of growing globalization, and he and his advisors wanted to follow what they called the "doctrine of engagement." They envisioned an activist role for the United States engaged with others in the evolving international system. Evidence of this could be seen in the efforts to strengthen international institutions, to support the creation of the WTO, to launch the Partnership for Peace Program as a means of building better relations between NATO and other states in Europe and those once subjugated by Soviet Union, to strengthen the security and economic architecture in the Asia-Pacific region, to endorse the Kyoto Accords for global environmental protections, and to provide funding and technical assistance to former Soviet states to help them dismantle their nuclear arsenals. Clinton also worked with the broad international community and NGOs to protect human rights by creating tribunals for those responsible for genocide in the former Yugoslavia and Rwanda and then signing the Rome Treaty to establish the International Criminal Court. He hoped that these efforts at cooperation and inclusiveness would be enhanced in 1997 by naming Madeleine Albright, the former U.S. ambassador to the United Nations, as the first woman to ever hold the position of secretary of state.

Even in the most challenging area of force and statecraft, the Clinton administration attempted to work in partnership with others and to avoid unilateral military action. This was not easy. One of the reasons involved sharp differences of opinion over political-military doctrine and the use of armed force in humanitarian intervention. Another debate centered around whether armed force should be employed in gradually restricted and limited ways, or used overwhelmingly from the beginning on a huge scale in order to achieve a decisive outcome quickly. These controversies were complicated by a number of members of Congress who refused to appropriate funds for the United States to pay its dues to the United Nations.

But policy also suffered as a result of the president's own personal weaknesses, resulting in scandal and impeachment for lying under oath about a sexual affair, and for which he had no one to blame but himself.

Nevertheless, and despite whatever problems exist, challenges persist and issues of force and statecraft cannot be ignored by any president. There were times when Clinton acted alone, as he did when ordering surgical cruise missile attacks against suspected terrorist bases in Afghanistan and Sudan. But in most cases, he worked in partnership with others. This was particularly evident in his willingness to use armed force for humanitarian intervention to protect civilians victimized by civil war, state collapse, or oppressive governments. He worked with Britain, France, Turkey, and others, for example, in using air power to enforce "no-fly zones" in Iraq to protect the Kurds and Shia populations from attacks by Saddam. He made considerable effort to obtain Security Council support for the sending of American troops to Haiti to help restore democracy in 1994. Clinton worked in close collaboration with the United Nations in Bosnia during 1995 and with NATO allies in Kosovo during 1999 by using air strikes against Serbian military and communication targets in order to protect civilians against atrocities and genocidal "ethnic cleansing," by deploying a peacekeeping force to separate the parties and participate in reconstruction, and then by supporting the prosecution of Milosevic in the name of protecting human rights and advancing international criminal law.

It did not initially appear that there would be any drastic change of course in this pattern of cooperation when George W. Bush became president in 2001. He had frequently declared as a candidate that he intended to work in partnership with other nations, to work closely with the United Nations like his father, to pursue a "humble" foreign policy, and to be "judicious as to how to use the military." During his inaugural address he announced to America and the world: "We will show purpose without arrogance."

Within a very short period of time, however, the new administration deliberately removed the United States from several international initiatives and agreements. These ranged from the environmental protections of the Kyoto Accord to the banning of land mines and restrictions on the spread of small arms and light weapons. Bush took the unprecedented diplomatic step of "unsigning" the treaty establishing the International Criminal Court, refused to participate in a conference to provide verification measures for the Biological Weapons Convention, repudiated the Comprehensive Test Ban Treaty, and abrogated the Anti-Ballistic Missile Treaty, which had served as the foundation of strategic nuclear arms control.

Although the theme of partnership resonated loudly in the aftermath of 9/11 and the initial phases of the war against the Taliban, al-Qaeda, and bin Laden in Afghanistan, it collapsed with the unilateralism of *The National Security Strategy of the United States, 2002*. The country's possession of "unprecedented—and unequaled—strength and influence in the world," the document declared, presented "a time of opportunity for America." To take full advantage of this unipolar moment, it announced that policy henceforth would be based not on broad norms and restraints of international order but rather "on a distinctly American internationalism that reflects the union of our values and our national interests."

The United States, it declared, intended "to lead." "In exercising our leadership, we will respect the values, judgments, and interests of our friends and partners. Still, we will be prepared to act apart when our interests and unique responsibilities require." Moreover, it asserted that it would tolerate no competitors and that the most important instrument of statecraft would be armed force: "It is time to reaffirm the essential role of American military strength. We must build and maintain our defenses beyond challenge."

Such strident pronouncements about acting "apart" and possessing armed forces "beyond challenge" produced shock and deep concerns among virtually all other nations in the world. But they marked only a prelude to the veritable chasm that opened when the United States invaded Iraq in 2003. The launching of this war could hardly be described as an act of "self-defense" by any stretch of the United Nations Charter. It was a *preventive* war against an uncertain and potential threat in the distance, rather than a *preemptive* war against a direct and imminent threat at hand that could only be averted by force. As such, for many it crossed a major threshold of legitimacy and thereby created a crisis over the fundamental principles that should guide the evolving international system and its search for peace and security. No one posed the central question more directly than German foreign minister Joschka Fischer, who asked pointedly: "What kind of world order do we want?"

For some Americans, the answer to this question could be found in the *National Security Strategy of the United States, 2002* and its call for them to become the undisputed leader of the world. They embraced the view of President George W. Bush, Vice President Richard Cheney, Secretary of Defense Donald Rumsfeld, Deputy Secretary of Defense Paul Wolfowitz, and Under Secretary of State John Bolton that America was entitled to act alone, wielding its unparalleled military superiority without the restraints of international norms or collective decision making. They welcomed the much-quoted opinion piece by David Frum and Richard Perle, authors of *An End to Evil*, who argued that the United Nations had become "an obstacle to our national security" and boasted "that the United States will in the end do whatever it has to do, regardless of what the United Nations says."

For those who looked to partnership and collective security to maintain order, these positions presented nothing short of an existential threat. "In an open world," said President Jacques Chirac of France, "no one can live in isolation, no one can act alone in the name of all, and no one can accept the anarchy of a society without rules." Annan delivered an unusually impassioned and sharp condemnation of American policy, declaring that "unilateralism" amounted to a dangerous assault on the "collective action" envisioned by Franklin Roosevelt and other Americans who helped create the United Nations. He warned:

> This logic represents a fundamental challenge to the principles on which, however imperfectly, world peace and stability have rested for the last fifty-eight years. My concern is that, if it were to be adopted, it could set precedents that resulted in a proliferation of the unilateral and lawless use of force, with or without justification.

Annan concluded that "we have come to a fork in the road. This may be a moment no less decisive than 1945 itself when the United Nations was founded."

The outrage intensified. To most other governments and to the hundreds of thousands around the globe who protested at the beginning of the Iraq War, as well as to critics within the United States itself, America's unilateralism and claims to be the unrivaled leader of the world demonstrated a sharp turn from partnership into rivalry. They also saw it as an unwillingness to recognize the interests and perspectives of others, as well as a rejection of broad-based international security and the just war tradition. Criticism from adversaries and extremists who bitterly detested America's powerful global influence could be expected, but now it came from close friends and allies. Long-time members of NATO spoke openly of American "arrogance," "aggressive nationalism," "unilateralism," "hegemony," "self-indulgence," "bullying," and "imperialism." They referred to the United States as a "hyperpower" and "the new Rome," accusing it of being bent on domination. Even British prime minister Tony Blair, who closely allied himself with the United States, felt compelled to warn a joint session of Congress: "What America must do is show . . . a partnership built on persuasion, not command." The normally friendly BBC began a series of critical broadcasts in 2004 on the subject of the American "Age of Empire," which concluded that the United States could end up being "not only the most powerful country in the world but also the most distrusted country in the world."

As this distrust increased, it became a disaster for public diplomacy. Indeed, the highly respected Pew Research Center, which conducted thousands of interviews in many different countries as part of its Global Attitudes Project, discovered a dramatic shift from a spontaneous outpouring of sympathy toward the United States after 9/11 to a spike in anti-American attitudes following its invasion of Iraq and revelations (made even worse by shocking photographs) of prisoners subjected to torture. Those surveyed expressed growing suspicion of its motives, anger over what they characterized as its "my-way-or-the-highway" approach and failure to take others into account, and outright fear of its unleashed—and unchecked—power projected across the globe. Despite the things that they admired about Americans and their country, many actually perceived the United States as the greatest threat to peace and security, more menacing than Iran, North Korea, or even terrorism itself. They saw massive force, but little statecraft.

These extremely negative opinions about the United States and its role in the world began to shift in 2008 with the election of Barack Obama as president of the United States. Even before he had taken any substantive actions or achieved any policy accomplishments, global opinion polls for Obama reached nearly astronomical ratings of support, revealing widespread anticipation that he and his new administration would turn away from the rivalries of his predecessor and move toward more serious partnerships.

In a number of areas their hopes appeared justified. He began by announcing a policy "reset" of relations with Russia, expressing a desire to leave former disputes behind and to build a new base for constructive interactions. With a speech in Cairo, Egypt, he called across the chasm opened by the 9/11 attacks for a "new beginning" and a "partnership between America and Islam," "based on mutual interest and mutual respect." When addressing the 2010 graduating class of the U.S. Military Academy at West Point, Obama observed that the United States was "clear-eyed about the shortfalls of the international system," but needed to

fully appreciate that history taught important lessons about the dangers of "acting alone" and "stepping out of the currents of cooperation." America, he declared, must understand where its interests and values coincide with others in the world, support universal human rights, have its military forces work more closely with statecraft and the renewed engagement of its diplomats, actively shape stronger international norms and institutions, and "build new partnerships."

Several policies clearly marked a change of direction, prompting Secretary of State Hillary Clinton to speak of the necessity of formulating what she called "21st Century Statecraft." To begin, Clinton, a Democrat, developed a close working relationship with Secretary of Defense Robert Gates, a Republican, to better coordinate force and statecraft. One indication of this could be seen in the significant increase in the number of advisors from the Bureau of Political-Military Affairs within the State Department attached to the Pentagon and posted to component commands and major headquarters and embedded in military units assigned to combat areas. This was followed by the 2010 *Quadrennial Diplomacy and Development Review*, drawing attention to the relationship between security, peace, justice, and human rights and emphasizing the principle of the "indivisibility of security." International and national security, it noted, depends on individual security where people can enjoy some measure of their human rights, for where they do not, the results are escalating violence, atrocities, extremism, and humanitarian disasters.

The Obama administration went on to negotiate the New Strategic Arms Reduction Treaty (START) with Russia, initiated the Nuclear Security Summit of world leaders to create ways of keeping weapons-grade nuclear material out of the hands of terrorists, worked with the Security Council to coordinate policy toward Iran and North Korea, partnered with the Arab League and the United Nations and then NATO in a multilateral mission to defend civilians from attacks by the dictatorship of Muammar Gaddafi in Libya, and tried to end the unpopular American-led war in Iraq. At the same time, it actively participated in the new United Nations Human Rights Council, endorsed the shift from a narrow G-8 to the wider membership of the G-20 (thereby including Brazil, China, and India) in order to enhance international cooperation in economic growth and financial stability, initiated a new "pivot" toward Asia and its growing influence, engaged in negotiations to create the Trans-Pacific Partnership, and backed reforms to give emerging powers more influence in the International Monetary Fund and governance of the global economy. In 2015, the administration reached agreement after highly complex negotiations with many other partners designed to placed limits on Iran's nuclear development program, as we shall see in Chapter 10. This was followed by successes in working with both governments and nonstate actors to secure the Paris Accords addressing climate change by placing restraints on greenhouse emissions. Obama then began a process ending decades of hostility by reconciling American relations with Cuba. Throughout all of these negotiations, both Hillary Clinton and her successor John Kerry spoke frequently about the necessity of recognizing America's "shared security" with other nations.

These many efforts at partnership certainly did not eliminate all differences and rivalries, however. Highly critical members of Congress unceasingly expressed their anger or dismay over such policies, complaining that Obama was

much too timid and overcautious in exercising American power. International observers who initially had been so enthusiastic about his election became increasingly disillusioned when their expectations were not met. With reference to wars and the struggle against terrorism, for example, they criticized his "surge" in the number of troops sent into the war in Afghanistan, the continuing violence and sectarian strife in Iraq, the escalation of military operations into Pakistan and Yemen with drone strikes that often killed civilians, and inability to end the widely discredited trials of terrorist suspects held indefinitely at the prison camp at Guantanamo Bay in Cuba. Obama also was criticized for weakening America's position in the world by not doing enough to counter the effects of the 2008 global financial crisis or of failing to sufficiently deter or counteract the rise of China and Russian aggression against Ukraine. Many complained about his failure to use his influence on Israel to protect the rights of Palestinians and advance peace in the Middle East. Still others, including Kerry, harshly criticized Obama for his unwillingness to use force when it might have made a difference in the civil war unfolding in Syria.

The savage and catastrophic war in Syria began simply enough with only a small anti-government protest in downtown Damascus in 2011. But fearing that the "Arab Spring" uprisings that overthrew dictators in Tunisia, Egypt, and Libya might happen to him, Syrian president Bashar al-Assad sent his armed forces into the streets to crush the protestors. Rather than quell the disturbance, however, this action quickly led to an armed insurgency and then civil war with a wide range of highly divergent opposition forces. Given its larger implications for geopolitics, as well as the bitter Shia–Sunni sectarian divide within Islam, the conflict became a proxy war between regional and global powers. It attracted weapons, money, and technical advisors, as well as troops and irregular fighters, from Algeria, the Arab League, Britain, France, the Hezbollah organization in Lebanon, Iran, Iraq, Qatar, Russia, Saudi Arabia, Turkey, and the United States, among others, often fighting on opposing sides.

Years of intense and protracted violence in Syria certainly confirmed the "indivisibility of security" in our time. They brought massive human rights abuses, overwhelming disruptions and dislocations, destruction throughout the entire country, hundreds of thousands of wounded, more than 560,000 deaths, and an estimated 12,000,000 displaced persons. This, in turn, produced a flood of millions of refugees fleeing across national borders to save their lives, inundating all neighboring countries and Europe and creating domestic, regional, and international consequences of monumental proportions. The war unleashed something else as well. As we have seen, its chaos and lawlessness enabled extremists to flourish, including ISIS, the powerful and notorious jihadist group.

These upheavals and their challenges of force and statecraft could not help but have profound influence on the evolution of the international system itself. But that was not all. The emergence of new leaders did the same. This could be seen with vivid starkness in the rise of three men: Donald Trump, Xi Jinping, and Vladimir Putin.

After an unusually divisive election, Trump became president of the United States in 2017. He was the first person to ever hold this position without any experience in political office or high military rank at all. Given the power that now was

his to wield as president and as commander-in-chief, the nation and the world thus watched with both interest and concern how his untested and impulsive but assertive style would impact international partnerships and rivalries. He answered this question immediately by using his inaugural address to emphatically announce: "From this day forward, a new vision will govern our land. From this moment on, it's going to be America First."

With this objective at the forefront, President Trump quickly declared that he would make dramatic changes in American foreign policy. He began by publicly disparaging professional intelligence officers and diplomats, vowing to "clean house." To do this, he announced that he planned to "rein in" the intelligence services by appointing political loyalists and slash the State Department's budget by nearly a third, eliminate many career leadership positions, and either leave a number of ambassadorships completely vacant or fill them with an unusual number of political appointees. He quickly pulled America out of negotiations to build the Trans-Pacific Partnership with eleven other nations in Asia and the Pacific that had been designed to counter Chinese economic power. He criticized the United Nations as being "incompetent," challenged the authority of the International Court of Justice, described the European Union as a "foe," and in a speech before the General Assembly announced that the United States now rejected internationalism, multilateralism, and "the ideology of globalism." In a particularly strident move, Trump announced that he would unilaterally scrap America's obligations under the Paris Accord on climate change signed by nearly every country in the world. Further presidential statements and tweets emphasized his worldview of cutthroat rivalries, zero–sum outcomes, and the need to "restore America's sovereignty."

Trump then abandoned NAFTA and threatened to withdraw from the WTO. He unilaterally pulled the United States out of the Security Council–endorsed 2015 Joint Comprehensive Plan for Action accord dealing with Iranian nuclear capabilities, over the strong objections of all the other parties to the agreement, as we shall see in Chapter 10. Not content with these actions, he withdrew from the United Nations Educational, Social, and Cultural Organization (UNESCO) and then from the United Nations Human Rights Council representing 107 nations a day after the United Nations High Commissioner for Human Rights criticized his immigration policy that separated children from their parents at the Mexican border as "unconscionable." He then went on to provoke nearly universal condemnation by repudiating decades of carefully negotiated agreements on the emotionally charged Israeli-Palestinian conflict by unilaterally moving the U.S. embassy from Tel Aviv to the highly symbolic and contested city of Jerusalem and by expressing support for the expanded construction of controversial Israeli settlements in occupied territories, thereby abandoning any semblance of even-handedness in this extremely volatile part of the world.

With specific reference to force and statecraft, Trump described existing security alliances as "obsolete," severely antagonized long-standing allies representing democratic countries while seeking cozier relationships with authoritarian regimes, and suggested that he might abandon commitments to Japan and South Korea. At an important NATO meeting he notably refused to reaffirm the mutual defense commitment that had been the founding principle and bedrock

of trans-Atlantic security for half a century. He pulled the United States out of the Arms Trade Treaty and out of the Intermediate-Range Nuclear Forces Treaty (INF), formally ending an arms control agreement that had been a centerpiece of security for three decades and opened the door to an arms race with a new generation of missiles. There also were open clashes with high-ranking active duty and retired military officers as well as civilians within the Department of Defense when he ignored their advice over honoring alliance commitments, diverting several billion dollars away from appropriated purposes in order to spend them on building a wall on the U.S.-Mexican border, and violating ethical standards by presidential pardons of soldiers convicted of war crimes.

Such lurching, volatile, and highly disputed actions could not help but unnerve partners and embolden rivals, thereby creating serious challenges. One of these was dramatic uncertainly and instability. Lessons from history demonstrate that any system or order requires some measure of predictability. This was now in doubt. As such, it raised the issue of credibility. If America could simply pull out of its treaty commitments and refuse to honor its promises, its longtime allies and former partners quite naturally asked if it any longer could be trusted. Moreover, the drastic abandonment of partnerships and disregard for the opinions of others intensely polarized opinion within the United States itself. In doing so, it reignited the long-standing historical debate among Americans over identity: who they were, who they wanted to be, and how they should be involved with the rest of the world.

Millions of voters across the entire United States and many members of Congress, for example, enthusiastically welcomed Trump's inflammatory words and combative approach. They applauded his strident assertions about American power and sovereignty, embracing his promises to be free from the mistakes of his predecessors, from the obligations imposed by multinational agreements, and from the dangers of "foreign influence" in international organizations. They believed that other countries had hoodwinked previous presidents, were not paying their share for security, and were taking advantage of them. They thus praised him for speaking bluntly, defying conventional norms, rejecting the status quo, imposing tariffs on trade rivals, closing the nation's borders to racial and religious "undesirables," and pursuing "go it alone" policies that cast off the restraints of treaties and other entanglements. Such actions, they argued, and as the expression of the time went, would "Make America Great Again."

Not everyone was so enamored. Indeed, many critics, especially those among professional diplomats, military and intelligence officers, and other specialists in security issues, warned that Trump's personality and his policies presented grave dangers for America and for the world. Even his former secretary of state Rex Tillerson, former secretary of defense James Mattis, and former chief-of-staff John Kelly, among other officials who worked for him, worried publicly about his impulsiveness and prejudices, lack of strategic direction and coherence, difficulty in facing inconvenient evidence and telling the truth, dearth of knowledge about history, and unwillingness to read briefings and listen to advice about the complexities of force and statecraft.

Critics observed that each time Trump abruptly and unilaterally pulled out of commitments, he demonstrated that America no longer could be trusted to be a reliable partner who honored its promises, thereby forcing allies to look elsewhere

for more reliable friends to protect their own security and interests. When he resigned from office as a matter of conscience, retired general Mattis pointedly wrote to the president:

> One core belief I have always held is that our strength as a nation is inextricably linked to the strength of our unique and comprehensive system of alliances and partnerships. While the US remains the indispensable nation in the free world, we cannot protect our interests or serve that role effectively without maintaining strong alliances and showing respect to those allies. . . . My views on treating allies with respect and also being clear-eyed about both malign actors and strategic competitors are strongly held and informed by over four decades of immersion in these issues. We must do everything possible to advance an international order that is most conducive to our security, prosperity, and values, and we are strengthened in this effort by the solidarity of our alliances.

The issue of values raised by Mattis presented yet another problem. Through time, some critics increasingly complained that Trump was overthrowing longstanding norms by abusing the vast powers of his office in foreign affairs for his own personal gain. They accused him of conducting business transactions with other governments that advanced his private interests at the expense of national interests. They also accused him of trying to use American career diplomats, other officials, and associates to pressure foreign leaders to help him gain advantage over his domestic political rivals. This charge surfaced with particular alarm after his illfated telephone call in 2019 to the president of Ukraine suggesting that the receipt of critical and congressionally approved military assistance designed to defend itself against further Russian aggression might be contingent on Ukrainians helping him in his reelection campaign. Such a breach of norms was deemed by the Trump-appointed Inspector General of the Intelligence Community to be potentially "a serious or flagrant problem or abuse" of U.S. election laws.

The serious foreign and domestic implications of these issues ignited an impeachment investigation against the president in an already fiercely partisan and often dysfunctional Congress that reflected a country sharply divided against itself. Political passions ran high, exposing deep schisms and severely testing heretofore widely accepted legal, Constitutional, and civic norms. The Democratically-controlled House voted in 2020 to impeach the president for abusing power and for obstructing its ability to gather information and obtain the testimony of witnesses. In sharp contrast, the Republican-controlled Senate refused to call any witnesses at all and voted to acquit the president of all charges, thereby keeping him in office. Now safe in his position, an emboldened Trump set out to purge a number of military, diplomatic, and intelligence professionals whom he regarded as being disloyal for providing evidence against him.

Careful observers with a broad perspective and knowledge of historical experience warned about larger systemic dangers. They knew that no international system or design for collective peace and security in history has ever survived unless those with the most power are committed to working with others and making it succeed. Along with Mattis, they viewed the weakness caused by political polarization in the country and the narrowly defined policy of "America First" as an abandonment of this responsibility. They also saw it as an abdication of

America's leadership position in the world. It was the United States, after all, that had played the major role in creating, benefiting from, and leading the treaties, alliances, norms, and institutions of the international order since 1945. The end of the Cold War had consolidated its preeminence even further. Now, they believed, this position with its enormous influence held for more than seven decades was being willingly cast away, and in the process was creating a serious vacuum.

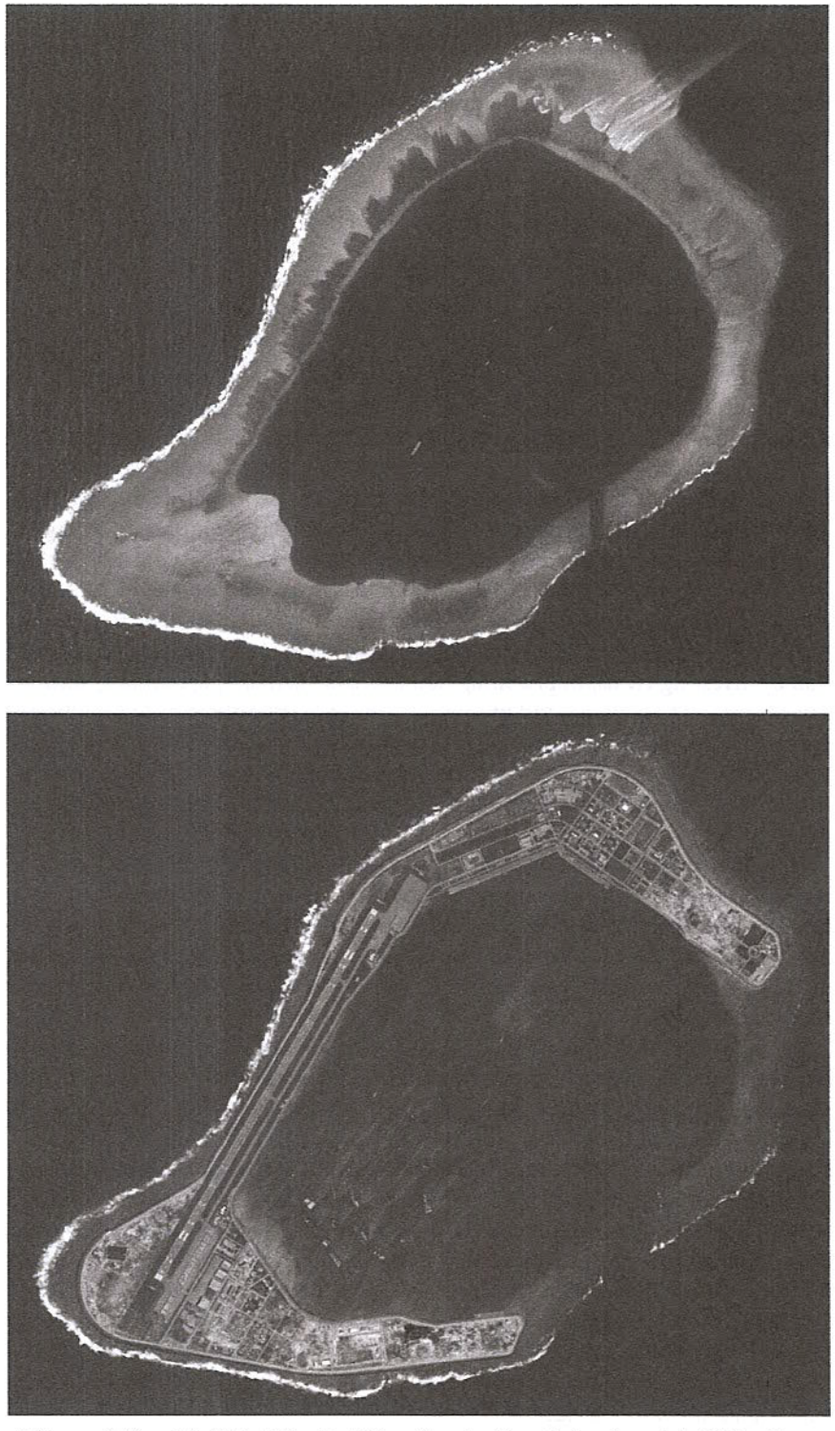
Nature abhors a vacuum—and so do geopolitics. Others, now sensing new and unexpected opportunity, saw an opening and took it. They were eager to take advantage of the diminution of American power and leadership and thus stepped in to fill the void.

The most powerful of these is the People's Republic of China. Within an incredibly short period of time, China has transformed itself from a poor and isolated country into an economic and military powerhouse with global influence. Some of this resulted from the sheer scale of size. One out of every four human beings on the planet today is Chinese, giving the country the world's largest population (1,000,000,000 more than the United States). This gives it the world's largest workforce. China boasts of an extensive market; considerable industrial and financial resources; growing technological sophistication in many areas, including 5G digital cellular networks; an expanding system of education; and a rich culture. With the People's Liberation Army, it possesses the world's largest body of men under arms.

All of these sources of power have become even more influential under Xi Jinping. Once he became party leader in 2012, he set about to consolidate his position by arresting rivals, imprisoning human rights activists, appointing allies to key government positions, and purging dozens of high-ranking military officers. A booming economy strengthened his hand even further. In 2018 he secured the option of becoming president for life, while holding the positions of general secretary of the Communist Party and chairman of the Central Military Commission. *Forbes* and *Time* magazine describe him as "the most powerful man on earth."

History shows that as states grow more powerful, so do their ambitions. It is thus not surprisingly that at a time when Trump was abandoning America's leadership and other Western leaders struggled to articulate what role their own nations should play, Xi would boldly announce that in the "new era" of the evolving international system his objective is direct: China should "take center stage in the world."

Toward this end, and with force and statecraft in mind, he has greatly increased the military budget, directing considerable resources to air, naval, and missile forces in order to expand their capacity to project armed force abroad rather than merely defend its borders. New stealth fighters, aircraft carriers and destroyers, and sophisticated space technology are being added to the arsenal. China now has its first overseas military base in the strategically located East African nation of Djibouti poised between the Indian Ocean and the southern access to the Suez Canal. It also has seized control of remote sandbars in mineral-rich and vital shipping lanes in the East and South China Seas to turn them into manmade military bases. The dramatic contrast can be seen when one compares satellite imagery of the once unspoiled and peaceful Subi Reef in the Spratly Islands group with today's elaborate port for naval ships, runways for combat aircraft, facilities for troops, and emplacements for surface-to-air and anti-ship missiles.



Before and After at Subi Reef: Physically Transforming Remote Sandbars Into Military Bases

Xi also began utilizing an array of instruments of statecraft to spread influence and advance interests. He recently and proudly announced, for example, that China has successfully achieved its goal of now possessing the largest diplomatic network of embassies, consulates, and permanent missions to international organizations in the world. At the same time he is using the country's money as muscle in economic diplomacy on a global scale by pursuing his ambitious "Belt and Road Initiative." He has already pledged more than $1,000,000,000,000 trillion toward infrastructure and energy projects linking China with more than 125 countries in Africa, Asia, Europe, Latin America, the Middle East, and Oceania to create allies and dependencies and thereby tie them to Beijing's orbit. This represents the largest foreign investment strategy by any single country in history.

The self-confidence that accompanies these developments is reflected in the speeches of Xi and the writings of Chinese strategists marking a critical shift in their view of the evolving international system and China's ascending role in it. They emphasize the need to take advantage of America's domestic turmoil and its withdrawal from the world, especially its diminished prestige and role as a credible ally and military protector of several nations in Asia. They highlight the use of their economic strength and technology as an instrument of statecraft. They also stress the necessity of developing a more muscular posture as a means of redressing perceived humiliations at the hands of the West in the past, expanding land and sea power to advance and protect their growing interests. These various policies will allow them to "share global responsibilities" and adopt what they call their "rightful place" of "Great Power mentality" (*daguo xintai*). All this helps to explain the appearance of so many new books with titles such as *China's Rise*; *A Contest for Supremacy: China, America, and the Struggle for Mastery in Asia*; *China, Inc.: How the Rise of the Next Superpower Challenges America and the World*; and *When China Rules the World: The End of the Western World and the Birth of a New Global Order.*

The evolving international system is also marked by the growing assertiveness and influence of Russia. It possesses the largest mineral-rich landmass in the world, which encompasses eleven time zones running from Europe to Asia. It also has the world's second largest nuclear arsenal. But another element is the person of its leader Vladimir Putin, a former KGB agent. From the very beginning of his presidency in 2000, he has cultivated a macho image of strength with photographs of his physical prowess riding shirtless on horseback and throwing opponents to the mat while wearing his judo black belt, and with his oft-repeated statement that "the Leningrad street taught me a rule: if a fight is inevitable you have to throw the first punch." He consolidated his authoritarian position at home by appointing political allies to critical government positions, silencing dissent, imprisoning enemies, repressing human rights activists, and strengthening the once-collapsed economy. Putin also discovered—like other leaders before and since—that he could increase his own power by deliberately stoking the emotions of rabid xenophobia and those who longed for the days when their country was feared in the world.

Once he was confident about his domestic position, he turned his energies and his power to foreign affairs. He often had described the collapse of

the former Soviet Union as "the biggest geopolitical catastrophe of the 20th century," and now set about to reverse that outcome. In 2008 he sent his armed forces into neighboring Georgia to seize Abkhazia and South Ossetia. Over the vehement objections of the United States, in 2013 he granted asylum to fugitive Edward Snowden, who had leaked classified information from America's National Security Agency.

Putin then launched a brazen military attack against Ukraine in 2014. In order to conceal the identity of his invading troops, he instructed them to wear masks and unmarked uniforms without insignia, falsely claiming that they were merely local "self-defense" troops over which he had no authority. These special forces quickly captured strategic sites, overpowered military and naval bases, and seized control of government buildings, enabling Putin to forcibly annex the entire province of Crimea into Russia. He followed this by sending additional troops, intelligence operatives, advanced weaponry, and other support to pro-Russian separatists in eastern Ukraine in order to wrest control of territory from the pro-Western government in Kiev.

Despite widespread global condemnation and economic sanctions imposed against him as punishment, Putin faced little meaningful resistance. This simply emboldened him to continue his assertive actions to extend Russian power. He dramatically increased military spending, expanded the number and scope of army exercises and fleet maneuvers, launched close-border over-flights designed to intimidate neighboring countries, and used huge public parades to showcase new weapons systems. He moved nuclear-capable stealth Iskandar missiles westward to frighten governments in Eastern Europe and the Baltic states and abruptly jettisoned security pacts dealing with plutonium and with the testing of ground-launched cruise missiles. He increased military assets in the Arctic in order to take advantage of new strategic sea lanes opening from the thawing ice cap due to climate change. He signed numerous military cooperation agreements with countries in Africa. In 2015 and 2016, Putin sent aircraft into the Syrian civil war for the first time to support President Bashar al-Assad and to strengthen Russia's influence in the Middle East. Deliberate and sustained air strikes on civilians in cities like Aleppo created such an humanitarian crisis that he was widely accused of war crimes.

There also was something more. U.S. intelligence and law enforcement services accused Putin of conducting sophisticated cyberattacks and weaponizing social media platforms in order to influence the outcome of the sharply contested 2016 American presidential election in favor of Trump. We probably will never be certain about his precise motives behind this effort, but we do know that Putin welcomed the resulting polarization and loss of confidence in democratic institutions and the subsequent retreat of the United States from its once extensive leadership in global affairs and the opportunities thereby provided for the extension of Russian influence.

Putin took full advantage of this opening and adding significantly to his military arsenal. In a widely televised 2018 speech, he boasted of the development of new cruise missiles, underwater drones, and an "invincible" intercontinental hypersonic missile capable of reaching speeds twenty-seven times the speed of sound and striking, in his words, "like a fireball." "You have failed to contain

Russia," he defiantly declared to his international rivals, ominously announcing that the nightmare of a powerful opponent they once feared had now become "the new reality."

Other strident and narrowly nationalistic leaders with little demonstrated interest in a broader international norms or order also exercised power at this time. Many of these were in the volatile Middle East. They included President Recep Tayyip Erdoğan of Turkey, Supreme Leader Ali Khamenei of Iran, Prime Minister Benjamin Netanyahu of Israel, and Crown Prince Mohammed bin Salam of Saudi Arabia. Although they led highly different forms of government, each of them, in their own way, stood widely condemned by most other nations in the world for their various violations of international law, abuses of human rights, dangerous increases in their military arsenals, and their use of armed force either by supporting terrorist groups, conducting covert operations, sending troops across borders, launching air strikes, or fighting proxy wars.

These challenges to the international order were compounded further by destabilizing developments in Europe. For several decades, European partnerships and institutions had provided enormous sources of prosperity, stability, and security. They had been carefully nurtured by leaders committed to consensus-building cooperation and democratic values. But through time, they came under assault from within and without. Some of these emerged from resentment over an institutional overreach of regulations and the fiscal irresponsibility of several member governments. Some resulted from serious disputes about cross-border migration policies, especially those involving refugees fleeing Syria's civil war. Some came from Putin's use of cyberattacks to weaken the West and covert funding to anti-NATO and anti-European Union pressure groups. Some ensued from Trump's open praise and support of politicians who campaigned on leaving or breaking up European institutions. But others emerged from the rise of anti-establishment, nationalist movements riding waves of popular discontent that (as has happened before in history) stoked the emotions of voters with vague slogans and unrealistic promises designed for domestic appeal, completely ignoring their implications for international relations.

This could be seen with the self-inflicted convulsion known as "Brexit." In 2016, an aroused British public voted in an emotional and divisive referendum to withdraw, or exit, from the European Union. This split the nation, paralyzed Parliament, and cost two prime ministers their jobs. Nothing could hide the fact that it struck a devastating blow to carefully constructed political, economic, security, and cultural partnerships that had been created in the belief that nations that worked and traded with each other are less likely to go to war with each other. After nearly four years of tortuous divorce negotiations, Europeans among the other twenty-seven member states felt dismayed, dismembered, bitter, and betrayed. The "Brexit" decision and its aftermath will go on to weaken not only the cohesion of Britain and its influence in the world, but also that of Europe, the very group of nations that had defined and dominated so much of international relations since the seventeenth century.

There have been times in history, as we have seen, when the framework of the international order comes under considerable stress and challenge. Indeed, the rise and decline of great powers and the emergence of new competitors and forces

is a classic issue in international relations. We are currently living in one of those times. The confluence of an erratic United States willingly surrendering its former leadership role and jettisoning many of its partnerships, an ascendant and ambitious China, an assertive Russia, a volatile Middle East, a diminished Britain, a fractured Europe, a variety of crises in Africa and Latin America, and challenges to heretofore widely accepted normative values and a rules-based order are creating staggering convulsions. The seriousness of the time is conveyed in the very titles of recent books: *The Jungle Grows Back: America and Our Imperiled World*; *The Empty Throne: America's Abdication of Global Leadership*; *War on Peace: The End of Diplomacy at the Decline of American Influence*; *The Great Delusion*; and *A World in Disarray.*

These many challenges of personalities, shifting trajectories of security arrangements and relative power, domestic polarization, new technologies and cyberattacks, and destabilizing forces prompted the highly respected Munich Security Conference to assess the state of the evolving international system and entitle its most recent report *The Great Puzzle: Who Will Pick Up the Pieces?* Some observers speculate that a new multipolar balance of power will emerge. They think that regional groupings might form in spheres of influence around their strongest neighbors. Countries in East and Southeast Asia and the western Pacific, for example, might find themselves in the orbit of China. Those in the Eurasian landmass areas of the former Soviet Union might discover themselves increasingly under the influence of Russia. Those in the Middle East might find themselves being pulled or pushed toward either Iran or Saudi Arabia. Those in Europe already are considering ways to create a new security framework. "We Europeans," announced German chancellor Angela Merkel in frustration, "now truly have to take our fate into our own hands." This prompted French president Emmanuel Macron to call for the creation of what he described as a "true European army" to protect the continent "from Russia, China,—and the United States." It also led to the beginnings of a debate over a question that once was unthinkable: in the face of such upheaval, should Germany for its own security now develop its own nuclear weapons?

What role the United States might play in any new balance of power remains highly uncertain. It might continue in its path of retreat from global engagement. Here, "America First" could become "America Alone." Or, it might be content to hold regional sway over the Western Hemisphere. Or, it might try containment against those revisionist powers like China and Russia seeking to overturn its once-dominant position in the world. Or, it might try to reformulate some of its remaining international alliances and partnerships in new ways; but that precious commodity of trust, once lost, will be difficult to regain.

Regardless of which path is chosen, however, the policies of the United States will greatly impact whatever balances of power emerge. Despite what some observers call the "end of an era," the "post-America world," or the "empty throne," the fact remains that the United States possesses the largest economy in the world, it is the largest contributor to the United Nations, it commands the most powerful armed force and security establishment in the world, and it controls the largest number of military bases and facilities positioned around the world. What it does—and does not do—with these instruments of statecraft will affect the world. This leads political scientist Bruce Jones to describe the challenge ahead in these words:

> The greatest risk lies not in a single peer competitor but in the erosion of systems and institutions vital to U.S. interests and a stable order. U.S. power is indispensable for international order, but not sufficient. No longer the CEO of Free World Inc., the United States now holds a position akin to that of the largest minority shareholder in Global Order LLC.

Whether any such global order will emerge with this new configuration, however, will depend on the willingness and ability of the shareholders—especially the most powerful—to go "beyond blocs" by developing some measure of partnership with each other. Although some see benefits in a balance of regional powers, others are fearful that without corresponding shared values and purpose and a broader sense of responsibility, geopolitical rivalries alone will hardly provide assurance of peace and security.

Some of those seeking to develop greater partnerships and international cooperation, not surprisingly, direct their attention toward a reformed and strengthened United Nations. Those who do so, as historian Paul Kennedy observes in *The Parliament of Man: The Past, Present, and Future of the United Nations*, will find cause for both optimism and frustration. Despite all of the structural and political restraints aligned against it, as we saw in Chapter 4, the organization has demonstrated successes in response to the aggression of North Korea against South Korea and to Saddam's invasion of Kuwait, its use of coercive sanctions and arms embargos against regimes that threatened the peace, and its development peacekeeping forces. Its counterterrorism strategies, crisis management and preventive diplomacy, relief operations in the face of tragic disasters, assistance to refugees, advancement of human rights, extension of social and economic development, establishment of international norms, campaign for international criminal law, and efforts to address globalization and complex interdependence mark additional achievements.

Yet, one also must recognize that rivalries are never absent in the United Nations. The organization is, after all, a collection of, by, and for governments of nation-states. As such, it can never do more than its members allow it to do. Blocs and alignments that divide the world thus are readily reflected in negotiating and voting behavior. There have been times when the most powerful members on the Security Council—the very ones necessary to enforce collective security—have decided that the rules did not apply to them or to their friends. Serious differences of opinion remain between them over the precise meanings of the "common interest," "self-defense," "imminent" threats, "last resort," "domestic jurisdiction," and the "Responsibility to Protect" when using armed force. Attempts to find answers to these issues and to devise both substantive norms and arrangements will continue to present formidable challenges.

At the same time, there are others who seek to advance international partnerships by adapting existing institutions or by creating new ones as a means of structuring the relationships among actors with shared interests and values in order to meet changing circumstances and common threats. This can be seen in the efforts of those who work to reform and strengthen not only the United

Nations but also other multilateral organizations such as the International Atomic Energy Agency, the International Monetary Fund, the Organization for Cooperation and Security in Europe, the Organization for Economic Cooperation and Development, or the G-20.

Others have considerably less confidence in the capacity of nation-states to avoid dangerous rivalries among themselves or to solve complex problems and threats, and thus look to nonstate actors such as transnational corporations or NGOs. One of these is the World Economic Forum, an independent, nonpartisan organization established to help find solutions to global challenges by creating collaborative partnerships. This is done by bringing together stakeholders from business, government, and civil society, including heads of state, cabinet ministers, ambassadors, senior officials from international organizations, corporate leaders and entrepreneurs, academic experts, scientists and technology pioneers, journalists, religious leaders of different faiths, labor organizers, and NGO activists to interact and address specific challenges. Its annual gatherings in Davos, Switzerland, sometimes are called the "Summit of Summits."

The future direction of the evolving international system will depend—as it always has in the past—on the extent to which the participants view themselves as partners and/or rivals. There can be no such thing as a system unless there is some measure of cooperative partnership among the major actors, but at the same time no system can expect to completely eliminate the competition between those same actors. Statecraft requires an understanding of this commixture and the capacity to find a way to live in a complex dynamic with elements of both partnership and rivalry. This is why policies that are based on simplistic notions of either "friend" or "foe," or "you are either for us or against us," are so fraught with peril.

No international system thus can possibly function or survive unless competition can be sufficiently restrained by some agreement among its actors on their shared interests and values. One of the great insights of those who created and maintained the classical system of diplomacy, as we have seen, was the realization that a balance of power can inhibit the capacity to overthrow a system, but that consensus on basic values inhibits the desire to do so. They understood that realistic calculations, rather than emotional impulses, made it essential for them to be responsible stakeholders in and of the system. They did this by recognizing their mutual vulnerability and by defining their own interests and *raison d'état* in terms of the larger collective that could regulate their rivalries, address shared threats, and thereby preserve peace and security. But the lessons learned by one generation are not always learned or accepted by those who follow, the quality of leadership changes, and agreement on fundamental values is extraordinarily difficult to achieve.

Just as those in the past had to confront the specific challenges of their time, so will those responsible for statecraft in our own time. In this endeavor, the powerful movements of globalization and complex interdependence will encourage, if not compel, the participants to see that some threats are so widespread and so difficult that no single nation or even blocs of nations, however strong, can possibly solve them alone. They will increase the incentives for cooperating by calling attention to the fact that global problems and interdependence require

global solutions and thus the forging of cooperative partnerships. These include international terrorism, the proliferation of weapons of mass destruction, human rights abuses, indebtedness and development, infectious diseases and pandemics like COVID-19, transnational crime, poverty, population growth, climate change, and environment degradation.

Other issues instead will provoke division and exacerbate rivalries. Among these, one can point to the intense arguments over the necessity and legitimate use of armed force, conflicting claims of traditional national sovereignty and those of collective security, the relationship between human rights and security, and the future of leadership from the United States and what its presence—or its absence—will mean. They also will occur over the role to be played by the United Nations, fanaticism and xenophobia that perceive international cooperation as betrayal, economic competition and the growing worldwide divide between the rich and the poor, divisions of race and religion, the intensifying polarization of cultural and political differences at home and abroad, and the ideological and strategic resurgence of authoritarianism in the world today.

Whether the evolving international system follows the path of malice and danger or that of peace and security will be determined by where we choose to be along that scale of partnership and/or rivalry. In doing so, our future may well depend on whether we can learn the lessons of how and why others have succeeded or failed when dealing with the challenges of force and statecraft in the past. It is, consequently, to this matter that we now turn in Part II.

SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER EXPLORATION

For interesting discussions about the international system at the end of the Cold War, see Philip Zelikow and Condoleezza Rice, *To Build a Better World* (New York, 2019); Alexander L. George, "The Role of Force in Diplomacy," in H. W. Brands et al. (eds.), *The Use of Force After the Cold War* (College Station, TX, 2003 ed.); John Mearsheimer, *The Tragedy of Great Power Politics* (New York, 2003); Bruce Jentleson (ed.), *Opportunities Missed, Opportunities Seized* (Lanham, MD, 2000); Karen Mingst and Margaret Karns, *The United Nations in the Post-Cold War Era* (Boulder, CO, 2000 ed.); George Bush and Brent Scowcroft, *A World Transformed* (New York, 1998); Boutros Boutros-Ghali, *Agenda for Peace* (New York, 1996 ed.); Henry Kissinger, *Diplomacy* (New York, 1994); and Francis Fukuyama, *The End of History* (New York, 1993).

Challenges to the traditional state system and claims of national sovereignty are analyzed in Dan Caldwell and Robert Williams Jr., *Seeking Security in an Insecure World* (Lanham, MD, 2016 ed.); Paul Gordon Lauren, *The Evolution of International Human Rights* (Philadelphia, 2011); Stephen Krasner, *Power, the State, and Sovereignty* (New York, 2009); T. V. Paul et al. (eds.), *The Nation-State in Question* (Princeton, 2003); International Commission on Intervention and State Sovereignty, *The Responsibility to Protect* (Ottawa, 2001); Charles Kegley and Gregory Raymond, *Exorcizing the Ghost of Westphalia* (Upper Saddle River, NJ, 2001); Martin van Creveld, *The Rise and Decline of the State* (Cambridge, UK, 2000); and Kofi Annan, "Two Concepts of Sovereignty," *The Economist* (September 18, 1999): 49–50.

On terrorism and the "global war on terror," see the official assessments in "Country Reports on Terrorism" of the U.S. Department of State at www.state.gov; Lawrence Wright, *The Terror Years* (New York, 2017); Richard Hooker, Jr. and Joseph Collins (eds.), *Lessons Encountered* (Washington, D.C., 2015); Dan Caldwell, *Vortex of Conflict* (Stanford, CA, 2011); Peter Galbraith, *Unintended Consequences: How War in Iraq Strengthened America's Enemies* (New York, 2009); Ahmed Rashid, *Descent Into Chaos* (New York, 2009); Michael Scheuer, *Imperial Hubris* (Dulles, VA, 2005); National Commission on Terrorist Attacks Upon the United States, *The 9/11 Commission Report* (New York, 2004); David Frum and Richard Perle, *An End to Evil* (New York, 2003); Richard Falk, *The Great Terror War* (New York, 2002); and Bob Woodward, *Bush at War* (New York, 2002).

The always present theme of partnership and rivalry has assumed much greater importance in recent years, generating considerable and often heated debate. Interesting and sometimes provocative treatments can be found in Andrew Bacevich, *The Age of Illusions* (New York, 2020); Munich Security Report 2019, *The Great Puzzle: Who Will Pick Up the Pieces?* at https://securityconference.org; Robert Kagan, *The Jungle Grows Back: America and Our Imperiled World* (New York, 2019); Ivo Daalder and James Lindsay, *The Empty Throne* (New York, 2018); Stephen Walt, *The Hell of Good Intentions* (New York, 2018); John Mearsheimer, *The Great Delusion* (New Haven, CT, 2018); Ronan Farrow, *War on Peace* (New York, 2018); Michael McFaul, *From Cold War to Hot Peace* (Boston, 2018); Timothy Snyder, *The Road to Unfreedom* (New York, 2018); Yoram Hazony, *The Virtues of Nationalism* (New York, 2018); Richard Haass, *A World in Disarray: American Foreign Policy and the Crisis of the Old Order* (New York, 2017); Henry Kissinger, *World Order* (New York, 2014); Bruce Jones, "Largest Minority Shareholder in Global Order LLC," *Brookings Institution Policy Paper No. 25* (Washington, D.C., 2011); Fareed Zakaria, *The Post-American World* (New York, 2009); Stefan Halper and Jonathan Clarke, *America Alone* (Cambridge, UK, 2004); United Nations High-Level Panel on Threats, Challenges, and Change, *A More Secure World: Our Shared Responsibility* (New York, 2004); Zbigniew Brzezinski, *The Choice: Global Domination or Global Leadership* (New York, 2004); Michael Hirsh, *At War With Ourselves* (New York, 2003); Joseph Nye, Jr., *Paradox of American Power* (New York, 2003); Clyde Prestowitz, *Rogue Nation* (New York, 2003); and compare the United States, White House, *National Security Strategy of the United States, 2002* with those of issued in 2010, 2015, and 2017, all available at www.nssarchive.us.

PART II

History, Theory, and Practice

CHAPTER 7

Lessons of History and Knowledge for Statecraft

"Those who cannot remember the past," philosopher George Santayana once famously observed, "are condemned to repeat it." His thought-provoking statement is quoted so frequently because it seems to resonate intuitively with how we learn from experience, trying to understand ourselves and make sense of the world in which we live with others. We believe that we do and should learn from our past, trying to avoid previous mistakes that brought suffering and to replicate behavior that brought success. Life thus is lived forward looking into the future, but only understood by looking backward into the past. It only seems natural, therefore, to seek to apply this principle to the broader canvas of the human condition as a whole, exploring whether and how people gain *insight from hindsight*.

With specific reference to diplomatic challenges in force and statecraft, for example, we want to know if leaders learn any lessons from past failures and successes—or not. Almost every statesman and general has professed to having learned from history, but there are times when the evidence certainly suggests otherwise. There is often confusion and dispute about precisely how leaders learn, what they learn, how they deal with seemingly conflicting lessons, and whether the analogies that they take from the past are appropriate to specific problems at hand. With these factors in mind, it is important to explore in Part II of this book how knowledge for statecraft might be gained and to consider the opinion of the distinguished historian of the Renaissance, Jacob Burckhardt, who once remarked that the true use of history should be not to make leaders more clever for the next time but to make them wiser forever.

CLASSICAL WRITERS ON THE IMPORTANCE OF HISTORICAL LESSONS

Virtually every writer from antiquity to the present who has ever seriously analyzed force and statecraft has stressed the critical importance of learning historical lessons. They have worried that leaders all too often seem to operate with inadequate knowledge of the magnitude and complexity of the challenges they must face. To correct this problem, they unequivocally have advocated the study

of history. Whatever guides exist for survival in the present or future, they have insisted, can be found only in the past, for if we do not know where we have been, we cannot possibly know where we are or where we are going. Studying history, they have maintained, can reveal invaluable insights and patterns about human behavior, the nature of diplomatic challenges, the range of choice between partnerships and rivalries, likely consequences or reactions to certain policies, causes and effects, continuities and changes, the relationship between capabilities and intentions, and the role played by ethical values and restraints, among many, many other factors. For this reason, they have stressed time and time again the critical importance of learning from history.

It is consequently not surprising that the ancient writers of statecraft built their analyses on the study of the past. It is history, wrote Sun Tzu, that enables leaders to avoid peril by knowing themselves and knowing others. Among many lessons to be learned from historical experience, he observed, is that "the greatest victory is that which requires no battle" and that "there is no instance of a country benefiting from prolonged warfare." In the same way, Kautilya urged policymakers to study history in order "to learn from the mistakes of others."

The great Greek historian Thucydides wrote in his insightful and path-breaking book *The History of the Peloponnesian War* with precisely this purpose in mind. He was not interested in telling a story for entertainment or simply chronicling the long struggle between Athens and Sparta, but rather in sustained inquiry into history as a means of discerning meaning about the world and human behavior that might be useful to policymakers. He took seriously the fact that the Greek word *historeo* meant to learn or gain knowledge by objectively gathering evidence, providing accurate descriptions, applying reasoned analyses, and offering critical judgments about the past in such a way as to move from the particular part to the larger whole, or from the specific event in such a way as to discover underlying patterns.

Thucydides analyzed the negotiations with Argos, for example, to appreciate the more encompassing nature of negotiations as a whole, the defensive alliance between Athens and Corcyra to understand the strategy of deterrence, the disastrous Athenian expedition against Sicily as instructive of the results of arrogant ambition and incompetent leadership, the threats conveyed in the Melian dialogue to gain knowledge of the nature of coercive diplomacy, and the rivalries and wars themselves to learn why normally law-abiding people sometimes resort to uncontrolled passion and violence. Indeed, as he wrote in his introduction, he sought to learn lessons and wanted his words to be "judged useful by those who want to understand clearly the events which happened in the past and which (human nature being what it is) will, at some time or other and in much the same ways, be repeated in the future." In this regard, he wanted his work to provide practical wisdom, guidance, and good and useful estimates (not absolute certainty) for leaders who would face similar problems in the future. Some testament to his success in doing so can be seen in the fact that his book has been taken seriously over millennia and that no course on diplomacy or war today is likely to fail to discuss it.

This theme of the practical use of history as a guide for statecraft received substantial reinforcement from Niccolò Machiavelli in the early sixteenth century. Indeed, as he expressed in *The Prince*: "My hope is to write a book that will be

useful . . . and so I thought it sensible to go straight to a discussion of how things are in real life and not waste time with a discussion of an imaginary world." In order to create this handbook for policymakers, Machiavelli engaged in what he described as "a constant study of the past," drawing evidence from history about those who exercised power, with failures and successes ranging from Moses of the Old Testament, Alexander the Great, and Severus of the Roman Empire to Cesare Borgia and other leaders of Renaissance Italy. From these he drew a number of conclusions—or lessons—designed to help leaders govern and advance the interests of their states. This matter became so important to Machiavelli that he returned to it in his subsequent book, *The Discourses*, and concluded:

> Whoever considers the past and the present will readily observe that all cities and all peoples are and ever have been animated by the same desires and the same passions; so that it is easy, by diligent study of the past, to foresee what is likely to happen in the future.

Hugo Grotius reached similar conclusions by drawing extensively from history. As he argued in his famous seventeenth-century *On the Law of War and Peace*, it is past experience that gives rich examples of human behavior and provides a solid basis of judgment because people will "act in a similar way under similar circumstances." He believed that historical experience, for example, revealed important lessons not only about the dangers and costs of continuing long wars but also of treaties that seek to destroy or punish enemies rather than those creating guarantees of mutual beneficial stability against the renewal of war.

François de Callières emphasized exactly this theme in his masterful eighteenth-century *On the Manner of Negotiating with Princes*. The entire purpose for writing his book, he explained, was to develop the skills and the habits of thought necessary to deal with the critical issues of statecraft on which the whole fortunes, peace, and security of states depended. From his own considerable experience, astute observation, and careful reading of the past, Callières believed that the conduct of diplomacy "demands all the penetration, all the dexterity, all the suppleness which a man can possess. It requires a wide-spread understanding and knowledge, and above all, a correct and piercing discernment." The development of these particular skills, he argued, could be found in studying alliances, military establishments, the interests and personalities of foreign leaders, the languages and customs of other countries, and "above all" and "of first importance," the study of history. If you do not know the history of others, he believed, you will not understand their interests, hopes, fears, values, or perceptions, and how they are likely to react to something that you might say or do. His advice influenced many, including George I of England when he established the prestigious Regius Professorships of history at Oxford and Cambridge to prepare those who would serve the state as diplomats. Frederick the Great reached the same conclusion, observing: "What is the good of experience if you do not reflect?"

Carl von Clausewitz's monumental *On War*, focusing directly on force and statecraft, reiterated and then further elaborated precisely the same theme. In fact, he opened his chapter on the use of history with these words: "Historical examples clarify everything and also provide the best kind of proof in the empirical sciences." He described how history can assist policymakers by providing explanations of

human behavior, contributing specific examples to refine judgments, offering suggestions for a range of various possibilities and concrete applications, and presenting evidence to develop ideas or theories. His text on the relationship between means and ends, on war as a continuation of policy, consequently drew heavily on historical evidence. He nevertheless cautioned that the use of history required considerable effort and sophistication. In one of his most perceptive observations, Clausewitz warned against those who fleetingly look to find historical examples for quick answers for policy or the development of theory, who "never rise above anecdote," and who draw vast lessons from only an individual case, "starting always with the most striking feature, the high point of the event, and digging only as deep as suits them, never getting down to the general factors that govern the matter."

These classical writers, who stressed the vital importance of historical lessons for statecraft, heavily influenced generations of successors. J. J. Jusserand's treatise *School for Ambassadors*, for example, argued that history should be the chief study of anyone working in the field of international relations. The accomplished diplomat Sir Charles Webster was himself a distinguished historian who insisted throughout his long career that lessons from the past could and should be applied to diplomatic challenges of the present. Henry Kissinger wrote his thesis on the subject of "The Meaning of History" and his first book, *A World Restored*, focused on the experience of forming a successful coalition against Napoleon and holding the Congress of Vienna in 1814–1815 as a means of exploring larger and enduring issues of personalities, alliances, balances of power, legitimacy, national interests, peacemaking, and the nature of stability and security within an international system. He concluded, "No significant conclusions are possible in the study of foreign affairs . . . without an awareness of the historical context. For societies exist in time more than in space."

Many other recent scholars and practicing diplomats have reached similar conclusions. Political scientist Klaus Knorr introduced his influential *Historical Dimensions of National Security Problems* by writing:

> Without knowing how past societies coped with problems similar to our own, the options they considered, the choices they made, and the consequences entailed by these choices, we can only arrive at a flat, poorly constructed understanding of our present problems.

Seeking answers from the past that could assist in explaining both victories and defeats and in addressing current challenges of force and statecraft, General David Petraeus focused his entire doctoral dissertation on the subject of *The American Military and the Lessons of Vietnam*. Here, he drew on the thoughts of classical writers as well as contemporaries, including Army General and Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff John Vessy, who insightfully observed: "We don't learn new lessons. We relearn old lessons that we haven't paid attention to."

THE HISTORICAL HABIT OF MIND

Acknowledging the necessity of learning—and relearning—lessons from history, however, is not the same as understanding what it is that history actually teaches about force and statecraft. In seeking to address precisely this question, the Scottish

historian D. P. Heatley decided in the aftermath of the upheaval of the First World War to write a book entitled *Diplomacy and the Study of International Relations*. He began his work by discussing the importance of learning historical lessons and then presented a direct proposition: "Political Science without History, it has been said, has no root; and History without Political Science has no fruit." With this in mind, Heatley argued that anyone who wanted to understand international relations must begin first with the study of how people of earlier times attempted to solve their diplomatic challenges, and this he regarded as the foundation and "training ground" for statecraft.

The best way to approach this task was not with some kind of simplistic memorization of names and dates, but rather with an exploration of important phenomena and patterns from the richness of historical experience. He demonstrated what he meant by this with thoughtful treatments about the traditions and practices of diplomacy, the classical writers from Thucydides and Machiavelli to Callières and Clausewitz, treaties and maps, the qualities required of diplomats, the conduct of negotiation, the challenges confronting those persons charged with the formulation and execution of foreign policy, the restraints imposed upon them, the impact of ethical values, and the relationship between statecraft and its most drastic instrument of policy, armed force. With such an approach, Heatley believed, students of history could avoid becoming mere chroniclers of what happened and instead could become much more thoughtful interpreters and sophisticated analysts of how and why things happened. He insisted that the study of history, more than anything else, could lead to reflection and wisdom by developing "the habit of mind that is required for appreciating questions of foreign policy."

It is exactly this habit or cast of mind that helps to develop essential skills in understanding the challenges of statecraft by establishing perspective and a basis for intelligent judgment. Thinking in focused ways about history trains one to make comparisons and to recognize certain patterns or recurrences in issues, problems, and human behavior; to identify important variables and causal mechanisms; to analyze both the similarities and the differences, or continuities and changes, between cases; and, especially, to appreciate the critical significance of context. It can never pretend to provide the gift of certain prophecy, a precise recipe book for how to act in every contingency that arises, or detailed and highly accurate predictions about a specific outcome if a particular choice is made. Instead, the great value of such a habit of mind, or way of thinking, can be found in its power to use broad and wide-ranging knowledge of the past in such a way as to sharpen thought, to formulate questions that need to be asked and suggest what kind of evidence might be necessary to answer them, to provide models for ideas and comparisons, to provide precautionary prescriptions or warnings about what is or is not likely to happen and what might go wrong, and to stimulate reflection on previous human behavior for the diagnosis and prognosis of current and future events.

1. People. Students of history seeking to gain knowledge for statecraft, for example, develop a habit of mind that realizes the critical importance of people. Indeed, history is first and foremost about people and human nature. Relations among states are relations among people. Nation-states, governments, organizations, departments, or groups do not make choices or take actions themselves—real people do. These human agents are the leaders and their advisors, the ambassadors

and strategic planners, the diplomats and intelligence officers, the generals and the foot soldiers, the admirals and sailors, the negotiators and crisis managers, the politicians and bureaucrats, the business investors and human rights activists, and the local warlords and terrorists, among many others. History demonstrates time and again that policies are determined and implemented—as they only can be—not by abstract entities, but by the human element of living men and women within their own contexts, each with his or her own personality, strengths and weaknesses, ability to handle stress, beliefs and normative values, agendas, casts of mind, experiences, and historical memories.

All of these factors shape how people perceive the reality around them, their interests, their politics and culture, what happens in the world, threats and opportunities, and their visions of what might be achieved. People determine the extent to which armed force is necessary and is dangerous. Force possesses bargaining influence in deterrence and coercive diplomacy only insofar as people are willing and able to use it, or others think they are willing and able. Ethics and international norms have no power to restrain behavior unless people feel bound to honor their obligations and make choices that protect the well-being of others. The whole concept of diplomacy itself is significant only insofar as it is understood and put into practice by people. They may be wise or foolish, rational or irrational, able or incompetent, compassionate or vengeful, deliberative or impulsive, confident or frightened, flexible or rigid, gracious or capricious, humble or arrogant, and capable of putting themselves in another's shoes and seeing events from the perspective of others—or not. But because of design or chance, office or character, people matter. Some matter a great deal.

When these features about ourselves and about others are forgotten or ignored, particularly when force and statecraft are involved, the results can be disastrous. Having been so instrumental in directing the American war in Vietnam, for example, former secretary of defense Robert McNamara spent much of the rest of his life trying to understand what went so wrong and to learn lessons that he hoped future leaders would heed. "Our misjudgments of friend and foe alike," he concluded, "reflected our profound ignorance of the history, culture, and politics of the people in the area and the personalities and the habits of their leaders."

2. Process. History also trains the mind to be attentive to process. Those who study the past tend to think processionally: of time passing. They view time as a stream, sometimes calmly meandering and sometimes smashing in cascades, but always aware not only of the present and future emerging from the past, but also in turn becoming the past. Historians analyze how events and developments evolve, as demonstrated in Part I, which addressed international systems and the diplomatic revolution, paying particular attention to sequence, to cause and effect, and to change and continuity. In fact, they can examine those elements that are transformed and those that stay the same, for example, only by exploring how the diplomatic challenges of our own time are both similar to and different from those of the past. This applies whether the discussion centers on the advice of Callières or Kofi Annan, the international system-building efforts of Clemens von Metternich or Woodrow Wilson, or the use of force by Frederick the Great or leaders today. As David Trask, the former historian of the U.S. Department of State, argues, such a habit of mind is indispensable for statecraft. "The policy maker," he observes,

"has no alternative but to make use of historical information and historical thought simply because he [or she] is specifically concerned with process, the bread and butter of historians."

3. Possibilities. Reading and thinking about history similarly opens the mind to an extraordinarily wide range of possibilities or options. The systematic study of people and events over extended periods of time and space provides a wealth of vicarious experiences with a rich and varied array of imaginable or possible actions and strategies and likely reactions, and suggests alternatives that otherwise might be ignored. As such, it vastly expands and far exceeds what any one person could ever possibly learn from personal experience in his or her own short lifetime alone. It also achieves this, not insignificantly, without the pain that so often is the price of acquiring such lessons. Knowing that certain things already have occurred—of paths taken and not taken—affords an enormous inventory or database of information about human nature and behavior replete with specific evidence, examples, variables, ideas, analogies, thresholds, interpretations, patterns, trends, outcomes, benchmarks, warnings, and precedents that otherwise may have remained completely beyond our imagination.

History thus offers not only a spectrum of multiple choices, policy options, or range of alternative solutions that have been practiced and previously tried by others, but also some basis for judgment and diagnostic value about whether the strategies were appropriate or not and why they may have resulted in success or failure. This is precisely the point made by a recent study prepared for the Department of Defense with reference to the insurgency in the war against Iraq. The report, tellingly entitled *Lessons Encountered*, sharply criticizes the tendency of American leadership to encounter but not learn or "absorb historical lessons"—and stressed the necessity of actually studying history to expose "senior officials to possibilities other than those being assumed in their planning."

4. Patterns. As careful observers have noted for centuries, one of the distinguishing features about the study of history is that it helps to let us lift our heads above the chaos of the immediate and discern certain kinds of broad patterns in human behavior. The past most surely reveals that the details and specific contexts of every event or case are different and complex and can never be precisely replicated. At the same time, it reveals that under similar circumstances, the particulars often provide evidence of larger categories or types of phenomena that can be recognized as appearing repeatedly. That is, there are general patterns in human nature and ways that people behave that can be observed as recurring over time and place. The history of force and statecraft, for example, not only demonstrates the recurrence of such phenomena as wars, balances of power, partnerships and rivalries, and the creation and decline of security systems, but, as we soon shall see, patterns in negotiation, patterns in deterrence, patterns in coercive diplomacy, and patterns in crisis management.

5. Perspective and Proportion. Historical study also creates a habit of mind that can develop a sense of perspective and proportion on the world and its challenges. In a marvelous essay entitled "The Historian's Opportunity," Barbara Tuchman argued that the task is to tell what history is about, what the forces are that drive us, and how we interact as humans. History, she wrote, "being concerned as it is with reality and subject as it is to certain disciplines," must see these various elements "in proportion to the whole":

> Distillation is selection, and selection . . . is the essence of writing history. It is the cardinal process of composition, the most difficult, the most delicate, the most fraught with error as well as art. Ability to distinguish what is significant from what is insignificant is *sine qua non*.

Study of the past involves not only making precisely these distinctions, but creating scales, standards of comparison, or measuring rods against which actions are judged and establishing a contextual background against which people and events are viewed. One aspect of this entails developing a capacity to see not only ourselves, but the perspectives of other actors and how they view their interests and themselves. Another element entails the perspective of time, or acquiring the ability to avoid the dangers of "presentism" by looking both backward and forward in such a way that a seemingly isolated event of today can be seen as a part of a larger pattern or process and is given meaning beyond a mere immediate or single occurrence.

These are precisely the tasks of those responsible for statecraft as well, who must be able to make intelligent, objective judgments about the relationship of specific parts to the whole, compare one case to others, and prudently determine what is important and possible—and what is not. It has been observed, for example, that one of the qualities that made Otto von Bismarck such a successful statesman was his extraordinary sense of perspective and proportion, which enabled him to discern how specific problems were related to larger issues and to appreciate the range and the limitations of choice among human actors. The study of historical experience is excellent training for developing just such skills. Indeed, it was Bismarck himself who once said that fools learn from their experience, while the wise learn from the experience of others.

THE CHALLENGES OF LEARNING AND APPLYING LESSONS OF HISTORY

Knowing how important it is to learn and then apply lessons from history, however, is not the same as actually being able to do it in practice. The fact remains that many challenges confront those who seek to do so. Some of these involve the very process and nature of learning lessons themselves. In the first place, the study of history, although fascinating and often enjoyable, is nevertheless difficult. It is complex and requires the time, effort, and ability to analyze the evidence of intricate human interactions, the skills and personalities of people, forces of continuity and change, ideas and beliefs, domestic and foreign influences, structures, the nature of restraints, and the state of technological development, among many, many other factors and variables, and then to reach conclusions about their meaning. Second, as a result of the inherent complexity, there is no such thing as a single, easily understandable *lesson* from history. Instead, history presents many faces and produces a variety of innumerable *lessons*. Third, these various lessons do not necessarily point in a single direction or reach a single conclusion. Indeed, at times they appear to be ambiguous, inconsistent, subject to different interpretations, or even contradictory. Certain cases from history, for example, might indicate that diplomatic compromise serves as the best course for preserving peace and security, whereas other cases might suggest that concessions only encourage further demands and aggression by opponents.

A fourth challenge stems from the fact that lessons are often selectively learned and disproportionally recalled, depending on different perspectives, different purposes, and the context of learning itself. Preconceived biases, organizational agendas or preferences, bureaucratic politics, ideology, the psychological propensity to take mental shortcuts or to persist in holding beliefs and wishful thinking about the past even in the face of evidence to the contrary, or the level of firsthand participation and associated trauma resulting from particular events can produce very different results. Differences between people (including those between one generation and the next, or between one culture and another) affect how and what they learn. Studies in cognitive psychology, for example, reveal that people have a strong tendency to draw much more frequently and intensely on recent cases and on those they have experienced personally rather than those from another place or of a more distant past. It is understandable, therefore, why there can be different interpretations, conflicting conclusions, and passionate disagreements (even among historians) about the most appropriate lessons to be learned.

These problems of learning are further compounded by the further challenge of application, or the realities and processes of policymaking and implementation. It often has been said that diplomacy is "the art of the possible." All leaders face various kinds of restraints that necessitate tradeoffs, as we shall explore in Chapter 12, and even those who have learned lessons from history are not always free to apply all that they may know. The desirable, in other words, is not always feasible. As a consequence, observes Kissinger, "Any statesman is in part the prisoner of necessity." He therefore concludes that all those responsible for statecraft must face "a continual struggle to rescue an element of choice from the pressure of circumstance."

There is another difficulty of applying lessons of history to policy. Studies show that leaders frequently make serious mistakes due either to their ignorance of the range of possible choices based on historical experience or to the related tendency to draw on a lesson from a single historical case. Decision makers often possess a very limited and simplified knowledge of the past, or prepare to fight the last war, or deal with the previous crisis rather than the current one. In doing so, they incorrectly choose a case and misapply a lesson to a new situation that differs from the past in important ways. As historian Ernest May wrote in *"Lessons" of the Past: The Use and Misuse of History in American Foreign Policy*, leaders ordinarily do not take the time or make the effort to seriously study the past or to analyze how it informs their immediate crisis or diplomatic challenge. Instead, they resort to superficial analogy and

> tend to seize upon the first one that comes to mind. They do not search more widely. Nor do they pause to analyze the case, test its fitness, or even ask in what ways it might be misleading. Seeing a trend running toward the present, they tend to assume that it will continue into the future, not stopping to consider what produced it or why a linear projection might prove to be mistaken.

May's subsequent study, written with his political science colleague Richard Neustadt under the title *Thinking in Time: The Uses of History for Decision-Makers*,

explores this problem even further. They observe that, all too often, leaders seize on something to buttress their preexisting policy preferences, and thereby are seduced by simple and inappropriate analogies. As such, they make little or no effort to separate the *known* from the *unclear* and the *presumed*, or to seriously compare the *likenesses* with the *differences* or the continuities with the changes between cases in history and those of the present.

The enormous dangers created for peace and security by this overly simplistic and careless approach have attracted the attention of other scholars as well. Among these are political scientist Yuen Khong's study employing insights from social psychology, entitled *Analogies at War*, and security studies specialist Jeffrey Record's *Making War, Thinking History*. They reveal how American leaders often have made choices about whether or how to use force in statecraft based on seriously oversimplified and inappropriate analogies and, therefore, misapplied lessons of history. One of these is summarized by a single word: "Munich." This refers to the Munich Conference of 1938 and its role in bringing about the Second World War, which they believed taught that appeasement only encouraged aggression, that being lulled into negotiation was dangerous, that force must be met immediately and directly with force, and that there should be "no more Munichs." Or, they used another analogy also expressed by a single word: "Vietnam." This refers to America's experience in Southeast Asia, which they believed taught the dangers of being pulled into protracted and indecisive wars by leaders who failed to understand the challenge and the mission, lacked the wisdom to appreciate an appropriate relationship between ends and means, and did not possess sufficient domestic support for long-term engagements—in short, there should be "no more Vietnams."

One of the most frequently misapplied historical analogies, for example, has been that of Munich. The failed attempt to accommodate Adolf Hitler was subsequently seared into the consciousness of several generations of policymakers and foreign policy specialists. Rather than trying to determine under what conditions compromise might constitute a viable strategy for avoiding war and under what conditions it might dangerously increase the likelihood of a worse war in the future, they quickly (and sometimes impulsively) seized on the Munich analogy. This can be seen when Harry Truman described North Korean aggression in 1950 as "just like" Nazi expansion and, to prevent a similar result, sent troops into action. British prime minister Anthony Eden used it during the Suez Crisis of 1956, arguing that Egyptian president Gamal Nassar was "the same as" Hitler and that if military forces were not used in response to his seizure of the Suez Canal, it would be "just like" the occupation of the Rhineland and would be followed by other acts of aggression. British prime minister Margaret Thatcher invoked the same analogy when responding to Argentina in the Falklands War, as did George H. W. Bush when dealing with Saddam Hussein during the Persian Gulf Crisis of 1990–1991, and Bill Clinton when confronting Slobodan Milosevic during the Kosovo Crisis of 1999. Even though the cases were vastly different, when U.S. secretary of defense Donald Rumsfeld addressed Asian leaders in Singapore during 2004, he warned them that making deals with terrorists would only be "repeating the mistakes of the nations that tried to appease Adolf Hitler in the 1930s."

Although these misuses of historical analogy often appear to be the norm rather than the exception, there are occasional successes. Among these, the thoughtful deliberations and high quality of analysis demonstrated by the Kennedy administration during the Cuban Missile Crisis come to mind. When intelligence sources suddenly revealed that the Soviet Union was secretly placing missiles in Cuba, the president and his advisors seriously agonized about how they should respond. The records of their deliberations indicate that, as a group, they were remarkably knowledgeable about history and drew on not one but a range of historical cases. They referred to the outbreak of the First World War in 1914, Franklin Roosevelt's "Quarantine Address" of 1937, the failed British and French deterrence guarantees to Poland in 1939, the Japanese attack of 1941, the Berlin Crisis of 1948, the Suez and Hungarian crises of 1956, and the placing of American missiles in Turkey during 1957, among others. Kennedy's knowledge of history played a decisive role in his decisions, as indicated by his rejection of the suggestion for a surprise military attack against Cuba on the grounds that America could not maintain a strong moral position if it became responsible for "another Pearl Harbor." As he watched the crisis escalate and the knot of conflict being pulled tighter and tighter, he similarly considered lessons from the disastrous mismanagement by leaders in 1914 who refused to create pauses or diplomatic alternatives. He had read Barbara Tuchman's *Guns of August* and said, "I am not going to follow a course which will allow anyone to write a comparable book about this time, *The Missiles of October*. If anyone is around to write after this, they are going to understand that we made every effort to find peace and every effort to give our adversary room to move."

Another successful case of wanting to learn valuable lessons from history occurred in the aftermath of the 9/11 attacks. A number of advisors in the George W. Bush administration had professional training in history and sought to draw on their knowledge of the earlier surprise attack on Pearl Harbor to warn them of potential dangers as they formulated a policy response. Here they saw the disaster caused when the country got caught up in war fervor so intense that it swept up Japanese Americans en masse and sent them to internment camps. They determined not to make this mistake again and Bush thus went to considerable lengths to avoid demonizing Islam as a whole, calling on Americans to reach out to fellow citizens who were Muslim.

These examples show how hard-pressed leaders under stress in the complex and uncertain environment of international politics seek a framework that will help them cope by interpreting where they and the problem confronting them fit into some comprehensible context or pattern. They look for guidance as to what should or should not be done, assuming that the future in some way will resemble the past. Indeed, according to political scientist Yaacov Vertzberger in his stimulating book *The World in Their Minds: Information Processing, Cognition, and Perception in Foreign Policy Decisionmaking*, it is essential that policymakers responsible for major decisions—especially those dealing with force and statecraft—attempt to use analogies from previous experiences in history. When used critically, they help in the management and resolution of complexity and uncertainty by providing information as well as a diagnostic framework that offers a sense about the nature of the problem at hand and the issues at stake, concrete examples and illustrations,

possible direction, and a sense of the dangers and prospects of alternatives that might otherwise be completely overlooked.

But, as he and other writers like political scientist Robert Jervis in *Perception and Misperception* observe, if the reasoning is unsound, this process can be notoriously inadequate and even hazardous. Some leaders possess detailed knowledge and a considerable database of history, while others have only a rudimentary sense of the past and a superficial awareness of a very small number of cases. Some are capable of perceiving and comprehending historical perspective and making sophisticated judgments on the basis of evidence, while others clearly are not. Moreover, no event or situation is ever exactly the same in detail as another. Conditions change, sometimes dramatically. It is risky, therefore, to assume that a particular outcome can be predicted with exactitude or that a past event can be easily grasped as an accurate model for a present one. These dangers become particularly acute if policymakers draw hasty and unwarranted conclusions with little scrutiny from a sample of only one: a single or narrowly drawn case that most quickly comes to mind, that belittles significant contextual differences, that tends to confirm their own preconceived biases and preferred policies, and that gives them an illusory sense of "knowing" history. To address this problem, it is critical to seek a much broader range of historical experiences and cases on which one might draw and then to analyze and synthesize them in such a way as to develop a greater understanding of international systems and their actors as they confront the challenges of force and statecraft.

STRUCTURED, FOCUSED COMPARISONS

If it is hazardous for policymakers to rely, as they sometimes do, upon a single historical analogy in deciding what to do in practice, how then can experience from the past be utilized to deal effectively with a new situation that appears to bear a certain resemblance to previous cases but at the same time possesses differences as well? The answer lies in developing a broad historical habit of mind, expanding the range of cases from history to be examined, and then carefully and systematically focusing on a phenomenon that appears repeatedly in statecraft over time and space. By comparing the recurrence of a particular strategy under different circumstances, with different actors and in different settings, one can identify and study discernable *patterns*. This can stimulate our thinking, help us frame sharper questions, test and refine our hypotheses, enrich our historical understanding, develop more sophisticated and textured theory, and thereby discover certain broad lessons that might provide some measure of guidance and warning for policy. Without such an approach, whatever lessons we might learn are acquired completely at random and are undeveloped, often misapplied to fit particular circumstances.

In Part II of this book, we seek to demonstrate more specifically how lessons of history can be combined with theory and used to gain knowledge for statecraft. We show how individual historical cases can be systematically studied and analyzed within a well-defined framework that enables a comparison and cumulation of

results in order to develop an appreciation of its uses and its limitations. We explore the extremely important, instructive, and recurring patterns of behavior in negotiation, deterrence, coercive diplomacy, and crisis management. We analyze the nature of one of these strategies, the issues and problems that arise in attempting to implement it, as well as the conditions or causal mechanisms that either favor success or contribute to failure, thereby providing some possibility of serving as indicators of predictive value. In doing so, we suggest ways to help bridge the gap between scholarly studies and the practical needs of policymakers.

The method that we have developed for this purpose is that of structured, focused comparison. Our many students over the years, readers of previous editions, and reviewers have told us that they have found this approach to be especially helpful in providing an analytical framework to study history, articulate principles and concepts of theory, identify critical variables, and develop diagnostic skills in making judgments about the uses and the limitations of particular strategies and the conditions on which their effective use depends. This methodology requires careful specification of the strategy to be studied, selection of historical cases in which it was employed, the variables of interest, and analysis of why it succeeded or failed. It also requires that a systematic research protocol and structural format of analysis be developed, specifying the same set of issues to be addressed and the same questions to be asked of each case, thus providing a close and careful comparison of explanations in such a way that they can be cumulated for broader knowledge.

1. Theory. Toward this end, each chapter in this section begins with an explicit delineation of a general theory or conceptual model that addresses a particular diplomatic challenge. These theories or models are constructed of basic principles that help us better understand the past and tell us much about the logic and intended purposes of policy. Although the theories are not strategies themselves, they do serve as valuable starting points for constructing and comprehending them. Strategies derived from conceptual models tell us what must be done in general to achieve the desired objectives. But to actually do this in specific cases, the principles must be analyzed within a framework of *strategy variants* tailored to fit the situation at hand and likely to influence a particular actor. Thus, for example, while there is only one basic theory or model of deterrence or coercive diplomacy, there are a number of different strategies for each. The effectiveness of each, however, is highly *context dependent*; that is, the outcomes are influenced by many variables, the interactions between them, and especially the abilities of those people who try to apply them. The choices of strategy variants consequently present considerable uncertainty when dealing with the dilemmas of using force or threats of force as instruments of statecraft. This challenge is well understood by experienced policymakers and analysts. As George H. W. Bush once observed, careful judgments have to be made about

> when the stakes warrant, where and when force can be effective, where no other policies are likely to be effective, when its application can be limited in scope and time, and where the potential benefits justify the potential costs and sacrifice. There can be no single or simple set of fixed rules for using force . . .

2. Historical Case Studies. History keeps theory from losing touch with reality. It teaches what people actually have done in the past, and thus what they are capable of doing in the future. It also demonstrates the critical importance of context, thereby avoiding the limitations and hazards of mere abstractions. For these reasons, each chapter that follows in Part II presents three historical case studies focused on a specific theory or conceptual model. Each empirically based case is selected for its intrinsic interest, its capacity to link theory with practice, and its insights that might assist in the elaboration, testing, and development of lessons and more differentiated theory. To provide breadth, the cases range in both time and place. The first case, for example, is drawn from the classical system of diplomacy during the nineteenth century. The second comes from the twentieth century. The third case is more recent, taken from contemporary international affairs. In addition, the cases come from North America, Europe, East Asia, South Asia, the Middle East, and the Caribbean and South America. We spread and compare the three cases in this way in order to demonstrate how a given strategy was and is affected by both the continuities and the changes in the richness of historical context.

3. Analysis. These three cases are then subjected to an analysis that goes beyond narrative alone. Here, a *standard set of questions* is asked of each of these individual historical cases. Such a controlled procedure or protocol makes it possible to actually compare evidence in a systematic way in order to test and refine an understanding of when, judging from past experience, this strategy is or is not likely to be viable and how best to implement it. Although history and theory cannot by themselves solve the challenges of force and statecraft, when they are analyzed together in this way they can provide guides for reasoned thinking, conditional generalizations, and calculations of consequences. The results are designed not to be hard-and-fast "rules," but rather aids or tools for diagnosing the nature of challenges and then determining what choices might be available and whether favoring conditions are present for possible policy prescriptions and actions. In diplomacy, as in medical practice, accurate diagnosis must precede a determination for the best course of treatment in trying to solve a problem. Each analysis also includes concluding observations that summarize the major findings, draw on additional research, and reiterate how the case studies can help us learn lessons of history and thereby contribute to knowledge required for statecraft.

SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER EXPLORATION

Among the many classic writers who stress the importance of learning lessons from history, one should consult Thucydides, *The Peloponnesian War*; and its most recent analysis in Donald Kagan, *Thucydides: The Reinvention of History* (New York, 2010); Niccolò Machiavelli, *The Prince* and *Discourses*; Hugo Grotius, *On the Law of War and Peace*; François de Callières, *On the Manner of Negotiating with Princes*; and Carl von Clausewitz, *On War*; available in many modern editions. See also Henry Kissinger, *Diplomacy* (New York, 1995); Peter Dickson, *Kissinger and the Meaning of History* (New York, 1978); Klaus Knorr (ed.), *Historical Dimensions of National Security Problems* (Lawrence, KS, 1976); and the perspectives provided in the journals *Diplomacy and Statecraft* and *Diplomatic History*.

Discussions about the historical habit of mind can be found in Hal Brands and Charles Edel, *The Lessons of Tragedy: Statecraft and World Order* (New Haven, CT, 2019); Marc Trachenberg, *The Craft of International* History (Princeton, 2006); John Lewis Gaddis, *The Landscape of History: How Historians Map the Past* (New York, 2004); Gordon A. Craig, "The Historian and the Study of International Relations," *American Historical Review*, 88 (February 1983): 1–11; Paul Gordon Lauren, "Diplomacy: History, Theory, and Policy," Gordon A. Craig, "On the Nature of Diplomatic History: The Relevance of Some Old Books," and Samuel F. Wells, Jr., "History and Policy," all in Paul Gordon Lauren (ed.), *Diplomacy: New Approaches in History, Theory, and Policy* (New York, 1979); David Trask, "A Reflection on Historians and Policy Makers," a speech released by the U.S. Department of State in 1976; J. J. Jusserand, *School for Ambassadors* (Freeport, NY, 1968 ed.); Barbara Tuchman, "The Historian's Opportunity," *Saturday Review* (February 1967): 27–31; Gordon A. Craig, *From Bismarck to Adenauer* (New York, 1965 ed.); Charles Webster, *The Art and Practice of Diplomacy* (London, 1961); and D. P. Heatley, *Diplomacy and the Study of International Relations* (Oxford, 1919).

Insightful and thought-provoking treatments about the challenges of learning and then applying lessons of history can be found in U.S., Special Inspector General for Afghanistan Reconstruction, *Lessons Learned Reports*, at www.sigar.mil/lessonslearned; James Goodby and Kenneth Weisbrode, *Practical Lessons from U.S. Foreign* Policy (Cham, CH, 2020); Hal Brands and Jeremi Suri (eds.), *The Power of the Past: History and Statecraft* (Washington, D.C., 2016); John Kerry, John McCain, and Bob Kerrey, "Moving On in Vietnam, But Remembering its Lessons," *New York Times*, May 23, 2016; Richard Hooker, Jr. and Joseph Collins (eds.), *Lessons Encountered: Learning from the Long War* (Washington, D.C., 2015); William Inboden, "Statecraft, Decision Making, and the Varieties of Historical Experience," *Journal of Strategic Studies*, 37 (2014): 291–318; Dan Caldwell, *Vortex of Conflict* (Stanford, CA, 2011), especially Chapter 14, "Lessons and Legacies"; Margaret MacMillan, *Dangerous Games: The Uses and Abuses of History* (New York, 2009); Gordon Wood, *The Purpose of the Past: Reflections on the Uses of History* (New York, 2008); Jeffrey Record, *Making War, Thinking History* (Annapolis, 2002); Russell Leng, *Bargaining and Learning in Recurring Crises* (Ann Arbor, 2000); William Jarosz with Joseph Nye, Jr., "The Shadow of the Past: Learning from History in National Security Decision Making," in Philip Tetlock et al. (eds.), *Behavior, Society, and International Conflict* (New York, 1993), pp. 126–189; Yuen Khong, *Analogies at War* (Princeton, 1992); Michael Howard, *The Lessons of History* (New Haven, 1991); Marc Trachtenberg, *History and Strategy* (Princeton, 1991); Yaacov Vertzberger, *The World in Their Minds* (Stanford, CA, 1990); Richard Neustadt and Ernest R. May, *Thinking in Time: The Uses of History for Decision-Makers* (New York, 1986); Robert Jervis, *Perception and Misperception in International Politics* (Princeton, 1976); Ernest R. May, *Lessons of the Past: The Use and Misuse of History in American Foreign Policy* (New York, 1973); Will and

Ariel Durant, *The Lessons of History* (New York, 1968); and Francis Loewenheim (ed.), *The Historian and the Diplomat* (New York, 1967).

The methodology of structured, focused comparisons is most clearly articulated in Alexander L. George, "Case Studies and Theory Development," in Paul Gordon Lauren (ed.), *Diplomacy: New Approaches in History, Theory, and Policy* (New York, 1979). Greater elaboration of the broader issue of converting lessons of history into a more comprehensive, differentiated theory and the diagnostic use of theory and knowledge for policymaking is discussed in Barry H. Steiner, *Diplomatic Theory* (Lanham, MD, 2018); Alexander L. George and Andrew Bennett, *Case Studies and Theory Development in the Social Sciences* (Cambridge, MA, 2004); Colin Elman and Miriam Fendius Elman (eds.) *Bridges and Boundaries: Historians, Political Scientists, and the Study of International Relations* (Cambridge, MA, 2001); Joseph Lepgold and Miroslav Nincic, *Beyond the Ivory Tower* (New York, 2001); and Alexander L. George, "Knowledge for Statecraft," *International Security*, 22 (Summer 1997): 44–52.

CHAPTER 8

Negotiation

"The art of negotiation," wrote François de Callières in the very first words of his classic *On the Manner of Negotiating with Princes*, "is so important that the fate of the greatest states often depends upon the good or bad conduct of negotiations and upon the degree of capacity in the negotiators themselves." A "single word or act" in high-stakes negotiation, he emphasized, "may do more than the invasion of whole armies."

His insight has provided guidance for statecraft from the early eighteenth century, when it was written, to the present. It certainly influenced those who guided the complex diplomatic negotiations that took place from 1958 to 1963 dealing with nuclear testing. By this time, the unimpeded arms race and the development of intercontinental ballistic missiles had made the possibility of mutual annihilation through nuclear war a reality. The Americans, the Soviets, and the British began to understand all too well that the fallout from their atmospheric tests dangerously elevated the level of the radioactive isotope strontium 90, contaminating the earth and entering the food chain, becoming especially concentrated in milk. This set off considerable alarm about the health and safety of the planet and its inhabitants. Although these three states recognized that they had a common interest in addressing this problem, they all feared falling behind if they halted their own testing program while the others continued.

In an attempt to resolve their mutual dilemma over the advantages and disadvantages of testing or not testing, the parties engaged in what political scientist P. Terrence Hopmann describes as "one of the most important negotiations of the second half of the twentieth century." Despite considerable political and bureaucratic resistance at home to any restrictions at all and the staggering external tensions caused by the shooting down of the American U-2 spy plane by the Soviets in 1960, the Berlin Crisis of 1961, and the Cuban Missile Crisis of 1962, the negotiators persisted. Finally, their long and difficult labors resulted in the watershed 1963 Limited Test Ban Treaty, allowing nuclear tests underground but prohibiting all those in the atmosphere, under water, and in outer space. This agreement not only demonstrated the capacity of states to negotiate in the face of intense domestic opposition and international crises over profound issues of life and death,

but marked the first breakthrough to slow the nuclear arms race with self-imposed restraints, the first arms control agreement between the bitter Cold War rivals, and a major turning point in Soviet-American diplomatic relations as a whole.

Negotiation, as this case clearly illustrates, lies at the very core of diplomacy and provides one of the indispensable tools of statecraft. Indeed, from the earliest evolution of diplomatic practice to our own time, as we saw in Part I, negotiations have profoundly shaped history. They characterize the way in which actors resolve their disputes through mutually acceptable agreements. Negotiations can avert wars and they can end wars. They offer an alternative to the use of force and violence, thus confirming that armed conflict is not an inevitable outcome when interests clash. They are both promoters and products of stability within an international system and cooperative partnerships among its members. As Cardinal Richelieu once wrote in a celebrated passage:

> States receive so much benefit from continuous foreign negotiations . . . that it is unbelievable . . . I am now so convinced of its validity that I dare say emphatically that it is absolutely necessary to the well-being of the state to *negotiate ceaselessly, either openly or secretly, and in all places* . . .

Diplomatic negotiations thus have been—and remain, especially today when the destructive power of modern weapons of mass destruction makes the resort to military force such a monumentally dangerous option—the primary means for resolving conflicts by peaceful means. It is precisely for this reason that the *Oxford English Dictionary* defines diplomacy itself as "the conduct of international relations by negotiation."

PRINCIPLES OF NEGOTIATION

Negotiation and bargaining are closely related concepts. There are elements of each in the other, and on occasion they semantically are used interchangeably. Both negotiation and bargaining involve an *interaction* and *interdependence* among actors, each seeking an outcome that will benefit its own interests, but nevertheless confronting a situation in which the positions and behavior of one influence the expectations, interpretations, counter-positions, and reactions of the other. In this dynamic, the actors consequently—and paradoxically—become both *rivals* and *partners* at the same time and are joined into what has been called an "adverse partnership." Despite this similarity, however, it is useful to distinguish the differences between the two.

Bargaining in statecraft is normally regarded as a *contest* in which each side attempts to maximize its own gains at the expense of the other. It involves manipulating or influencing an adversary's behavior from a distance by a freewheeling exchange of verbal and nonverbal communication, threats and counterthreats, and demonstrations of power and military might, designed to make the other back down or capitulate. Here the emphasis is on rivalry, competition, the conflicting issues that divide the antagonists, taking and holding firmly to fixed positions, and developing strategies to defeat an opponent. The greater the contrast between the interests and positions of the parties, the more serious will be the extent of bargaining, or what strategic theorist Thomas Schelling describes as the threat or use of armed force to manipulate the behavior of others through "arms and influence" and "the diplomacy of violence," as we shall see in Chapter 9 on deterrence and Chapter 10 on coercive diplomacy.

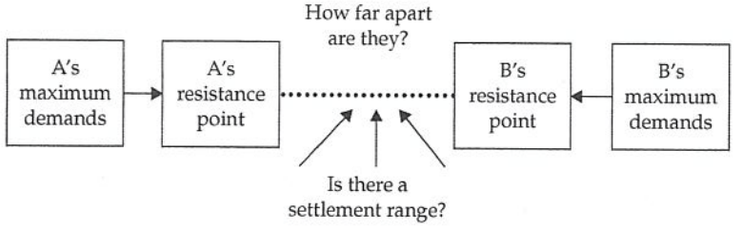
Negotiation, by way of contrast, is the term usually employed to describe *more formal discussions and structured procedures for collaborative problem solving.* It is normally characterized by explicit agendas, exchanged proposals, face-to-face meetings between representatives in agreed-upon settings of time and place, established rules of accommodation, and sometimes lengthy deliberations. Here there is a recognition of conflict, but a much greater emphasis is placed on partnership and an appreciation of the fact the parties have a *shared* risk, a *mutual* desire to avoid the consequences of an enforced threat, and a *common* interest in solving problems. A premium is thus placed on joint, rather than unilateral, action and finding a win–win solution. For these reasons, political scientist Fred Iklé succinctly observes in his book *How Nations Negotiate*, "two elements must normally be present for negotiation to take place: there must be both common interests and issues of conflict. Without common interests there is nothing to negotiate for; without conflict there is nothing to negotiate about."

With this perceptive observation in mind, it is helpful to try to discern why some negotiations succeed and why others fail. Historical experience, as well as considerable research on the nature of negotiation, suggest that several important factors or conditions play vital roles.

1. Shared Interest in an Agreement. One of these conditions is a shared interest in reaching an agreement. Both sides (in cases of bilateral negotiations) or all sides (in cases of multilateral negotiations) must recognize that they have a common problem, admit that their own power is finite and they cannot solve this problem alone, acknowledge the other's claim to participate in finding a diplomatic resolution, and agree that the issue of conflict between them is not so intractable as to prevent the possibility of together forging a satisfactory solution. They must perceive that whatever conflict divides them, they need each other and that joint problem solving is in their best interest. This requires the will and the ability among all parties to enter into negotiations in good faith to try to reach a mutually acceptable, formal agreement that serves their interests.

2. Resistance Points. Another important condition for negotiating success is the ability to ascertain and address each other's resistance points. In negotiating over an issue of conflict, parties typically possess both maximum and minimum demands. At one end of the spectrum are their preferred outcomes, or all the things they ideally would like to obtain. These can be seen in the familiar practice of parties in negotiations initially asking for more than they ever expect to get. At the other end is the minimum for which they are willing to settle, the bottom line beyond which they expect to make no further concessions. This is the *resistance point.* Reliable information about each side's resistance point and the interests, concerns, and attitudes that lie behind it, as one might imagine, is not always easily or quickly obtained. There may be a significant difference between the "declared" and "real" resistance points, for example, and negotiators generally are very reluctant to reveal their minimal demands unless and until they are convinced that others are prepared to do the same. These factors emphasize the importance of having patience in negotiations until some level of trust and a sense of reciprocity can be established.

Once the respective resistance points can be more clearly ascertained, the negotiators are in a position to better assess the significance of the gap between their minimum demands and those of the other side. At this point, they must make a judgment about the value of agreement versus the value of no agreement, or what scholars Roger Fisher and William Ury describe in their book *Getting to Yes* as the *best alternative to a negotiated agreement* (now known in the vocabulary of negotiation by its acronym, BATNA). An agreement will be acceptable only if it produces a better result than each party could obtain in the absence of an agreement. With this in mind, the negotiators may conclude that the distance between their resistance points is simply too great, that it is better to have no agreement than a poor one, and, consequently, that they will walk away from the table and continue their conflict. On the other hand, they may conclude that the other's minimal requirements may be weakened or changed, or that there are ways of satisfying the other's irreducible demands without seriously jeopardizing their own interests. Most important, they believe that somewhere between their respective resistance points, as the figure below suggests, there exists a "settlement range" that would provide mutual benefits.



3. Settlement Range. The shared interests and objectives among the parties to any negotiation are best discovered in that area between the resistance points known as the *settlement range*. It is in this space where the possibilities of partnership become most clearly evident and where negotiators seek some degree of convergence of their interests in reaching an agreement. It is reached only if each side is able to compromise on its maximalist demands in order to share in the expected benefits. The possibilities of finding settlement, of course, generally are easier in bilateral negotiations when there are only two parties involved, as compared to highly complex multilateral negotiations in which there may be many actors, each with their own interests, preferred outcomes, initial maximum demands, and resistance points, and, therefore, a wide variety of possible coalitions and combinations. Moreover, in multilateral negotiations it takes all to say yes, but only one to say no. In all cases, however, the parties must secure benefits that they would not have been able to obtain on their own by peaceful means without negotiation.

It is essential to recognize that reaching a settlement range requires compromise. The extent of such compromise, however, easily can provoke controversy. Negotiators often note that in the real world, diplomacy is "the art of the possible," and that they try to secure the best terms that they can under the circumstances. In this regard, insistence on the perfect is the enemy of the good. Critics, on the other hand, quickly argue that any compromise with an adversary is no more than "appeasement," a "sellout," or "capitulation." This challenge becomes particularly acute when conflicts have lasted over a long period of time and during war when negotiators working toward a cease-fire or armistice or some kind of settlement can find themselves accused of "surrender," "blasphemy," or "treason."

4. Shared Benefits. For this reason, negotiations will not succeed unless there is a perception of shared benefits. Shared interests and objectives are in large part a function of whether the participants believe that an agreement will serve their fundamental interests and bring them some advantage that they otherwise would not be able to secure on their own or at a risk or prohibitive price. The outcome, in other words, is unlikely to be ideal for the negotiators of either party, but it is better for them than the alternatives. They each may secure gains or something of value in different ways and at different levels, depending on their respective interests and asymmetries of power and influence—but they must benefit in one way or another. This is why Callières wisely advised that "the great secret of negotiation is to bring out prominently the common advantage to both parties." Any agreement that did not satisfy this condition, he warned, "is apt to contain the seeds of its own dissolution."

Such mutual benefits may take a variety of forms. Some of these include *extension agreements* designed to provide a formal ratification and continuation of existing arrangements, such as extending tariff agreements, renewing an alliance, or reaffirming access to overseas bases. Some may be *normalization agreements* devised to terminate an abnormal or dangerous situation, such as reestablishing diplomatic relations, ending a trade war, or putting a cease-fire into effect. Others may be *redistribution agreements* that change territorial boundaries or divide market shares. Still others may be *innovation agreements* that set up new arrangements or undertakings that benefit the parties, such as the creation of NATO or the International Criminal Court. The types of agreements as well as the contexts of the negotiating process may differ, depending on which kind of shared benefits are being sought.

5. Skilled Negotiators. The final factor necessary for successful negotiations, of course, is the human dimension of skilled negotiators. None of the factors or conditions described thus far automatically exists or operates on its own, but must be interpreted, shaped, and mobilized by people who possess the requisite skills for the art and the science of negotiation. As Victor Kremenyuk writes in *International Negotiation*, "The center of gravity in this process of negotiation is the negotiator." This explains why writers from Callières to modern authors like Michael Watkins and Susan Rosegrant in their book *Breakthrough International Negotiation: How Great Negotiators Transformed the World's Toughest Post-Cold War Conflicts* all stress that negotiation requires certain kinds of skills.

Among these are the abilities to correctly diagnose the structure of the negotiating situation, evaluate the parties and their interests, establish clear procedures and assess the agenda, analyze the complexities, identify and try to minimize the barriers to agreement, ascertain and address the respective resistance points, determine the value of the best alternatives to a negotiated agreement, and, above all, understand that the process of negotiation is both dynamic and interactive. Other skills include the capability to shape the negotiation process itself, offer incentives

when possible, maintain flexibility on means and firmness on goals, build and sustain momentum, focus on larger principles rather than personalities, foster productive working relationships with other negotiators, and find or create a viable settlement range. Still others entail the ability, as we shall explore in Chapter 11, to practice crisis management, avoid escalation, and defuse tensions. In the process of developing these skills, virtually all writers on negotiation agree on the importance of understanding previous case studies, analyzing why negotiators in the past either succeeded or failed, and learning lessons from history.

These principles apply, in one degree or another, to all cases of international negotiation. The negotiations themselves may range widely over many different subjects, depending on the interests of the actors and the problems they face. Among some of the most challenging, serious, and far-reaching negotiations are those that seek to establish restraints on force and statecraft. As the eighteenth-century French writer Fortuné Barthélemy de Felice observed: "Without negotiation, armed force is an instrument that is both too fragile and too hard that will break in the hands of the one who employs it." It is thus to this matter that we now turn.

THE CONGRESS OF VIENNA, 1814–1815

One of the most famous of all cases of international negotiation occurred with the Congress of Vienna. The leaders of the Great Powers clearly realized that just as their military victory over Napoleon and his vast empire that threatened them all had been made possible only by close collaboration, so too peace and security would be completely dependent on their ability to cooperate with one another. They understood, as we saw in Chapter 2, that all of them (including the defeated country of France) shared a vital interest in reaching mutually acceptable agreements on how best to create and maintain a viable international system that could regulate their patterns of conflict and cooperation with each other. For this reason, they all agreed to organize a diplomatic conference that would enable them to participate together in formal, collective negotiations over their respective interests and positions. As Prussian ambassador Wilhelm von Humboldt, who largely devised the agenda and procedures, wrote:

> The Plenipotentiaries of all the Princes and States that in some way or the other took part in the War were summoned to the same place. In this way, the risk of State-to-State negotiations producing dangerous misunderstandings can be avoided. It is also ensured that the arrangements that come out of the negotiations are not contrary to the general interest and also that they be provided with more force through general sanction or at least common recognition. Finally, it will be possible to agree on some general arrangements contributing to the peace and well-being of Europe.

To accomplish these challenging tasks, the Great Powers sent an unusually gifted and far-sighted group of negotiators to Vienna from September 1814 to June 1815. Chief among them was the host of the congress, Prince Clements von Metternich, a man who had become the Austrian foreign minister in 1806 at the age of thirty-six and continued to serve in that position until 1848, a term

unequaled by any other European diplomat and one indicative of the uncommon talents that he possessed. Far from being narrow in his perspectives, he looked at the international system as a whole, believing that the conflicting interests of states should be reconciled for the common sake of general peace and stability, and showed a genius in conducting negotiations that made such reconciliation possible. He was joined in this broad outlook by the leading British delegate, Foreign Secretary Viscount Robert Castlereagh, who desired to create an equilibrium or balance of power in which all states played their appropriate role. Prince Charles Maurice Talleyrand-Périgord served as the chief representative of France, believing that his own country's best interests would be served by recognizing the legitimate interests of others and by maintaining relations with them on the basis of reciprocal respect. Prince Karl von Hardenberg, who as chancellor and foreign minister headed the Prussian delegation, was joined by the Russian foreign minister Count Karl Robert Nesselrode. Both possessed impressive negotiating skills, but had to contend with the volatility of their sovereigns, Frederick William III and Alexander I, who insisted on coming to Vienna themselves.

Even though these delegates all shared a mutual interest in reaching an agreement, each started off with extensive demands that established serious distances between their positions. Indeed, even before they formally assembled, they began to assert all the things they wanted to obtain. Each of the Great Powers insisted on securing territorial acquisitions that would benefit them the most. In some cases the demands of one conflicted directly with the demands of others who wanted the same real estate for themselves. Major differences emerged over the meanings of "just equilibrium" and "order," over the nature and political orientation of new or reconstituted governments, and over the agenda and organization of the negotiations themselves. Indeed, an indication of the degree of tension and distance between the initial resistance points appeared so great that three of them created an alliance against the other two, the powers readied their armies, and a renewal of war itself seemed highly likely. The Russians made the mistake (repeated by other historical as well as contemporary negotiators) of assuming that military might alone would be sufficient for them to get their way. As one of their generals arrogantly boasted: "One does not need to worry much about negotiations when one has 600,000 men under arms."

Despite such attitudes and differences, after several months of negotiations the parties began to reach a clearer understanding of their own genuine interests and to ascertain more accurately each other's actual resistance points. Although many of the difficulties already had been resolved during their deliberations, the process certainly was enhanced when Napoleon shockingly escaped from his imprisonment on Elba at the end of February and was not defeated at Waterloo until June. This experience reminded them of their shared interest in reaching an agreement and made them realize that they could create a settlement range in which their respective interests might be successfully accommodated. In this regard, the negotiators came to learn that such a range could be increased if they paid less attention to specific details or annoying personalities and focused instead on larger principles of settlement. These included "compensation" (for costs incurred in the effort to defeat Napoleon), "legitimacy" (respect for the prerogatives of pre-Napoleonic

rulers and the restoration of their thrones), and "balance of power" (an equilibrium of armed force between the Great Powers so as to deter unilateral aggression on the part of any of them). Yet another principle emerged as well, and this was one of ethics and human rights, for they all agreed to recognize religious toleration and to condemn the international slave trade as "repugnant to the principles of humanity and universal morality."

Once they created the range of settlement, the negotiators then could proceed to create the actual terms of formal agreements that would provide all the Great Powers with specific benefits. Britain gained Heligoland in the North Sea, Malta in the Mediterranean, Cape Colony in South Africa, Ceylon in the Indian Ocean, and several islands in the Caribbean. Austria obtained possessions on the Italian peninsula, along the eastern coast of the Adriatic Sea, and in Poland. Prussia secured almost half of Saxony, parts of Poland, and extensive holdings in the Rhineland. Russia received Finland, vast Polish provinces, and land along the Black Sea formerly belonging to the Ottoman Turks. And, although they imposed a war indemnity, they remarkably allowed France to restore the Bourbon monarchy and to keep most of its original territory.

These individual gains were enhanced by the larger benefit to them all of securing a balance of power and what the negotiators hoped would be an international system based on compromise and consent bringing them peace and security after years of nearly continuous and convulsive war. In this regard, they were extremely mindful of issues of force and statecraft. They agreed to a combination of significant reductions in the size of their standing armies, mutual restraints, and the inclusion of specific military provisions within their final settlement. This included creating buffer zones and neutralizing those areas most likely to provoke competition among themselves. Fearing that French, Prussian, and Austrian rivalries might all intersect at the common point between them and explode, for example, they promised to guarantee the neutrality of Switzerland. Similarly, to prevent rival claims of the Russians, Prussians, and Austrians that converged precisely at Cracow from the danger of escalating into war, they agreed to demilitarize the city and its surrounding territory by pledging that "no armed force shall be introduced upon any pretense whatever." Around France, however, the negotiators wanted to station troops or to have them close by. They thus positioned the armies of the Dutch and the Prussians along its northern borders and stationed the armed forces of Austria and the Royal Navy of Britain not far away, should they become necessary. In the Second Peace of Paris of November 1815 they agreed to deprive France of several strategic fortresses in the north and east and to maintain an army of occupation for three to five years, depending on the country's progress in the reestablishment of order and tranquility. At the same time, in the Quadruple Alliance they agreed to constitute themselves as the Concert of Europe and hold diplomatic conferences "for the purpose of consulting upon their common interests" and, as we shall explore more fully in the next chapter, to use their armed forces as a deterrent for collective security to enforce their negotiated settlement. Now, for the first time in a quarter-century, statesmen could turn their attention to problems of peace rather than preparations for war.

THE CONFERENCE ON SECURITY AND COOPERATION IN EUROPE, 1972–1975

For students of negotiation, the landmark Conference on Security and Cooperation in Europe (CSCE) stands out as one of the most intricate, innovative, and interesting cases in modern diplomacy. It emerged at the time of *détente* as a result of the dissatisfaction generated by the failure to hold a general peace conference following the Second World War and the dangerous tensions created by the division of Europe during the Cold War, as we saw in Chapter 5. In seeking to address a number of the resulting security issues through negotiation, however, the conference actually set into motion forces that would grow to be of revolutionary importance.

The actual negotiating marathon began in November 1972 after the government of Finland invited several states to participate in preparatory talks about principles and procedures for a wide-ranging security conference. It took them months to reach any agreement; but once they did, it paved the way to launch CSCE. They understood that this would mark the first postwar gathering of all of the states of Europe (except for Albania, which chose not to attend), the United States, and Canada; the first meeting of the two military alliances of NATO and the Warsaw Pact along with the neutral and nonaligned states; the first time for both Germanies to jointly take part in an international conference; and the first time among these participants, both large and small, that each would have an equal vote and the power of an equal veto in the negotiations. As Finnish president Urho Kekkonen observed: "This is no meeting of the victors of war; nor is it a meeting of the Great Powers. Our Conference is the common endeavor of all concerned governments on the basis of mutual respect and equality to reach solutions on vital questions concerning all of us."

With these thoughts very much on their minds, thirty-five separate delegations gathered together in Geneva to formally and officially conduct serious and substantive negotiations from September 1973 to July 1975. Given this long period of time, the need to have widespread collaboration among so many participants, the rotation of committee chairs, and the impact of numerous government agencies, along with changing domestic politics, there was little opportunity for a single individual negotiator to stand out in name or reputation above the rest. The challenging tasks at hand, however, required extraordinary levels of negotiating skills. For this reason, all delegations were led by diplomats of ambassadorial rank.

The negotiators at CSCE hoped to reach an agreement that would improve security and cooperation in Europe, but they all initially wanted something very different. One observer described them as a heterogeneous "pack of dogs warily circling and sniffing at one another." The Soviets insisted that the sole purpose of the negotiations should be to obtain official recognition of the territorial and political order that they had imposed by force on Eastern Europe at the end of the Second World War. For their part, the Communist governments of Eastern Europe wanted to gain legitimization as normal members of the international community, guarantees of nonintervention (their historical memories of the Soviet invasions of Hungary in 1956 and Czechoslovakia in 1968 remained strong), and access to Western technological advances and economic opportunities. The Western

European members of NATO and the European Communities declared that their most important objective was to bring about peaceful change by means of greater freedom, and thus insisted that security could not be considered without respecting justice and human rights. Neutral and nonaligned countries such as Austria, Finland, and Switzerland, among others, also took a firm stand on advancing human rights, particularly behind the Iron Curtain, and on promoting *détente* by defusing the acute tension between the superpowers and their allies. In sharp contrast, the United States, guided by Secretary of State Henry Kissinger, remained skeptical and largely uninterested in the negotiations at all.

It took almost two years of protracted and complex negotiations in Geneva to determine the respective resistance points of the participants and to find some range of settlement. Achieving consensus among *all* thirty-five delegations representing their own interests and sometimes those of a bloc or alliance on an agreement seeking to address vital and multifaceted problems presented an enormous challenge. Their common interests and issues of conflict were seen in both broad principles and specific subjects. The principles involved sovereign equality and the non-use of force, which entitled the participants to act and be treated as states in their own right, the inviolability of borders, the territorial integrity of states, the peaceful settlement of disputes, and respect for human rights, among others. The negotiators decided to organize specific subjects into different categories or "baskets": security affairs; cooperation in economics, science and technology, and environmental protection; human rights; and follow-up meetings to monitor compliance. Various texts were submitted over and over again to small working committees in order to try to narrow the differences and find a settlement range. It became very clear to all the negotiators in this process that there would be linkage between the principles and the subjects, and that in order to obtain what they wanted in one or more areas they would have to make concessions in others. This generated great frustration, particularly among the Soviets and their premier, Leonid Brezhnev, who had staked his personal prestige on the outcome, as they watched what they hoped would be a simple and quick conference about borders turn into a lengthy negotiation about the whole meaning of comprehensive security and cooperation.

In the end, the terms of the Final Act of CSCE, signed by all the heads of state in a concluding ceremony in Helsinki in August 1975, depended on the relative balance between these principles and subjects and the concrete benefits that they bestowed upon the parties. As one of the participants cogently observed: "The principles are valueless without the practice." All agreed on their common responsibility to settle their disputes by peaceful means and fulfill their obligations under international law. Of particular importance to force and statecraft, they believed that they all would benefit by mutually pledging themselves to lessen confrontations that risked armed force, to develop confidence-building measures by providing advanced notification of major military maneuvers and exchanging military observers, and, most significantly, to

> refrain in their mutual relations, as well as in their international relations in general, from the threat or use of force against the territorial integrity or political independence of any State, or in any other manner inconsistent with the purposes of the United Nations and the present declaration.

"No consideration," they emphatically established, "may be invoked to serve to warrant resort to the threat or use of force in contravention of this principle."

The final agreement provided other benefits as well. All parties anticipated that they would gain from their promise to increase economic cooperation by expanding trade and business opportunities, to share scientific and technological knowledge and to conduct joint research projects, and to take measures that would help protect their shared environment. The Soviet Union obtained the one major objective that it regarded as essential to its security and so desperately had sought: formal recognition of the existing borders of Eastern Europe. A number of critics in the West responded by accusing the negotiators of "selling out" and "capitulation" by conceding this provision. What they failed to appreciate, however, is that in order to secure this benefit, the Soviet Union had to grant major concessions, both of which would play unanticipated and profound roles in the near future. One of these was to refrain from any form of armed intervention or threat of such intervention against another participating state, as it had done in the past. The other was a pledge to respect human rights.

Despite determined resistance from the Soviet Union, which described the whole subject as "interference in internal affairs" and an "unjustified waste of time," other negotiators insisted on making human rights an integral part of their negotiations. They argued that peace and security in their most meaningful sense are composed of many different and interrelated dimensions. In this regard, they insisted on a recognition of what they called the "indivisibility of security" in which genuine international security, national security, and the security of individuals are all strongly linked together. In fact, they described this connection as an "essential factor" for security and cooperation and refused to budge on other matters unless this was acknowledged and given practical effect. The final agreement consequently contained what has been called "the most spectacular innovation of the Helsinki process" and one "nothing short of revolutionary": explicit provisions linking respect for human rights with security and establishing that how sovereign nation-states treat their citizens is a legitimate matter of international scrutiny. The text boldly declared that the participating states "will act in conformity with the purposes and the principles of the Charter of the United Nations and with the Universal Declaration of Human Rights," recognizing civil and political rights, freedom of thought and conscience, and the right of individual citizens "to know" about these rights and to "act" accordingly.

Armed with this highly publicized agreement on human rights, individuals trapped under oppressive Communist regimes began to organize nongovernmental organizations (NGOs) for the purpose of monitoring compliance with the promises. The Final Act proved to be a beginning rather than an end, for it gave them both hope and legitimacy, and they seized it. Noted Soviet dissidents like Yuri Orlov, for example, immediately formed the Moscow Helsinki Group and began to speak out at great personal risk—but with the knowledge that others could help. "We do not have the means by which to reach our [own] government," he explained. "My appeal to Brezhnev probably got as far as the regional KGB office." "The crucial question," however, was that now, with the CSCE agreement, Soviet officials could be reached "through the governments of other countries." Others realized this fact as well, including activists who founded Helsinki Watch

(eventually Human Rights Watch) in Poland, dissident (and future president) Václav Havel, who created Charter 77 in Czechoslovakia, and those who established the larger International Helsinki Federation for Human Rights to draw public attention to any violations that might occur. Although persecuted, arrested, broken at labor camps and psychiatric hospitals, and exiled by their own governments fearful of losing power, they courageously persisted and watched these seeds sown at CSCE assume political importance and thereby change the world they had known, playing powerful roles in eventually leading to the Velvet Revolution, the fall of the Iron Curtain, the collapse of the Soviet Union and its empire, and then the end of the Cold War itself.

CONTEMPORARY NEGOTIATIONS OVER NUCLEAR WEAPONS AND MISSILES IN NORTH KOREA

Ever since the highly secretive, Communist, and feudal family-based government of North Korea began developing its nuclear capabilities in the mid-1950s, it has presented one of the world's most serious challenges of weapons proliferation. Numerous international and regional efforts attempted to halt this development, but nothing seemed to work and suspicions ran deep. The founder of the country, Kim Il Sung, after all, had been responsible for attacking South Korea and starting the Korean War. He remained acutely aware that U.S. general Douglas MacArthur had requested nuclear weapons be used against him and that thousands of American troops were stationed just across his border. Although he had acceded to the Nuclear Non-Proliferation Treaty, others always remained doubtful about his level of compliance. These doubts became confirmed in 1993 when U.S. intelligence photos exposed North Korean duplicity by revealing hidden facilities, prompting the International Atomic Energy Agency (IAEA) to demand inspections on illicit nuclear sites.

When the United Nations Security Council began to discuss the possibility of imposing sanctions, North Korea announced in a fit of anger that it would regard any such actions as "acts of war" and respond accordingly. Kim Il Sung expelled international weapons inspectors, threatened to turn Seoul into a "sea of fire," and removed enough plutonium-rich fuel rods from the core of a reactor to provide the raw material for several nuclear bombs. These provocative actions revealed that he not only had no intention of controlling proliferation, but possessed the capacity to produce weapons of mass destruction. These, in turn, could escalate an arms race in Asia, could seriously threaten South Korea and Japan and the American troops stationed in both countries, and could be sold to eager bidders like Iran, Libya, Pakistan, and Syria.

The Clinton administration first responded to this crisis by considering coercive diplomacy, a strategy that we will analyze in Chapter 10. But it quickly became apparent that provocative threats would be completely counterproductive and might well push North Korea over the edge into war. At this point, Kim Il Sung died and was succeeded by his son Kim Jong Il, leading to hope that a new leader would bring a new approach. The Americans consequently reached the conclusion, in the words of one official, that it was "best to engage in dialogue."

Both sides realized the importance of entrusting this task to skilled professional negotiators. The Americans selected Assistant Secretary of State for Political-Military Affairs Robert Gallucci, a man with two decades of non-proliferation experience, to head their delegation. The North Koreans sent Vice Foreign Minister Kang Sok Ju to head their team. Not surprisingly, when the two sides began, their opening positions were very far apart. At times they appeared diametrically opposed. As one of the American negotiators describes it:

> We played hard initially, hoping that the North Koreans would come around, and we sat there and we butted heads. We'd make our points, they'd make their points, we'd go back [and] the interagency would say, "No, we don't want to change our position." So we'd go back . . . say the same thing, they'd say the same thing, and we'd go back to our country and say, "We're still butting heads," but the principals would say, "No, we're still not going to give in."

In this process, both sides eventually came to a serious assessment of their own interests, realizing that military solutions presented no credible options, that there were few viable alternatives, and that they shared an interest in reaching an agreement. They thus came to realize that they needed to adjust their initial resistance points in order to find a range of settlement. One of the American participants recalls his North Korean counterpart finally saying, "'If we're willing to take some steps, you have to take some steps as well.' That took us a while to figure out—what we could do and how far we could go."

Once each side demonstrated a willingness to make adjustments, they were able to negotiate an agreement known as the Agreed Framework of 1994 that they hoped would bring them shared benefits. The United States, for example, would secure the substantial gain of limiting nuclear proliferation because North Korea agreed to immediately shut down and eventually dismantle its particularly dangerous graphite reactor and plutonium reprocessing facility. In exchange, the United States agreed to provide North Korea with shipments of heavy fuel oil and to oversee construction of two proliferation-resistant, light-water reactors for civilian energy. Benefits thus would occur through reciprocity, and both sides thereby would be able to avoid war.

Despite the celebration that followed the agreement, the Agreed Framework nevertheless suffered from a number of problems. Sharp criticism, for example, arose from the IAEA and from those states in Asia that had vital interests in the danger that these nuclear weapons posed for them but had been completely excluded from the bilateral U.S.–North Korean negotiations. To make matters worse, a new majority in Congress publicly announced its intention to actually undermine the Agreed Framework. Such pronouncements and the subsequent U.S. failure to honor its obligation to construct the light-water reactors infuriated North Korean leaders. They therefore decided to restart a nuclear weapons program and fire a test missile over Japan. These actions, in turn, contributed to President George W. Bush's determination to isolate rather than engage the regime and then, in 2002, to accuse it of being in league with Iraq and Iran as part of what he called "the Axis of Evil." This highly provocative statement, especially when coupled with his administration's proclamation of the doctrine of preemption, could not help but contribute to North Korea's perception that it—like Iraq—might be the victim of

an attack by the United States as well, and that it therefore was imperative to create a nuclear deterrent for its own security.

North Korea consequently withdrew from the Nuclear Non-Proliferation Treaty, expelled all IAEA inspectors, and restarted its nuclear reactor. The United States announced that it, too, would abandon the Agreed Framework. Each side blamed the other for the collapse. Kim Jong Il insisted that North Korea would never again negotiate in the face of such "hostile" American policy. Vice President Dick Cheney reciprocated by asserting, "We don't negotiate with evil, we defeat it."

Despite this intense rhetoric and hostility, the parties realized through time—as other practitioners of statecraft have before and since—that it was in their mutual interest to continue to negotiate and thereby try to avoid the risks and dangers of miscalculation, escalation, and possible war. As a consequence, the United States, North Korea, South Korea, China, Japan, and Russia initiated multilateral Six-Party Negotiations in Beijing. Their efforts resulted in a 2005 agreement in which Kim Jong Il pledged to abandon "all nuclear weapons and existing nuclear programs" in exchange for economic aid and desperately needed food assistance for a starving population and a pledge from the United States that it would not attack or invade North Korea.

Nevertheless, serious problems persisted. Provocation, panic, hand-wringing frustration, and skepticism caused the negotiations to start, stop, and then start again. In 2006, for example, North Korea conducted its first underground nuclear weapons test. The United Nations responded with sanctions of coercive diplomacy, demanding that North Korea "not conduct any further nuclear test or launch of a ballistic missile." Negotiations resumed three months later. In 2007 North Korea began to dismantle its plutonium reactor and, in a move most unusual for this regime shrouded in secrecy, handed over many details of its nuclear program. But disputes arose over whether this information was correct and complete and whether the United States was fulfilling its promise of foodstuffs and heavy fuel oil. In 2009 North Korea launched two highly controversial missile tests, conducted its second nuclear weapons test, and announced its intention of pulling out of any negotiations completely. Relations deteriorated even further the next year when it sunk a South Korean naval warship, shelled a border island with a loss of civilian lives, and announced that it had just constructed a new uranium enrichment facility. The Obama administration struggled to find any meaningful way to respond, and by 2011, U.S. secretary of defense Robert Gates ominously concluded that North Korea "is becoming a direct threat to the United States."

In the midst of this highly unstable setting, Kim Jong Il died, leaving power and the fate of his isolated yet nuclear-armed regime in the hands of military commanders and his young, untested son Kim Jong Un. In January 2012 North Korea announced its willingness to return to the table and resume the long-suspended Six-Party Negotiations over its nuclear weapons program. The next month Pyongyang agreed to accept IAEA inspectors, to stop its uranium enrichment, and to cease testing its long-range ballistic missiles in exchange for 240,000 tons of critical food aid. Yet, just as relations seemed to be improving, North Korea suddenly conducted another missile test in direct violation of the agreement. The United States immediately suspended all planned food shipments, while the

United Nations Security Council condemned the launch as raising "grave security concerns" and imposed even tougher sanctions in an effort to get North Korea to return to the negotiating table.

But negotiation takes both sides, and Kim Jong Un was not interested in negotiation and the concessions that it would entail. In fact, this coercive pressure made him even more convinced that his very survival and that of his country were vitally dependent precisely on his weapons program. Only the possession of nuclear weapons, he believed, could provide diplomatic leverage and the critical guarantee of self-preservation by deterring an invasion or regime change against him. These alone could provide the "great equalizer" that enabled his small and impoverished state to protect itself against even the most powerful of adversaries. Thus, despite previous promises, intensified international condemnation and sanctions, and the extraordinary cost to the people of North Korea, he continued testing to improve the effectiveness and survivability of his nuclear warheads and ballistic missiles. Each step and each test, of course, made "the security dilemma" even worse by intensifying rather than diminishing the suspicions, fears, and reactions of others.

Tensions dramatically escalated in 2016 and 2017 when North Korea decided to conduct still further tests. These broke through two vital thresholds. One of these was the testing of what was presumed to be a hydrogen bomb, more powerful than any previous weapon in the past. The other was the successful tests of intercontinental ballistic missiles (ICBMs) with a range of several thousand miles. This meant that now—for the first time—North Korea possessed the potential technological capability of turning its rhetoric about striking the United States into reality.

Beyond weapons, these tests also launched a bizarre barrage of highly personal insults, name-calling, and threats. President Trump called Kim "a madman,"

Kim Jong Un and His Weapons Program

"a sick puppy," "short and fat," and "Little Rocket Man." Kim reciprocated by describing Trump as "mentally deranged." Trump declared, "North Korea best not make any more threats to the United States. They will be met with fire and fury the likes of which the world has never seen." He warned before the United Nations General Assembly that America would "totally destroy North Korea" if forced to defend itself or its allies. Kim responded by saying that Trump would "pay dearly" for making such threats and that he was considering detonating "an unprecedented scale hydrogen bomb" somewhere over the Pacific in order to dramatically demonstrate the weapons at his disposal. Not to be outdone, Trump tweeted:

> North Korean Leader Kim Jong Un just stated that the "Nuclear Button is on his desk at all times." Will someone from his depleted and food starved regime please inform him that I too have a Nuclear Button, but it is much bigger & more powerful one than his, and my Button works!

Fearing that these bellicose threats and counter-threats might well lead to armed conflict, and after pleas from highly vulnerable allies South Korea and Japan, Secretary of State Rex Tillerson searched to find some pathway to negotiation. President Trump rejected the idea, telling him, "Save your energy, Rex, we'll do what has to be done! Sorry, but only one thing will work." All this appeared to convey that a decision either had been made, or was about to be made, without careful planning and that an attack with armed force to somehow "take out" North Korea's nuclear capacity was imminent. In fact, this possibility was taken so seriously that it prompted U.S. Army chief of staff General Mark Milley to issue a highly unusual public statement saying, "There are no good, easy . . . risk-free [military] options here. This is extraordinarily difficult, extraordinarily dangerous. No one should underestimate it."

The intense fear of possible catastrophic consequences generated by these developments provided powerful motivation that drove both the United States and North Korea back to reconsidering the merits of negotiation. There were other factors as well. South Korean president Moon Jae-in worked tirelessly behind the scenes to encourage the two sides to get together. In addition, severe coercive sanctions by the United States and those unanimously imposed by the Security Council (this time supported by North Korea's sole supporting patron of China) were devastating the economy, and the only means of relieving this crippling pressure could be found if Kim opened negotiations. At the same time, his successful missile and weapons tests allowed him to claim that his nuclear arsenal was "complete," and thus that he could now negotiate from a position of strength rather than weakness. He therefore announced in early 2018 that he was "open to dialogue" and invited Trump to engage in negotiations.

Kim's invitation was accepted. Trump thus became the first sitting American president to ever meet with a North Korean leader. Amid stage-managed pageantry and visual displays of personal friendship between these two who had threatened war and hurled insults at each other, they met in Singapore in 2018. But despite Trump's description that they "fell in love" with each other and his boast that as a result of their negotiations "There is no longer a Nuclear Threat from North Korea," the effects were largely atmospheric, at least in the short term. They could not agree on any concrete steps to be taken or for time frames to be established. A subsequent 2019 meeting in Hanoi collapsed abruptly and a visit to the demilitarized zone on the Korean peninsula resulted in only a handshake. There was more stagecraft than statecraft, and the two leaders failed to reach any substantive negotiated agreement.

Part of the difficulty was the lack of trust. Both countries regarded the other as unreliable. For three generations Kim's family had ruled over the world's most brutal and repressive regime, loathed as an international pariah; had engaged in negotiations not to reach agreements but to buy time to develop their clandestine weapons program; and had a long pattern of repeatedly reneging on promises. America, for its part, already had demonstrated a willingness to invade Iraq over the mere suspicion of nuclear weapons, while Trump had raised questions about his own trustworthiness by unilaterally abandoning previous promises made in a negotiated nuclear agreement with Iran (as we shall explore in Chapter 10), and his national security advisor John Bolton had stridently and openly advocated launching a war against North Korea itself. Why, it was asked, should either side trust the other?

But the major challenge in finding any settlement range, of course, came as a result of the enormous distance between their resistance points. The United States announced that it was unwilling to consider a freeze of existing programs or an incremental step-by-step process to reduce them. Instead, Secretary of State Mike Pompeo insisted that North Korea abandon *all* weapons of mass destruction and ballistic missiles "at a stroke" in order to achieve "complete, verifiable, and irreversible denuclearization" before there could be any sanctions relief. Kim, in staggering contrast, viewed these expansive demands as nothing short of completely unacceptable unilateral disarmament. He insisted that he would never surrender a single weapon or a single missile, or stop producing nuclear material unless major sanctions were lifted and serious, tangible, commensurate concessions were made to address North Korea's vital security interests. The foreign ministry in Pyongyang consequently announced: "We are no longer interested in such talks that bring nothing to us. As we get nothing in return, we will no longer gift the U.S. president with something he can boast of." To drive home the point, Kim resumed building his weapons program and testing his ballistic missiles. Lessons of history would indicate that unless some rather significant changes and recalibrations were made in these sharply conflicting positions, the future of successful negotiations with a mutually acceptable outcome would remain highly in doubt.

ANALYSIS

These historical cases certainly reveal the central role that negotiation plays in high-stakes diplomacy and confirm the observation of Callières that the very fate of nations can hinge on the success or the failure of negotiations involving force and statecraft. In addition, a focused comparison of these cases can help us to more fully understand the broader principles of negotiation, to consider some lessons that might be drawn, and to appreciate how recent transformations in history have affected the tasks of negotiation in our world today.

It is clear, for example, that negotiations cannot succeed unless there is a shared interest in actually reaching an agreement. All parties must recognize

that they have an interest in jointly finding a diplomatic solution to a problem or issue of conflict that they have in common. Those who gathered at the Congress of Vienna in 1814–1815 understood this. They realized that despite their intense competition over the distribution of territory and their different visions of peace and security, they shared a vital interest in creating a viable international system and in preventing another Napoleon from arising in their midst. The thirty-five delegations at the CSCE also fully appreciated the fact that although they entered into the negotiations with many diverse interests that drove them apart, it was in their mutual interest to reach a formal agreement to safeguard their future. Despite the efforts of the United Nations, the United States, and numerous Asian countries to check nuclear proliferation in North Korea, however, the lengthy and tortuous route of negotiations certainly reveals that the parties have not yet shared the same level of interest in reaching an agreement.

These cases from history also demonstrate that negotiations will fail if the participants are unable to see beyond the initial and often posturing demands and to correctly ascertain and address their respective resistance points. All negotiators must determine what they are—and are not—willing to concede and must assess their best alternative to a negotiated agreement. Despite a number of outrageous opening positions and the opinion of the Russians that since they possessed such formidable military power they did not even need to negotiate at all, for example, the delegates assembled at Vienna eventually came to understand what they regarded as their bare minimums, or bottom lines, beyond which they were unwilling to grant further concessions in order to reach an agreement. The same process occurred during the negotiations for CSCE, as it became evident that the Soviet Union would not be granted the recognition of borders it so desperately sought unless it addressed the resistance point of the West that human rights provisions be included in the Final Act. As they worked toward the Agreed Framework, the U.S. negotiators made it clear that they would not make concessions unless the North Koreans agreed to freeze part of their nuclear program, while the North Koreans stated that the negotiations would collapse unless they received a commitment from the United States to provide oil shipments and two new reactors to compensate for energy lost from their closed nuclear reactor. This initially worked, but as conditions and political leadership changed through time, the distance between their respective resistance points only increased.

Successful negotiations also require the ability to discover shared interests and objectives that exist in a settlement range somewhere between the respective resistance points. The negotiators must be able to find or create an area where their interests converge and where they might become partners rather than simply rivals. Diplomats at the Congress of Vienna discovered that their settlement range expanded considerably when they agreed that they genuinely needed each other and that they should focus less on specific details and more on the larger principles of compensation, legitimacy, and balance of power. Those involved in the negotiations over CSCE came to learn the same lesson, although it took almost two years to do so. Agreement was facilitated when the delegates realized their common interests in the broader "indivisibility of security" and the linkage among the inviolability of frontiers, the peaceful settlement of disputes, refraining from the threat or use of force, and respect for human rights. Similarly, although the settlement range

between the United States and North Korea was extremely narrow, the negotiators managed to find enough common ground to result in the Agreed Framework that successfully froze plutonium production on the Korean peninsula for ten years. Since that time, such agreement has proven to be elusive.

These cases also show that negotiated agreements will not be reached unless all sides perceive that they have secured some advantage or shared benefit that they otherwise would not have been able to obtain peacefully without negotiation. In the settlement of 1814–1815, all of the Great Powers benefited from their new collective security arrangement, and each of the victors obtained significant gains of territory that they had not possessed previously. CSCE was even more remarkable in this regard, for thirty-five separate delegations needed to be convinced that they would gain from the agreement. By 1975, all participants came to believe that they would benefit from the provisions reaffirming the principles of the United Nations and international law, military confidence-building measures, and increased economic opportunities, among others addressing comprehensive security and cooperation. More specifically, the Soviets secured recognition of existing borders, the Eastern Europeans attained guarantees against armed intervention, and the West, along with neutral and nonaligned countries, gained provisions about human rights. Although the Agreed Framework gave both parties benefits, these were short-lived due to the fact that neither side fully lived up to its promises. This sowed distrust and embittered relations, making it much more difficult to pursue further negotiations.

The critical importance of skilled negotiators is also demonstrated in each of these cases. None of the issues of conflict between the parties resolved themselves. Final agreements were reached only because of able human negotiators with the skills to find common interests, to ascertain resistance points, to formulate settlement ranges, and to create mutual benefits. These include the abilities to identify and minimize the barriers to agreement, to evaluate the parties and their interests, to shape the process of negotiation, and to build and sustain momentum with an appropriate proportion of give and take. Those responsible for guiding the Congress of Vienna to reaching an agreement, for example, included Metternich and Castlereagh, two of the most impressive negotiators in the annals of diplomacy. The complex and intricately interconnected provisions of the Final Act of CSCE, which provided benefits of security and cooperation for all parties, could only have been produced by a wide assemblage of very skilled negotiators.

Similarly, even the detractors of the Agreed Framework agreed that Gallucci and Kang possessed remarkable negotiating skills to reach any agreement at all in an atmosphere of enormous hostility and total lack of trust. In contrast, many foreign policy professionals worried about the likelihood of success in the personality-driven Trump–Kim talks when they failed to work out the necessary details of an agreement prior to the summits and when one of the two principals said that he did not need to listen to expert advice or carefully prepare for the negotiations in advance because he could rely, as he put it, "on my touch, my feel." Regardless of the possession or the lack of skills, however, the contemporary case of weapons and missiles in North Korea serves as a reminder that negotiators themselves are instruments of policy, and if that policy is ill conceived, inflexible, or wildly erratic, then there is little they can be expected to achieve.

Finally, one of the great advantages of analyzing cases of negotiation ranging from the beginning of the nineteenth century to our own time is that it helps to reveal the impact of what we have called the historic diplomatic revolution. Part of this phenomenon has been the expanding number of actors who have demanded active participation in important international negotiations. At the Congress of Vienna, the opinions of only the five Great Powers of Europe made any serious difference. Although other parties sometimes had intense interests at stake in the negotiations, they either played little role or were not invited to participate at all. In sharp contrast—and indicative of the expansion of the diplomatic community—not only did a total of thirty-five delegations (including two from North America) participate in CSCE, but each, regardless of size or level of power, demanded an equal vote. Since the rules of accommodation required consensus, this gave even the smallest of states extraordinary influence. This proved to be of great frustration to the superpowers, who discovered that they could no longer dictate to others and that their vast arsenals of sophisticated weapons and armed force were of little use in advancing their national interests in this kind of setting. The impact of the number of actors was also seen in the negotiations over nuclear proliferation in North Korea. Part of the weakness in both the substance and the legitimacy of the Agreed Framework and the Trump–Kim talks resulted from the fact that others with vital interests in the outcome had been excluded from the deliberations, including allies, the great and small nations of East Asia, members of the United Nations, as well as all of those parties to the Nuclear Non-Proliferation Treaty who were deeply fearful about proliferating weapons around the entire world.

Numbers, of course, do not tell the whole story of the growing complexities in negotiations, for yet another change in the diplomatic revolution has been the transformation in the types of actors. In traditional diplomacy, such as that of 1814–1815 at Vienna, the only meaningful actors were nation-states. Those called upon to negotiate on behalf of the national interests of their countries did not have to worry about influences outside their immediate and closed circle, known as the "inner ring." By the time of CSCE, much had changed dramatically, for as one observer noted, "it involved not only governments and their representatives talking behind closed doors but also citizens and their organizations hammering on those same doors." Transnational corporations seeking trade opportunities, labor associations advocating jobs, NGOs and religious bodies promoting human rights, and scientists urging increased research cooperation, among many others, all mobilized their energies to make a profound impact on the Final Act. An expansive variety of different organizations and interest groups at home and abroad continue to try to exert similar influence on the negotiations over nuclear proliferation in North Korea today.

Further examples of the impact of nonstate actors on negotiations involving issues of force and statecraft can be seen in the creation of the Mine Ban Treaty prohibiting antipersonnel land mines and the establishment of the International Criminal Court. As scholars Fen Osler Hampson and Michael Hart observe in their book *Multilateral Negotiations*, these different types of actors "see themselves as direct stakeholders and thus seek to affect outcomes by bringing pressure to bear on their national government. Many of these groupings also have an international constituency . . . enabling them to mount effective campaigns at the national and international levels." They conclude, therefore, that negotiation today "is, in essence, a coalition-building exercise involving states, nonstate actors, and international organizations."

International negotiations also have been complicated by the growing impact of domestic politics. The negotiators at the Congress of Vienna gave little thought to political opposition that might arise to challenge their deliberations and decisions. In fact, Castlereagh condemned even the prospect of public opinion, describing it as a dangerous element "to force . . . upon the nations, at the expense of their honor and of the tranquility of the world." By the time of the Paris Peace Conference of 1919, this situation had changed dramatically. Here, the negotiators constantly confronted the pressures of what they called the "New Diplomacy" with its "open diplomacy" and "public diplomacy" generated by opinion and domestic politics. Delegates at CSCE similarly found their negotiations widely covered by the press and heavily influenced by political and bureaucratic factors at home. To Kissinger's frustration, several congressional Democrats paid very careful attention to the deliberations, and some even insisted on going to Geneva to attend the negotiations in person. In the case of North Korea, the Republican majority of Congress deliberately worked to sabotage the Agreed Framework negotiated by the Democratic Clinton administration. During the Trump–Kim talks, highly politicized broadcasts, editorials, speeches, and tweets of differing opinions, as well as advocates and protestors in the streets, all attempted to affect the outcome of negotiations.

Modern technology and the growing complexity of security issues also have characterized the diplomatic revolution and challenged negotiations. Delegates at the Congress of Vienna conducted their deliberations slowly, with the knowledge that it took nineteen days for instructions to travel from London to Vienna, and with narrow conceptions of security defined largely in terms of territory and military forces armed with relatively simple weapons of limited destructive capacities. The negotiators at CSCE, in comparison, communicated instantly with their foreign ministries and political leadership by electronic and encrypted means. They also worked mightily to understand the various dimensions of "complex interdependence" and the "indivisibility of security," exploring the many interconnections among military force, economic strength, technological advances, environmental health, and human rights. In contemporary negotiations over nuclear proliferation in North Korea, highly sophisticated technology is used to gather intelligence, particularly spy satellites in space. The sheer complexity of the issues at stake is revealed by the fact that the American side under normal circumstances involves highly trained specialists and scientists from the Department of State, Department of Defense, National Security Council, Central Intelligence Agency, National Reconnaissance Office, and Department of Commerce, among other agencies. Overshadowing all of their efforts, of course, is the stark realization that they are dealing with deadly nuclear materials and weapons of mass destruction.

Finally, the whole process of international negotiation has been enormously affected by the transformation of cultural values and norms. Those negotiators who assembled at the Congress of Vienna shared many of the same traditions, characteristics, and basic goals and objectives for their international system. Diplomats of this classical era agreed on and generally adhered to reasonably

well-defined rules of procedure and accommodation, appreciated the need for mutual respect and self-restraint, and felt obligated to reciprocate concessions. They literally spoke the same language. This cultural homogeneity greatly facilitated diplomatic negotiations by making it possible to secure consensus on the time, place, level of representation, and substantive agenda of conference arrangements, all designed to address the first principle of negotiation in reaching a mutually acceptable, formal agreement.

In sharp contrast, today's world is characterized by a vast cultural heterogeneity. The many differences in politics, religion, ideology, perceptions, assumptions, patterns of communication and decision making, language, normative values, and the passions that they arouse create a profound impact on human negotiators and their negotiations. It is not unusual, for example, to find highly divergent negotiating styles and different conceptions of negotiation itself. There are times when certain actors demonstrate little self-restraint, refuse to show respect for others, regard negotiation as another form of combat rather than an instrument for moderating or resolving conflict, and do not fear appearing unreasonable or abusive. Sometimes parties argue tenaciously over such seemingly trivial things as the shape of the negotiating table, the seating of the participants, displays of national flags, or the positioning of cameras.

Other manifestations of difference, particularly in an age of public opinion and mass media, occur when leaders enter into negotiation not because they either expect or desire an agreement, but rather for show or "side effects." They may conclude that a refusal to begin deliberations might be politically damaging at home or present an image of inflexibility abroad that may harm relations with allies or neutrals. This explains the reluctant agreement of the United States to initially participate in CSCE. Or, leaders may enter into negotiations to put themselves in the spotlight, to size up an opponent, to stall for time or to delay the possible use of force, to "maintain contact," to extract propaganda advantages, to demonstrate toughness, or to extract concessions, as indicated by the on-and-off-again talks, high level of rhetoric, and often "non-negotiable" policy positions surrounding nuclear weapons in North Korea.

Such an analysis of historical cases thus reveals much about the critical importance of negotiation to diplomacy, principles of partnership and rivalry, and a number of valuable lessons that might be learned. It also demonstrates not only the impact of the expansion and heterogeneity of the international community, the increased influence of public opinion and domestic politics, and the dramatic transformations in communication and weapons technology, but also how these factors of negotiating matters of force and statecraft continue to confront us with serious diplomatic challenges of our time.

SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER EXPLORATION

Significant studies on the importance, theory, and practice of negotiation include I. William Zartman (ed.), *How Negotiations End* (Cambridge, UK, 2019); Chester A. Crocker, Fen Osler Hampson, and Pamela Aall, *International Negotiation and Mediation in Violent Conflict* (New York, 2018); Brigid Starkey et al., *International Negotiation in a Complex World* (New York, 2015 ed.); Paul Meerts, *Diplomatic Negotiation* (The Hague, 2014); Roger Fisher, William Ury, and Bruce Patton, *Getting to Yes* (New York, 2011 ed.); Richard Solomon and Nigel Quinney, *American Negotiating Behavior* (Washington, D.C., 2010); Dennis Ross, *Statecraft* (New York, 2007); Howard Raiffa et al., *Negotiation Analysis* (Cambridge, MA, 2007 ed.); Christer Jönsson, "Diplomacy, Bargaining, and Negotiation," in Walter Carlsnaes et al. (eds.), *Handbook of International Relations* (London, 2002); Michael Watkins and Susan Rosegrant, *Breakthrough International Negotiations* (San Francisco, 2001); Fen Osler Hampson and Michael Hart, *Multilateral Negotiations: Lessons* (Baltimore, 1999); P. Terrence Hopmann, *The Negotiating Process and the Resolution of International Conflicts* (Columbia, SC, 1998 ed.); Fred C. Iklé, *How Nations Negotiate* (New York, 1964); and Thomas Schelling's "Essay on Bargaining," in *The Strategy of Conflict* (Cambridge, MA, 1960). The classics remain Cardinal de Richelieu, *Testament politique*, Louis André (ed.), (Paris, 1947 ed.,); Fortuné Barthélemy de Felice, "Négociation," in *Code de l'Humanité*, vol. 9 (Yverdon, 1778); Antoine Pecquet, *Discours sur l'art de négocier* (Paris, 1737); and, of course, François de Callières, *On the Manner of Negotiating with Princes* in many editions. The most recent scholarship can be found in the *Journal of Conflict Resolution*, *International Negotiation*, and *Negotiation Journal*; books in the "Negotiation, Diplomacy, and Foreign Policy" series of the U.S. Institute of Peace; and the Processes of International Negotiation (PIN) project at www.pin-negotiation.org.

For the negotiations at Vienna, see Beatrice de Graf et al., *Securing Europe After Napoleon* (Cambridge, UK, 2019); Christophe Dupont, "History and Coalitions: The Congress of Vienna," *International Negotiation*, 8 (2003):169–178; Henry Kissinger, *A World Restored* (New York, 1973 ed.); Harold Nicolson, *The Congress of Vienna* (London, 1945); and other appropriate studies as cited at the end of Chapter 2 and Chapter 9.

Studies on CSCE include the four special issues of *Security Community* in 2015 published by the Organization of Security and Cooperation in Europe; Paul Gordon Lauren, *The Evolution of International Human Rights: Visions Seen* (Philadelphia, 2011 ed.); Oliver Bange and Gottfried Niedhart (eds.), *Helsinki and the Transformation of Europe* (New York, 2008); Daniel Thomas, *The Helsinki Effect: International Norms, Human Rights, and the Demise of Communism* (Princeton, 2001); Vojtech Mastny, *The Helsinki Process and the Reintegration of Europe* (New York, 1992); the eyewitness account by American negotiator John J. Maresca, *To Helsinki* (Durham, NC, 1985); Igor Kavass et al. (eds.), *Human Rights, European Politics, and the Helsinki Accord* (Buffalo, NY, 1981); and Luigi Ferraris (ed.), *Report on a Negotiation* (Alphen a/d Rijn, 1979).

Up-to-date discussion about the case of North Korea can be found at www.38north.org;in recent issues of *Foreign Affairs*, *Global Asia*, and *The National Interest*, among other professional journals; as well as reputable news organizations with international capabilities. Interesting perspective is provided by exploring—and comparing—the websites of the U.S. Department of State at www.state.gov and White House "Briefing Statements" at www.whitehouse.gov with that of North Korea at www.mfa.kp/en. Excellent analyses and historical background are provided in Siegfried Hecker et al., "A Comprehensive History of North Korea's Nuclear Program: 2018 Update," at https://cisac.fsi.stanford.edu; Arms Control Association,

"Chronology of U.S.-North Korean Nuclear and Missile Diplomacy," at www.armscontrol.org; Robert Gallucci, "The North Korean Threat," *The National Interest*, October 31, 2017; Mike Chinoy, *Meltdown* (New York, 2009); Charles Pritchard, *Failed Diplomacy* (Washington, D.C., 2007); and Joel Wit, Daniel Poneman, and Robert Gallucci, *Going Critical* (Washington, D.C., 2004).

The study of diplomacy is filled with cases of negotiation. For some of those that deal specifically with matters of force and statecraft, see the London Conference on Belgian Neutrality (1831), Convention on the Dardanelles and Bosporus (1841), Paris Peace Congress (1856), Hague Peace Conferences (1899 and 1907), Paris Peace Conference (1919), Washington Naval Conference (1921–1922), Test Ban Treaty (1958–1963), United Nations Disarmament Conference on the Non-Proliferation Treaty (1967–1968), Strategic Arms Limitation Talks I and II (1968–1972 and 1977–1979), Mutual Balanced Force Reduction (MBFR) in Europe (1973–1990), Camp David Accords (1978), Strategic Arms Reduction Treaties I and II (1991–1993), Oslo Accords (1992–1993), Ottawa Conference on the Mine Ban Treaty (1996–1997), New Strategic Arms Reduction Treaty (2008–2010), Arms Trade Treaty (2006–2014); the Joint Comprehensive Plan of Action dealing with Iran's nuclear program (2013–2015); and the negotiations between the United States and the Taliban (2019–2020).

CHAPTER 9

Deterrence

In the dangerous standoff of the Cold War, the superpowers greatly feared that their adversary might somehow be tempted to launch an attack against them, their allies, or their interests. To prevent such a frightening event from ever occurring became their highest priority, and they engaged in creating rival alliance systems and in acquiring weapons that dramatically increased their capacity to inflict staggering damage upon the other. Each calculated that the very threat of using armed force would be sufficient to deter the other from ever attacking in the first place. Nothing, of course, could generate more fear than weapons of mass destruction. It is for this reason that, as early as 1952, a leading spokesman for foreign affairs, John Foster Dulles, wrote an impassioned article entitled "A Policy of Boldness," in which he called for going beyond the limitations of conventional weapons and drawing on the deterring power of new nuclear weapons. The nation, he said, "must develop the will and organize the means to retaliate instantly against open aggression by Red armies, so that, if it occurred anywhere, we could and would strike back where it hurts, by means of our own choosing." He argued that this would create such tremendous fear in the minds of adversaries that it would "stop open aggression before it starts." To fail to do so, he warned, could create a "catastrophe" and "it will be because we have allowed these new and awesome forces to become the ordinary killing tools of the soldier when, in the hands of the statesmen, they could serve as effective political weapons in defense of peace." When Dulles became secretary of state, he put his plan into practice, ominously warning the Soviets and all other Communist regimes in a highly publicized speech that any aggression would be met by the "massive retaliatory power" of nuclear weapons from the arsenal of the United States. He proudly described this threat as "the ultimate deterrent."

This strategy, known as "Massive Retaliation," was not the first nor the last case of using threats of force as instruments of statecraft to deter opponents. Indeed, deterrence is as old as the arts of diplomacy and warfare themselves. Throughout history, city-states, kingdoms, empires, and nation-states all have sought to prevent the actions of dangerous rivals. In his *History of the Peloponnesian War*, for example, Thucydides recounts how leaders mobilized troops and positioned fleets

to make others "think twice before attacking." Niccolò Machiavelli wrote about "shows of force" as being economical means of persuading an adversary that the costs and risks of launching an attack would be too high. Thomas Hobbes made the same point in *Leviathan* when he observed that armed force could deter aggression by creating "a fear of the consequences" and by providing the power to frighten men into "the performance of their covenants by the terror of some punishment greater than the benefit they expect by breach of their covenant." The nineteenth century's balance of power operated on the same idea.

These long-standing practices of deterrence in statecraft, however, were not accompanied by any explicit conceptual framework or analyses of principles. Statesmen and generals in the past simply based their actions on historical lessons that they had learned and on the belief that if they presented a credible threat of using armed force, an adversary might fear the consequences, "think twice," and therefore be persuaded not to launch an attack. It thus was often described as "peace through strength." This rather basic approach was reinforced by at least two factors. In the first place, if threats proved to be an insufficient deterrent, war was considered to be a legitimate instrument of policy that would result in limited rather than catastrophic costs. Second, it was difficult to elaborate a sophisticated theory of bargaining with threats of force when limited technological capabilities prevented any sharp distinction from being made between the power to hurt and the power to destroy. From the time of the ancients to the early twentieth century, it was virtually impossible to seriously hurt enemies—to burn cities, ruin crops, seize property, and inflict pain—without first having defeated their military forces.

This situation changed dramatically with the advent of strategic bombing. For the first time, military technology made it possible to hurt an opponent terribly before, or even without, destroying its armed forces. With the development of this possibility, the *threat* to hurt could be separated—in fact as well as in theory—from the threat to engage and destroy the enemy's military capabilities. This particular distinction, when coupled with the differentiation between the threat and the use of armed force, appeared all the more important with the emergence of nuclear weapons and sophisticated delivery systems. The new extent of potential devastation convinced many strategists that war no longer could be considered a rational policy option, as it had been in the past. A prescient book entitled *The Absolute Weapon* confirmed this attitude at a very early stage. In the words of its editor, Bernard Brodie: "Thus far the chief purpose of our military establishment has been to win wars. From now on its chief purpose must be to avert them. It can have almost no other useful purpose."

Many scholars and policymakers thus began to believe that, given the destructiveness and the unacceptable costs of modern weapons of mass destruction, the first task of diplomacy and strategy must be *to prevent rather than wage war.* How to do this and at the same time maintain security in the context of first the Cold War, then the post–Cold War world, and then global terrorism thus became a matter of vital concern. This acute challenge has elevated the role of deterrent strategy to a preeminent position in force and statecraft and, therefore, has resulted in a great deal of serious thinking about the fundamental principles of deterrence.

PRINCIPLES OF DETERRENCE

Deterrence is a defensive strategy designed to persuade opponents to refrain from taking certain action, such as an armed attack, that is viewed as being highly dangerous to one's interests by making them fear the consequences of such behavior. It tries to convince adversaries that the costs and risks of aggression that they might undertake will far outweigh any possible benefits that they hope to gain. "To deter," write political scientists Robert Art and Kenneth Waltz in *The Use of Force: International Politics and Foreign Policy,*

> literally means to stop someone from doing something by frightening him . . . dissuasion by deterrence operates by frightening a state out of attacking, not because of the difficulty of launching an attack and carrying it home, but because the expected reaction of the opponent will result in one's own severe punishment.

In this kind of persuasion, or bargaining with threats of force, the relationship between the adversaries is clearly *psychological rather than physical.* Deterrence attempts not to destroy opponents or to physically restrain them, but to affect their motivation or *will.* The key, therefore, lies in the minds of people. The strategy seeks to persuade them that their interests would be served best by not embarking on a particular course of action at all. It is designed to defend the status quo and thereby to prevent wars before they ever begin. As Hobbes described it: "That miserable condition of war is necessarily consequent to the natural passions of men when there is no visible power to keep them in awe and tie them by fear of punishment."

By directing threats against an opponent's will, therefore, deterrence attempts to influence their future behavior. Adversaries are warned in advance that if they initiate action contrary to the interests of the state practicing deterrence, they will suffer unacceptable consequences. In this situation of shared risk, opponents thus are told that any suffering is contingent upon *their* behavior, and that *they* are the ones who must make the agonizing decision to proceed toward a clash. If they act, then the threats will be carried out. If they do nothing, then they can avoid the threatened punishment indefinitely. As strategic theorist Thomas Schelling colloquially described it in *Arms and Influence,* one state basically says to another:

> If you cross the line we shoot in self-defense, or the mines explode . . . If *you* cross it, *then* is when the threat is fulfilled, either automatically, if we've rigged it so, or by obligation that immediately becomes due. But we can wait—preferably forever; that is our purpose.

To accomplish this objective, a number of factors must be taken into account.

1. Weighting Interests. The formulation of a strategy of deterrence must begin by weighing the genuine interests of one's country that may be threatened by hostile action and assessing their level of importance. Vital and central interests, such as protecting one's people, institutions, and territory from attack, call for unambiguous defense. Less important or peripheral ones, however, would suggest more diversified degrees and forms of protection.

2. Commitment to Defend Those Interests. The next step is to create and convey a definite and serious commitment to defend those interests. This is sometimes described as "drawing a line in the sand" or declaring a "red line" threshold

while, at the same time, making *threats of punishment* if the opponent acts. In this process of bargaining with threats of force, communication is essential to convince an opponent of one's resolve and strength to enforce the threats. Some states attempting deterrence may prefer to do this by explicit personal messages between heads of government, diplomatic notes, or public speeches. Others may rely more on nonverbal means of conveying threats, such as troops stationed along a border, ships deployed in nearby waters, strategic superiority in weaponry, alliances, or historical patterns of defense. Regardless of the form of communication, however, the strategy of deterrence says to any potential aggressor: whatever you *hope* to achieve *will* be outweighed by the punishment.

3. Credible and Potent Threats. To be effective, such threats must be both credible and sufficiently potent in the eyes of the opponent. That is, they must pose a level of costs and risks that the adversary regards as of sufficient magnitude to overcome its motivation to challenge the defending power's position. Deterrence, in other words, is not simply a matter of announcing a commitment and then issuing threats. In order to successfully operationalize this strategy, the threats must be credible. When the potential power to hurt is used as bargaining power, the threat will deter an aggressor only if it is persuasive by being believable and does not sound like inflated bluster or mere rhetorical bluff.

There are two interdependent dimensions that provide credibility to threats. First, the deterring power must possess the *ability or capabilities* to inflict considerable harm and/or to prevent the adversary from accomplishing its objective by mounting an effective and punishing defense. A state must actually hold—and be able to persuade an opponent that it holds—the strength and usable capabilities to do what it threatens to do; otherwise it will not be believed. When Bismarck set out to deter France from launching any attack for revenge after 1871, decision makers in Paris had every reason to believe that the powerful German army possessed the ability to back up his threats. Similarly, when Nikita Khrushchev wanted to establish credibility for his country's own deterrent, he declared in a famous 1960 speech:

> The Soviet Army today possesses such combat means and such firepower as no army has ever had before. I stress once again that we already have enough nuclear weapons—atomic and hydrogen—and enough rockets to deliver them to the territory of a possible aggressor, and that if some madman should cause an attack on our state or on other socialists states, we could literally wipe out the country or countries that attack us off the face of the earth.

Coming in the wake of the successful launch of the Sputnik satellite, few doubted that the Soviet Union possessed such capabilities. But even having weapons of mass destruction does not necessarily ensure credibility. Indeed, one of the basic flaws of "Mutual Assured Destruction" was the nagging belief that nuclear weapons simply were not at all usable in any practical sense.

Second, statesmen implementing a strategy of deterrence must convey to the opponent that they have the *will or resolution* to defend the interests in question and to carry through on their threats if necessary. Leaders may possess considerable and perhaps even overwhelming military power that they are willing to threaten as a deterrent, but they may be unwilling to actually use it.

That is, if a crisis begins to intensify well beyond its verbal stages and it becomes clear that the deliberate use of provocative threats and manipulation of risks is resulting in dangerous and unwanted escalation and perhaps even inadvertent war, as we shall see in Chapter 11 on crisis management, the increased probability of considerable costs might well erode the original motivation to enforce deterrent threats, thereby reducing credibility. Or, it may appear after reflection that the interests at stake are not as important as originally thought, and thus not worth the price that might have to be paid for their defense.

4. Credibility and Vital Interests. The validity and credibility of a given commitment is directly related to its possessing a reasonable relationship to the deterring state's vital and central national interests. The credibility of will is in large part a function of just how serious a challenge to the status quo might be. Few would doubt the determination of a state to employ *strategic deterrence* to defend its vital interests against an invasion of its own territory or those of its closest allies if attacked. But what about *extended deterrence*, or the willingness to honor a commitment to weaker allies, neutral states, or questionable interests? In these cases, is someone else's well-being part of one's own vital national interest, and thus worth the costs of war—or not? If such doubts arise in the mind of an opponent, they seriously compromise the credibility of the commitment. The policy of "Massive Retaliation" suffered from exactly this problem, for although no doubts existed over the awesome power possessed by the United States, few believed that it would be willing to risk nuclear holocaust and its own destruction to defend territory thousands of miles from its own shores—say, in Korea or Vietnam.

5. Motivation of Opponent. Finally, any analysis of the principles of deterrence must also take into account what is *demanded of*—or, more appropriately, *denied*—an opponent and how this influences its motivation to refrain from initiating action. A strategy designed to deter may seek to deny adversaries something that they consider to be extremely valuable. This might include strategic strongholds, territory for expansion, access to mineral wealth or oil, or vague but nevertheless important notions of prestige or reputation. A leader highly motivated to obtain such things may conclude that inaction means being denied these objectives and is, for whatever reason, too high a price to pay. The threat may well be communicated clearly and credibly but, at the same time, ultimately be insufficient to deter. An aggressor may calculate, as did the Japanese in 1941 when they determined that to be denied the opportunity for expansion would be tantamount to "national suicide," that although the costs of launching a campaign might be relatively high compared to the prospective benefits, they are worth the risk. This concept is very important for deterrence in revealing that it is the initiator's "utility calculation"—not that of the defender—that determines whether or not a challenge will be made against the existing order.

6. Skilled Leaders. None of these principles or conditions operate by themselves. They all depend upon people—leaders capable of understanding that in pursuing deterrence it is not sufficient simply to talk tough, beat one's chest, and make ominous threats against adversaries. They must know how deterrence works and what factors are likely to lead to its success or failure.

The historical cases chosen for analysis that follow help to explain these points more clearly and offer perspective on deterrence in action. All confirm the fact that the strategy of deterrence takes place not in isolation, but in a broader context.

COLLECTIVE SECURITY FOR THE POST-1815 SETTLEMENT

Those leaders who led the struggle to defeat Napoleon understood that they could win neither the war nor the peace that would follow unless they worked together as partners. They calculated that the strong and seasoned French forces could not possibly be defeated unless confronted with a successfully mobilized military coalition. At the same time, they wisely looked beyond the immediate task toward the future, believing that whatever peace settlement and postwar order they might establish could be sustained only if they simultaneously created a system of collective security to serve as a deterrent against any possible resurgence of French aggression. For this reason, Britain, Austria, Russia, and Prussia agreed in 1814 to sign the Treaty of Chaumont. Their clearly communicated text provides a classic example of deterrence:

> The High Contracting Powers, reserving to themselves to concert together . . . as to the means best adapted to guarantee to Europe, and to themselves reciprocally the continuance of the Peace, have also determined to enter, without delay, into defensive engagements for the protection of their respective States in Europe against every attempt which France might make to infringe the order of things resulting from such Pacification. To effect this, they agree that in the event of one of the High Contracting Parties being threatened with an attack by France, the others shall employ their most strenuous efforts to prevent it . . .

If any doubts existed about the wisdom of their thinking about the need to deter aggression, they quickly vanished when in March 1815 Napoleon escaped his exile on Elba, announced before adoring and tumultuous French crowds that he would again raise an army to gain fresh victories, and then launched a new campaign against Europe.

The fact that they had to renew military operations and finally defeat Napoleon in June once and for all at Waterloo immediately exposed the fragility of a system of peace and security without force to protect it. This vastly increased the motivation of the victorious powers to make sure that it did not happen again. They therefore renewed their commitment to implement a strategy of deterrence by means of collective security with even greater determination. To convey the credibility of their will, they openly pledged for all to see in the formal Quadruple Alliance of 1815 that they would collectively protect their new international system against any aggression from France. According to the text, they sought "to fix beforehand by a solemn treaty the principles which they propose to follow, in order to guarantee Europe from the dangers by which she may still be menaced." They thus formally threatened that should they be attacked, they would be "obligated to place themselves on a war establishment against that Power."

Interestingly enough, statesmen like Metternich and Castlereagh saw the wisdom of combining force and statecraft. They believed that deterrent threats of armed force often were necessary in international relations, but they also wisely understood that exclusive reliance on such threats in the absence of consensus on basic principles and a sense of responsibility to the system as a whole would only bring dangers. For this reason, they simultaneously stated in the text of the Quadruple Alliance itself their determination to actively employ diplomacy as well. They pledged to hold conferences and congresses to discuss any threats that might emerge and thereby act together in concert "for the purpose of consulting upon their common interests, and for the consideration of the measures which . . . shall be considered the most salutary for the repose and prosperity of Nations, and for the maintenance of the Peace of Europe."

This important combination was evident in other ways as well. The leaders of the Great Powers understood that solemn and explicitly conveyed words and treaty commitments can greatly increase the credibility of deterrent threats. But they also appreciated that whereas verbal and written communications can convey a certain level of resolve and intention, they are rarely sufficient to give credibility to the actual ability to enforce or carry out threats. Consequently, those who were determined to establish and maintain their post-Napoleonic international system made every effort to carefully create and orchestrate the collective military strength of the members of the Concert of Europe. They thus deployed occupation forces within France and stationed troops around its borders. The purpose of these forces, wrote Metternich with considerable insight, was to possess a "strong union of States" to deter "the storm" of possible aggression and revolution against the system as a whole. Few could doubt the strength of the Austrian army or the British navy at this time, or that of any of the Great Powers. Indeed, it was the criterion of armed force that allowed them to use the designation of "Great" in the first place.

These capabilities of the *individual* Great Powers, however, represented only part of the equation for deterrence. The critical feature came from the fact that credibility was enormously enhanced whenever threats could be made and enforced by *collective* security. After their terrifying experience in defeating Napoleon, the statesmen assembled at the Congress of Vienna, as we saw in Chapters 2 and 8, strongly believed that their safety could only be attained by creating a balance of power. They consequently designed a structure and a strategy that would inform any potential aggressors in advance that any attempt to impose hegemony would be met forcefully by the collective military might of the others aligned or balanced against them. They further understood and appreciated that this could be enhanced even more by avoiding rigid alliances against seemingly permanent enemies and by creating maximum flexibility that could enable weight to be shifted in one direction or the other, depending on circumstances. The fact that France was restored to its Great Power status as early as 1818 and invited to play its appropriate role as the fifth member in the equilibrium, for example, indicated that this long-term strategy of deterrence was not designed for vengeance or directed against one particular state, but against any state that might endanger the international system as a whole. A strong France, they reasoned, could help guard against an expanding Prussia to the north or assist others in checking Russia to the east. This warning of countervailing power was given in advance to deter: to create a fear of the consequences by means of a credible threat that would convince any leader tempted to launch a war that the costs of doing so would far outweigh any possible benefits.

Deterrence by collective security is always difficult, for both the common and conflicting interests of all parties must constantly be taken into account, and these vary according to time and circumstance. The Great Powers after 1815 certainly experienced their own share of disagreements about how best to threaten and to use

their armed forces. Significant arguments emerged, for instance, over the meaning of Tsar Alexander I's so-called "Holy Alliance," what they should do about revolutions in Naples and Spain, the legitimacy of intervening in the internal affairs of other states, or the dangers posed to foreign affairs at the time by the dynamic forces of liberalism and nationalism. These were to be expected. Nevertheless, the statesmen of the time remarkably managed to overcome their differences and act together as the Concert of Europe when serious threats to the system emerged. Indeed, their strategy of deterrence through collective security, when combined with other features such as the balance-of-power structure and the shared goals among the major actors within the system, proved to be so impressively successful that not one war occurred between the Great Powers for forty years.

BRITISH AND FRENCH ATTEMPTS TO DETER HITLER, 1939

Well before he even became the *Führer* of the Third Reich, Adolf Hitler had written in his venomous autobiography *Mein Kampf* that if he were ever placed in a position of power, he would seek to build a powerful German state by using armed force to crush domestic enemies at home and foreign enemies abroad. Among the latter, he focused his attention on those nations that stood in the way of his expansionist dream of *Lebensraum*, or living space, including Czechoslovakia and Poland. Rather than causing alarm, however, his dangerous ideas were largely dismissed or discounted by those who practiced a policy of appeasement, as explained in Chapter 3. Political leaders in Britain and France hoped that if they gave Hitler what he wanted he would be satisfied and therefore would refrain from any aggressive moves that might threaten the international system as a whole. Prime Minister Neville Chamberlain thus returned from the Munich Conference in September 1938 and told cheering crowds that he had secured "peace in our time." He acknowledged that the partition of the Sudetenland from Czechoslovakia had been given to Hitler as a sacrifice, but said that it was a small price to pay for peace. What he had secured in return, he announced as he waved the agreement triumphantly in the air, was Hitler's solemn word and actual signature on paper that this would be his "last territorial claim in Europe."

Such promises meant nothing to Hitler. In March 1939, he tore up the Munich Agreement and ordered German troops to invade and completely subjugate the rest of Czechoslovakia. This not only eliminated Czechoslovakia as an independent state and member of the League of Nations, but ominously placed the armed forces of Germany all along the southern as well as the western borders of Poland, which Hitler had identified years before as one of his major targets for future expansion. Winston Churchill, who had been warning against the acute dangers of appeasement since its inception, consequently declared simply but accurately: "We are in the presence of a disaster of the first magnitude."

With the invasion of Czechoslovakia, the scales fell from the eyes of Chamberlain. "Is this the last attack upon a small state," he asked publicly, "or is it to be followed by another? Is this in fact a step in the direction of an attempt to dominate the world by force?" Chamberlain now came to realize that Hitler could not be trusted at all and that without credible force to back them up, any agreements with

him had no permanent value whatsoever. This called for a complete and abrupt reversal of policy if war was to be averted. He found himself joined by the French government in this conviction. Both Britain and France consequently determined to adopt a new strategy of deterrence. Toward this end, they belatedly began to build what they hoped would be a bulwark against further German aggression by increasing the size and the state of readiness of their armed forces, introducing conscription, concluding a mutual assistance pact with Turkey, and promising support for Greece and Romania. The most important change by far, however, was the deterrent threat they issued to Germany by pledging to guarantee the integrity of Poland. Chamberlain now declared in Parliament:

> In order to make perfectly clear the position of His Majesty's Government . . . I now have to inform the House that . . . in the event of any action which clearly threatened Polish independence and which the Polish Government accordingly considered it vital to resist with their national forces, His Majesty's Government would feel themselves bound at once to lend the Polish Government all support in their power. They have given the Polish Government an assurance to this effect.

In an effort to try to enhance the credibility of the threat, Chamberlain said, "I may add that the French Government have authorized me to make it plain that they stand in the same position in this matter as do His Majesty's Government."

Hitler was both surprised and angered by this declaration of deterrence and its threat to thwart his plans. When the news came from London, he flew into a rage, hammered his fist on a tabletop, stormed up and down his office, and shouted at those who witnessed the whole spectacle. As the French *chargé d'affaires* in Berlin reported to his superiors in Paris:

> For the first time the Third Reich has come up against a categorical no; for the first time a country has clearly expressed its determination to oppose force by force, and to reply to any unilateral movement with rifles and guns. This is the kind of language that is understood in Germany. But they have not been used to hearing it for a long time.

Yet, he added with some noteworthy unease in a sentence at the end of his dispatch, "It has also been difficult for them to believe their ears."

Difficult to say the least. Given the previous years of appeasement, could this threat be believed or not? The British and French attempt to deter Hitler from attacking Poland, of course, would have been greatly enhanced if it had been a part of a larger system of credible collective security, like that of the Great Powers during the post-1815 settlement. But where were the others? Italy under Mussolini saw only advantages in aggression and actually signed the Pact of Steel with Hitler for future military adventures. Japan was busy planning its own attacks in Asia and the Pacific and similarly drew closer to Nazi Germany. The United States remained immobilized in isolation and stubbornly refused to join the League of Nations or to become involved in partnership with others in global affairs at all. China continued its descent into domestic chaos and weakness, rendering itself unable to play any significant role. This left only the Soviet Union as a potential source of military strength for deterrence, and certainly no effective opposition to Germany

could be mounted in Eastern Europe without it. The threat of the countervailing power of Britain, France, and the Soviet Union, whose military forces not only outnumbered those of Germany but together presented a prospect of a two-front war, could have produced highly realistic fear in Hitler.

Yet, all of the efforts by the Soviets to do precisely this by seeking collective security arrangements against possible German aggression throughout the 1930s had been rebuffed by a West intensely distrustful of any Communist regime. Moreover, Poland had every reason to be suspicious of Soviet motives and to question whether Joseph Stalin's "protection" or Adolf Hitler's threats presented the greater danger. At this stage, Stalin now found Hitler particularly eager to strike a deal. If the Soviet Union promised not to go to war against Germany if he attacked Poland, Hitler pledged that he would not wage war against the Soviet Union and, in a secret protocol, would agree to let it take vast swaths of territorial spoils in the eastern half of Poland, Finland, the Baltic States, and Romania. Stalin, seeking to delay any military clash with Germany as long as possible while at the same time grabbing as much land as he could, took the bait. The two dictators therefore struck a ruthless bargain in the Nazi-Soviet Pact of August 1939.

With this agreement in hand, Hitler calculated that he had little to fear, at least in the short run. There likely would be no war in the east against the Soviet Union until he decided to launch one himself. There might be a war in the west against the British and the French, but who could tell? The British continually and explicitly conveyed their intent to carry through on their promise to defend Poland. Even as late as the end of August, Chamberlain drew on the historical lesson of what could happen with unclear signals and tried to make this deterrent threat as credible as possible. "It has been alleged that if His Majesty's Government had made their position more clear in 1914 the great catastrophe would have been avoided," he wrote with urgency to Hitler. "Whether or not there is any force in this allegation, His Majesty's Government are resolved that on this occasion there shall be no such tragic misunderstanding." In order to make sure that Hitler knew precisely where the British stood, he warned as explicitly as he possibly could that "they are resolved, and prepared, to employ without delay all of the forces at their command."

This was a clear warning of deterrence communicated directly. The problem was that neither the British nor the French had taken any meaningful action to stop Hitler's aggression since he came to power. Indeed, he revealed his contempt for their weakness by describing them with one word: "worms." At the last minute, when the prospect of war confronted them directly, their will might falter again and they might renege on their pledge and abandon the Poles as they had the Czechs. After all, plenty of people in both London and Paris still asked openly in letters to the editor why they should have to die to save people they did not even know in faraway Danzig. But if for some reason they actually did honor their commitment, Hitler reasoned, they would have great difficulty in rendering any significant military support in time to save Poland. In his mind, no one had the will or the ability to enforce their threats. Hitler therefore resolved to employ the force of arms to crush the Poles without delay. "We have nothing to lose," he told his generals. "We have everything to gain." "I will provide a propagandistic reason for the attack, whether it is plausible or not. The victor will not be asked whether he told the truth." At dawn on September 1, 1939, German guns opened fire against Poland. This marked not only the complete failure of deterrence for the British and the French but, once they decided to fight, the beginning of the Second World War.

CONTEMPORARY AMERICAN DETERRENCE OVER TAIWAN

In a strident January 2019 speech, Chinese president Xi Jinping lashed out at the United States for what he described as "intolerable foreign interference" in trying to deter China from annexing the self-governing island of Taiwan into the mainland. He declared that Taiwan was a rogue province that "must and will be" reclaimed, threatening that to secure this objective, "We make no promise to renounce the use of force." This followed Chinese defense minister General Wei Fenghe's stark warning that American deterrence was "extremely dangerous," asserting: "If anyone tries to separate Taiwan from China, China's military will take action at any cost." The United States responded with a hard-hitting Defense Intelligence Agency report entitled *China Military Power: Modernizing a Force to Fight and Win*, declaring that the Taiwan issue was "the primary driver" behind Chinese military expansion. At the same time, and over the vehement protests of Beijing, it sent two guided missile destroyers through the Taiwan Strait to send a message of defiance and to demonstrate resolve and credibility to its deterrent threat. Such positions lent credence to an earlier article in *Foreign Affairs* observing that contemporary American deterrence over Taiwan is "the most obvious and contentious flash point between the United States and China," fraught with danger. "A crisis over Taiwan," it concluded, "could easily escalate to nuclear war."

The American strategy of deterrence over Taiwan began with the onset of the Korean War in June 1950. Fearing that the new Communist government of Mao Zedong and the People's Republic of China (PRC) in Beijing would see the war as an opportunity to crush the U.S.-supported and rival Republic of China (ROC) of Chiang Kai-shek on Taiwan, forcing it to unify with the mainland and thereby depriving the United States of what General Douglas MacArthur described as its "unsinkable aircraft carrier" midway up China's seaboard, President Harry Truman ordered the Seventh Fleet into the Taiwan Strait. The aim, he declared, was to deter Beijing by threatening that any aggression against Taiwan would be met by armed force. This threat intensified when the United States formally signaled its intention to defend Taiwan by signing the bilateral Mutual Defense Treaty in 1954. Together, the fleet and the treaty constituted the beginning of the challenging and often-changing American commitment to defend Taiwan by attempting to develop and maintain an acceptable and credible strategy of extended deterrence.

Some of the difficulties and complications of this strategy became readily apparent during the Taiwan Strait crises of 1954–1955 and 1958. Both of these began when the PRC decided to probe the extent of the American commitment far from its own shores by initiating heavy artillery barrages against ROC forces on the offshore islands of Quemoy and Matsu. This sparked considerable domestic

political pressure on Congress and the White House by supporters of Chiang, collectively known as the "China Lobby," to strengthen the deterrent threat even further. In response, President Dwight Eisenhower felt obliged to threaten that the United States would use tactical nuclear weapons against the Chinese Communists if they ever attacked Taiwan. Chiang simultaneously expanded the size of his own armed forces and increasingly tried to push American leaders far beyond the mere defense of Taiwan into supporting any effort that he might make to invade the mainland and "liberate" China from Communist rule. That he attempted to bind the United States more firmly to his own aspirations in this way is understandable, but it served to demonstrate that *extended deterrence* can create serious dangers when it provides tempting opportunities for a weak ally to manipulate and embroil the much stronger deterring power in struggles that may not be in its best interests at all.

In June 1962, for example, Chiang once again threatened an invasion of the Chinese mainland, prompting the PRC to undertake military precautions and deployments. In this escalating situation, President John Kennedy feared that the United States could well be pulled into a wider conflict that it did not want, and therefore employed diplomatic channels to assure the Chinese Communist leaders that his country would not support any such ROC action. At the same time, however, he felt it necessary to remind them of America's commitment to defend the offshore islands and Taiwan. These positions, especially when combined with subsequent U.S. and Communist Chinese support for opposing sides during the Vietnam War, continued to exacerbate American relations with both the PRC and Taiwan for years.

A major transformation of America's deterrence strategy occurred when President Richard Nixon and his national security advisor Henry Kissinger concluded that the dramatic shifts in the geopolitical world of the Cold War necessitated that the United States and the PRC engage in *détente* and strive to reduce tensions. They thus signed the 1972 Shanghai Communiqué. Here they agreed with Beijing's highly motivated insistence that there could no longer be "two Chinas," that it alone represented the sole legal government of China, and that Taiwan must be considered an integral part of the PRC. This commitment was reinforced later under the Carter administration in a joint U.S.–PRC communiqué that reestablished formal diplomatic relations between the two states. At the same time, however, the United States announced that it would "maintain cultural, commercial, and other unofficial relations with the people of Taiwan."

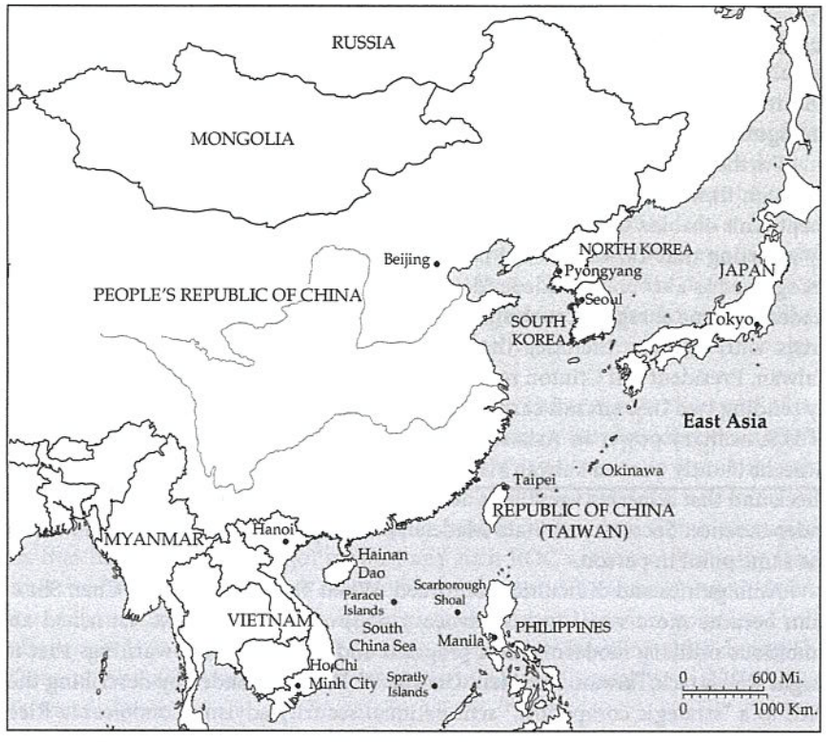
Yet, the deliberate vagueness of these agreements and what appeared to supporters of Taiwan within the United States to be a diminution of deterrence provoked members of Congress to reject advice from the State Department and to pass the 1979 Taiwan Relations Act. According to the text, the key rested "upon the expectation that the future of Taiwan will be determined by peaceful means" and that anything else would be "a threat to the peace and security of the Western Pacific area and of grave concern to the United States." The act sought to strengthen the credibility of the deterrent threat by announcing that America would engage in arms sales and provide "defense articles and defense services in such quantities as may be necessary to enable Taiwan to maintain a sufficient self-defense capability." The president and Congress, it stated, would determine "appropriate action"

in response to danger. Thus, although the Taiwan Relations Act asserted a deterrence commitment of some kind to oppose the use of force against the ROC, it left unclear exactly how the United States might respond if this actually occurred. The resulting uncertainty of this formulation thus came to be called "strategic ambiguity."

Further complications arose as a result of changing leaders and conditions. Through time, domestic forces transformed the ROC into a democratic government. This enabled the Democratic Progressive Party to appeal to public opinion by asserting that Taiwan should never be absorbed into the PRC and should be recognized as a sovereign independent state in its own right. Chinese Communist leaders became enraged at such statements and in 1996 initiated a war-threatening crisis with military exercises that rehearsed a missile attack and invasion of Taiwan. President Bill Clinton responded by signaling both resolve and capability by sending two U.S. aircraft carrier battle groups into the area (the largest display of U.S. military power in Asia since the Vietnam War). But at exactly the same time, he bluntly warned Taiwan's leaders that U.S. deterrence did not mean a blank check and that America would not defend them if they unilaterally declared their independence. Secretary of State Madeleine Albright went to Beijing to reiterate the same point in person.

Ambiguities and difficulties continued. When Taiwan's president Chen Shuibian became more vocal in his advocacy of sovereignty, the PRC launched an ambitious military modernization program and issued strident warnings that it might well attack Taiwan. President George W. Bush responded by describing the PRC as a "strategic competitor," sent national security advisor Condoleezza Rice to Beijing to issue tough deterrent warnings, and approved arms acquisitions by Taiwan that would enable them to strike high-value targets deep within the mainland. At the same time, the Bush administration warned Taiwan against taking any action that might alter the status quo, stressed that the growing economic ties between the United States and the PRC would not be placed at risk, and worked with the PRC on common interests such as trying to restrict the nuclear weapons program of North Korea.

This challenge of trying to find a delicate balance in "strategic ambiguity" haunted the Obama administration as well. Although Taiwan's president Ma Yingjeou changed course to seek much greater accommodation with the mainland (and did so with the support of the United States), his government at the same time sought to significantly increase its military capabilities. Despite severe warnings from Beijing not to do so, President Obama notified Congress in 2010 of his intent to sell Taiwan several billion dollars' worth of weapons, including Blackhawk helicopters, Patriot and Harpoon missiles, two mine-hunting ships, and upgrades for its F-16 A/B jet fighters. This sale was substantial, but it deliberately refrained from giving everything that Taiwan wanted. Nevertheless, the PRC responded by declaring that the arms sale created "severe harm" and "repercussions that neither side wishes to see." In 2015, Obama sent a guided missile destroyer into the straits to demonstrate the credibility of the deterrent against any further action that might threaten America's allies or its navigation rights. Beijing reacted with fury, calling in the U.S. ambassador for a browbeating and describing such naval action as "extremely irresponsible" and a "deliberate provocation" that threatened regional peace and security.



Contemporary Asia

The dangers and geopolitical complications grow more evident. Beijing's motivation regarding Taiwan under the leadership of Xi Jinping remains intense, not only because of the domestic popularity of Chinese nationalism but because control would grant it enormous strategic advantage in projecting its naval power in Asia and in the South China Sea with its gateway to the Indian Ocean and to the world's oil transportation routes. This can be seen not only in China's coercion of governments and business to sever their ties with Taiwan, but also in its increased live-fire military drills and "encirclement patrols" around Taiwan designed to intimidate, and its assertiveness in constructing its own manmade military outposts on the Paracel Islands, Subi Reef in the Spratly Islands, and Scarborough Shoal in highly contested waters. At the same time, while in the midst of a fierce U.S.–Chinese trade war, the Trump administration used the 2018 Taiwan Travel Act to encourage high-level official visits between Washington and Taipei, expressed strong support for ROC's independence-minded President Tsai Ing-wen and her government, operated a newly created de facto embassy in Taipei, regularly sent naval vessels through the Taiwan Straits, and sold weapons and advanced military technology to Taiwan—all to enhance the deterrent threat.

These increasingly dangerous episodes, of course, not only amplify Taiwan's extreme vulnerability but also are of pivotal importance in the rising rivalry between the United States and China. It lies in a thin stretch of water only 110 miles

away from the Chinese mainland, whereas its major defender is half a world away. At the same time, that major defender is in the process of withdrawing from many of its international commitments. All parties are aware that as China continues to develop more sophisticated military capabilities, such as its new hypersonic boost-glide missiles capable of disabling any air defensive shield, it diminishes the ability of the United States to deter. Indeed, a recent RAND study concludes that the United States soon will no longer be able to defend Taiwan from a Chinese attack. Yet, if the United States abandons Taiwan to Beijing, it risks jeopardizing relations with Japan, South Korea, the Philippines, and other allies in the Pacific who increasingly will question the credibility of Washington's deterrent commitments to them.

All of these developments and their implications for security in the East Asia–Pacific region have created a most difficult challenge for the United States to explicitly differentiate and then make credible what has come to be a strategy of dual deterrence over Taiwan. The first objective still remains to deter an armed invasion by the PRC against Taiwan (at the same time that Beijing seeks to practice counter-deterrence to prevent America from intervening in what it regards as its own internal affair). The second objective is to deter Taiwan from asserting a claim to be a separate sovereign state and making a unilateral declaration of independence that would trigger military attack from the mainland, thereby forcing the United States to decide whether it is willing to go to war with a nuclear power of more than 1,000,000,000 people. The American commitment to aid in the defense of Taiwan thus must tread a fine and precarious line and make an extremely careful distinction between deterring *an unprovoked PRC attack on Taiwan* and the possibility of PRC military action *in response to a declaration of independence by Taiwan*. This, in turn, presents a very difficult security dilemma: how to dissuade one side without encouraging the other. Too much pressure against Beijing might encourage the Taiwanese to take greater risks in incrementally seeking what is described as "creeping independence," whereas too much pressure against Taiwan might encourage the PRC to harden its own position. In seeking to deter both sides, the United States runs the risk of deterring neither.

Such a policy of dual deterrence would be challenging even in the best of times, but it is rendered even more complicated by changing circumstances. Commitments in deterrence are complex political-diplomatic-military phenomena, given to protect an ally or client against some dangers, under some circumstances, for some time, and each of these can change. As such, the evolving case of deterrence over Taiwan, like the others, serves as a valuable reminder that events do not take place in a vacuum but in a particular historical context.

ANALYSIS

Having examined these three cases within the framework of both general principles and history, it is now possible to build upon that foundation and further explore what other lessons and insights might be discerned from past experience and how more recent changes in the context of our own time have influenced the strategy of deterrence.

One of the most important observations we can make is that, despite its attractions, the strategy of deterrence possesses a number of serious limitations and dangers. When compared with military strategies, bargaining with threats is understandably alluring. Threats are infinitely more palatable than the actual use of force. If successful, they can achieve policy objectives with much less money and loss of lives, fewer psychological and political costs, and less risk than strategies that rely directly or exclusively on unleashing force to influence international behavior. But these enticing features cannot be allowed to distract from the fact that bargaining with threats of force is inherently dangerous and comes with high risks. No policymaker in the world likes to be threatened with harm or punishment. Historical experience demonstrates again and again that intimidation can easily provoke anger, pride, suspicion, frustration, or a highly emotional reflex rather than a carefully calculated response, and might actually encourage a desire for retaliation or revenge in the form of a response in kind, counterthreats, an arms race, or even preemptive war, among other undesired consequences.

The central challenge can be stated directly: although deterrent threats are designed to discourage aggression and are *intended as defensive*, they often are *perceived as offensive* and therefore provoke the very behavior they were designed to prevent. This problem creates what is widely known as "the security dilemma." Whenever one nation increases or deploys its own troops, ships, aircraft, or missiles in what it feels is entirely justified and reasonable for its own protection and security, other nations view such actions as threats and possible preparation for potential attacks, and with their resulting insecurity thus feel that they must arm themselves in response. As the Russian representative to NATO said recently in response to that portion of the American ballistic missile defense system (BMDS) stationed in Eastern Europe, "You say Defense, we see Threat." By their very nature, threats are intimidating and escalatory and, as we saw in Chapter 8 and shall see in Chapter 11, can quickly violate the requirements of both negotiation and crisis management. Given these dangers of deterrence, political scientist Patrick Morgan warns that we may want to seriously "reconsider our willingness to continue trusting our fate to our capacities for violence."

Inherent in the calculus of deterrence, as seen in all of these cases, lies the assumption of a unitary, "rational" opponent—that is, one who can be deterred from taking a particular course of action by carefully calculating that the costs and risks of pursuing it clearly outweigh any benefits to be gained. But there are grave dangers lurking in oversimplification here. The adversary may be, in fact, a failed state, an ideological radical, a terrorist cell, or a small group of several individuals who differ from each other, who must share power, and who must strike compromises within their group. Similarly, although some leaders, past and present, appear to have a much better ability than others to make rational calculations about unacceptable costs and potential benefits, not all actors see the world or calculate the value of gains and losses in the same way. Differences in beliefs, culture, ethical values, attitudes toward risk taking, knowledge of history and international politics, ability to handle stress, perceptions of logic, and views of themselves and others, among other factors, can vary greatly. A specific actor's mindset, preferred way of behaving, degree of self-control, and how these might correspond or conflict with one's own are difficult to obtain, interpret, and apply correctly in assessing

intentions or predicting responses. Moreover, as both historical experience and recent advances in cognitive and behavioral science reveal, there are times of crisis and stress when judgment is distorted by passionate emotions that override rational calculations of risk and self-interest. As François de Callières noted many years ago, when it comes to force and statecraft, many leaders demonstrate "passion and temperament more than reason."

The efforts at collective security after 1815, for example, were constantly challenged by the seemingly irrational desires of Tsar Alexander I to suppress "liberal" regimes, of the British to support them, and of the French to extend revolutionary fervor and renew the glory that was once theirs under Napoleon. Chamberlain's policy of appeasement rested upon a seriously incorrect image of Hitler and wishful thinking, and it foundered for the most part on the rocks of Hitler's completely insatiable appetite for conquest and his willingness to launch a war to get what he wanted. From the beginning, U.S. deterrence policy over Taiwan similarly confronted an extremely hostile and highly ideological Communist regime in Beijing, which constantly condemned America for capitalism, imperialism, racism, and support for archrivals in Taipei. This remains a highly sensitive and emotional subject among Chinese leaders today, some of whom repeatedly have said that they would be willing to risk defeat in war rather than allowing China to be denied its "destiny" and "sacred mission" in securing the strategic asset of Taiwan.

Any power seeking to deter another also must consider the critical issue of weighing both its own and its opponent's interests in order to calculate the utility of various policy options. It is often difficult to rationally determine one's own national interests, let alone those of an opponent, but failure to do so can result in the disintegration of even the best deterrence strategy. This can be readily seen in the way in which the balance of power and the congress system sufficed to deter French or any other aggression after 1815, but started to show signs of strain as the divergent interests of the Great Powers began to manifest themselves. Likewise, the British and French attempt to deter Hitler's attack on Poland was hampered by the highly divergent interests between the Soviet Union seeking to expand its influence, on the one hand, and those trying to obtain its participation in the security agreement while at the same time limiting its penetration of Eastern Europe, on the other. Lastly, as the expressions of "strategic ambiguity" and "dual deterrence" imply, the United States has had great difficulty establishing and articulating its own tangible interests in its relations with Taiwan and the PRC, particularly in light of their own respective, easily understood, and intensely held vital national interests.

After assessing its own and the other party's interests, the deterring power then must make and convey an explicit or implicit commitment to defend the ally, territory, or interest it perceives as being threatened. This, too, is not as simple a task as it might first appear. The members of the Quadruple Alliance clearly communicated their commitment to deter further French military action beyond its borders by articulating the terms of their treaty and pledging a specific quantity of troops in the event of any violation. Their determination to defend the post-1815 system by using the countervailing weight of the balance of power, however, was certainly serious, although it remained much more general in its expression and was not directed against any particular country. Chamberlain's attempt to practice

deterrence suffered from many problems, but an explicit communication was not among them, for he repeatedly made his pledge to Poland as clear and unambiguous to Hitler as he possibly could. The articulation of a clear commitment thus is neither a simple nor a sufficient means of implementing successful deterrence. In contrast, the American policy of "strategic ambiguity" toward Taiwan may afford the United States maximum flexibility, but at the same time it creates considerable uncertainty and presents more questions than answers about the actual extent of its deterrent commitment.

As discussed earlier in this chapter, the deterring power must back up its commitment with threats that are both credible and sufficiently potent in the eyes of aggressors to prevent them from attempting the undesired course of action. The credibility of a threat comprises two components, the first of which is the ability or capabilities to inflict considerable damage upon an opponent. In this regard, the members of the Quadruple Alliance were demonstrably capable of actually doing what they threatened to do. The combined strength of the Great Powers acting in concert with their countervailing military and naval might could defeat France or another state that might endanger the maintenance of the international system. The United States similarly possesses sufficient capabilities to inflict staggering damage on China in the event of an armed attack against Taiwan. During the 1939 case attempting to deter Hitler, in contrast, the British and the French had significant military and naval forces, but without the support of the Soviet Union, these were insufficient to create a fear of unacceptable losses within Germany in the short run or to render timely assistance to their ally of Poland. Thus, the issue of a deterring power's capability can be seen as a critical element in the development of a successful strategy.

The possession of vast capabilities, however, sometimes presents its own dangers. That is, it can easily create the illusion among the most powerful that simply threatening to use their armed forces will get them what they want. Capability fails in those instances when the force possessed by the deterring power is either inappropriate or unusable in a given situation. All of Britain's vaunted sea power of the Royal Navy could not deter France's 1822 intervention in Spain to restore the Bourbon monarchy if the other great land powers approved of the action. In examining other historical cases, it can be seen that the superpowers were continually frustrated throughout the Cold War by the fact that their powerful nuclear weapons appeared to have so little impact on preventing military conflicts in the Third World. Despite providing large quantities of arms to their respective Arab and Israeli allies, for example, neither the Soviets nor the Americans were able to deter invasions in the 1973 Arab-Israeli War. Similarly, there are many today who find it difficult to understand why America's huge and unparalleled arsenal of military might cannot deter China from its expansion into the South China Sea or deter terrorist attacks.

The second component of credibility comes from the will and resolution of the deterring power to defend the interests in question. In the successful examples of deterrence among the case studies, it is evident that there exists a strong correlation between the demonstration of firm resolve and the success of the policy. The validity of a given commitment, of course, is directly related to the degree to which it is related to the nation's vital interests. Metternich, Castlereagh, and other

statesmen who met in 1814 and 1815 strongly believed that their interests would be best served by peace and security, and thus they were firmly resolved to not allow France or any other country to launch another set of wars. They manifested their determination by using occupation troops in conjunction with firm commitments in international treaties. In sharp contrast, in 1939 the will and resolve of the Allied powers were seriously in doubt in Hitler's mind as a result of years of appeasement. As Churchill described it in *The Gathering Storm*, whatever credibility the British and the French once possessed to enforce their threats had been "squandered and thrown away." Whether the United States will view its interests as requiring the defense of Taiwan in the event of a Chinese invasion with its consequent likelihood of monumental costs, of course, remains an open question that will be answered only through time.

But using force and statecraft together in deterrence is difficult, and even capabilities and resolve are not fully sufficient to guarantee success. An analysis of efforts to deter also must take into account what is being denied to opponents and how this influences their motivation to seriously challenge the status quo. Here the level of an opponent's motivation is the key. After 1815, the newly restored monarchy in France had no motive for adventurism or starting another series of disastrous wars, and thus submitted willingly to the restrictions placed on it by the Quadruple Alliance and then the Concert of Europe. Although the PRC is highly motivated to seek unification, it nevertheless appears to be content to bide its time for the long run and not risk a military confrontation with the United States as long as Taiwan does not unilaterally declare its independence, perhaps hoping that American deterrence will weaken by stages rather than collapsing all at once. When the British and the French announced that they would defend Poland, on the other hand, Hitler declared that his motive for territory was too strong to be denied and that he had no intention of being deterred from his course. "I am determined," he shouted after receiving the threat, "to continue to march on this path!" It can be seen, then, that a sufficiently potent deterring force must exist not only in reality but, perhaps more importantly, in the mind of the potential aggressor as well.

For all these reasons, it is critical to appreciate that deterrence is most effective when it is employed in conjunction with other instruments of statecraft—that is, when it is used as one among several means of foreign policy and not as a substitute for skillful diplomacy. The Allied powers of 1815 clearly recognized this fact when they allowed for the rapid rehabilitation of France in the international system and established their deterrence commitments accordingly. By reintegrating France, providing incentives, and establishing the Concert of Europe, statesmen at the Congress of Vienna laid the groundwork for a system that prevented a major war in Europe for four decades. This was truly a successful application of the strategy of deterrence in conjunction with other diplomatic means. Similarly, while maintaining its deterrent threat over Taiwan, the United States has worked to establish many diplomatic, economic, and cultural ties of cooperation to avoid war with China. The same cannot be said for the period after the First World War, for in their efforts to deter Germany from aggression and to isolate the Soviet Union to prevent the spread of Communism, the victorious powers employed only threats. They thereby created two "pariah" nations that would later combine to thwart the

deterrent provisions of the Versailles Treaty by concluding the 1939 Nazi-Soviet Pact, paving the way to the Second World War.

Research on the successes and the sobering failures of deterrence also demonstrates that an exclusive reliance on negative threats precludes any possibility of using positive reassurance, incentives, or inducements to help resolve serious disputes. Similarly, if the power to hurt is seen only in terms of armed force, military might, or physical punishment, then valuable nonmilitary and nonlethal instruments are completely dismissed. International differences arise over many complex issues, but not all problems are military problems that can be solved by military means. It is therefore instructive to consider the possibilities of nonmilitary threats short of force. Lessons drawn from the richness of statecraft in the past would suggest that these might include withdrawing from negotiations, recalling ambassadors, terminating commercial relations, or imposing economic sanctions, among many other possibilities. A recognition of these gradual and differentiated measures may encourage leaders to consider a more flexible, careful, and specific tailoring of threats to fit the unique circumstances of each bargaining situation, rather than an automatic and exclusive reliance on military might alone. Such refined distinctions may become increasingly important, for as some forms of armed force become less and less usable in certain cases, other kinds of threats, in combination with diplomatic efforts, become all the more critical.

This theme of the need for greater differentiation and sophistication brings us to our final conclusion that, like all other strategies, deterrence is heavily dependent on context. Each and every historical and contemporary case occurs within a time and a place and with particular people that condition the possibilities and the constraints under which the principles of deterrence operate. As such, deterrence cannot possibly compensate for a deficient foreign policy ill adapted to the specific challenges at hand.

The particular circumstances of each case thus must be seen within the broader historical context of the diplomatic revolution, or those dramatic changes that have transformed certain features of diplomacy and the evolving international system through time. Moving from the more distant to the most recent of the three cases in this chapter, for example, one can see the increasing impact of public opinion. Although it had minimal influence on the statesmen at the Congress of Vienna, public opinion greatly influenced governments in 1939 and certainly continues to do so with contemporary American deterrence policy over Taiwan. Similarly, although neither Metternich nor Castlereagh paid much attention to economics, extensive investment and trade play especially powerful roles in deterrent threats and incentives in Chinese-American relations today. The shared culture and norms of diplomacy among the Great Powers that made collective security possible after 1815 were shattered at the time of Hitler, Stalin, and Mussolini. One of the most dramatic transformations, of course, can be seen with the profound impact of technology. Advances in transportation and communication certainly play their role in moving people and messages around the planet, but this has been overshadowed by those changes in cyberwarfare and in weapons technology that transformed deterrent threats of war with smoothbore muskets after Napoleon into contemporary threats of war with weapons of mass destruction.

Indeed, it is precisely this revolution in technology—and the inherent dangers that it possesses—that leads many foreign policy specialists, and even some officials, to sharply challenge the efficacy of much of contemporary deterrence. They point to today's risks of threat-based strategies and the hair-trigger problems of launch-on-warning alert systems, vulnerabilities in command and control, and the incalculable damage and loss of lives that weapons of mass destruction pose to their owners as well as to their targets. Of particular importance, they draw attention to the overwhelming disparity between the presumed rationality of *threatening* to use nuclear weapons on the one hand, and the irrationality of actually *using* them with resulting "unthinkable" consequences and likely suicide if the deterrent threat should fail. The possibility of massive extinction therefore cannot possibly be divorced from common sense and ethics, a subject that we will explore more fully in Chapter 12.

Some critics also argue that deterrence during the Cold War may have provoked as much as it restrained the Soviets and actually prolonged superpower tensions by a "balance of terror" dependent on "nuclear blackmail." Moreover, they observe, at the time there was an assumption that Soviet and Chinese leaders would behave rationally and prudently in the face of threats of severe punishment if they challenged the vital interests of the United States. But times and adversaries have changed, argue these critics, and this fact requires a reassessment and a much more careful and sophisticated analysis of a particular opponent's thinking, beliefs, and approaches to risk calculation and risk acceptance. In our time, there may well be those who refuse to be intimidated and are completely insensitive to deterrent threats.

One of the most significant features of the diplomatic revolution, for example, is the emergence of nonstate actors and, even more specifically, of terrorists and suicide bombers. As the attacks of September 11, 2001, and the many launched since, reveal with shocking clarity, adversaries calculate costs and benefits in very different ways. Some are not at all deterred by threats of military action. These actors are intensely motivated—indeed, they are eager and willing to sacrifice their lives—to achieve their objectives. They do not fear force as punishment, but believe that it actually enhances their legitimacy and increases their support. Other difficulties stem from the fact that terrorists generally lack well-defined lines of decision making, effective command and control over operational units, and easily identifiable assets, such as massed armies in the field or territory with specific borders, that can be located and targeted. Each of these factors greatly complicates or even defeats efforts to employ strategies of deterrence against them. The implications of these problems will be discussed in the Conclusion, which presents ongoing and future challenges for force and statecraft.

SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER EXPLORATION

The general theory of deterrence can be found in Alexander L. George and Richard Smoke, *Deterrence in American Foreign Policy: Theory and Practice* (New York, 1974). Many other stimulating treatments also exist, including Andrew Krepinevich Jr.'s Hudson Institute Report "The Decline of Deterrence" (Washington, D.C., 2019); Ulrich Kühn, "Deterrence and Its Discontents," *Bulletin*

of the Atomic Scientists, 74 (June 2018): 248–254; NATO's 2018 report "Deterrence and Defense" and "Deterrence and Defense Posture Review, 2012" at www.nato.int; T. V. Paul et al. (eds.), *Deterrence in the Twenty-First Century* (Chicago, 2009); Nick Ritchie, "Deterrence Dogma?," *International Affairs*, 85 (January 2009): 81–98; Thomas Schelling, *Arms and Influence* (New Haven, CT, 2008 ed.); Keith Payne, *The Great American Gamble: Deterrence Theory and Practice from the Cold War to the Twenty-First Century* (Fairfax, VA, 2008); Patrick Morgan, *Deterrence Now* (New York, 2003); Paul K. Huth and Bruce M. Russett, "Testing Deterrence Theory," *World Politics* (July 1990): 466–501; Richard K. Betts, *Nuclear Blackmail and Nuclear Balance* (Washington, D.C., 1987); Robert Jervis, Richard Ned Lebow, and Janice Gross Stein, *Psychology and Deterrence* (Baltimore, 1985); Paul K. Huth and Bruce M. Russett, "What Makes Deterrence Work?: Cases from 1900 to 1980," *World Politics*, 36 (July 1984): 496–526; Paul Gordon Lauren, "Theories of Bargaining with Threats of Force," in Paul Gordon Lauren (ed.), *Diplomacy: New Approaches in History, Theory, and Policy* (New York, 1979); John Foster Dulles, "A Policy of Boldness," *Life*, XXXII (May 19, 1952); and Bernard Brodie (ed.), *The Absolute Weapon* (New York, 1946).

Deterrence and collective security during the post-Napoleonic period is discussed in Beatrice de Graf et al (eds.), *Securing Europe After Napoleon* (Cambridge, UK, 2019); G. John Ikenberry, *After Victory* (Princeton, 2000); Paul Schroeder, *The Transformation of European Politics* (Oxford, 1994); Alan Sked, *Europe's Balance of Power* (London, 1979); Henry Kissinger, *A World Restored* (New York, 1973 ed.); Paul Schroeder, *Metternich's Diplomacy at Its Zenith* (New York, 1962); Clemens von Metternich, *Mémoirs: documents et écrits divers*, Alfons von Klinkowström (ed.) (Paris, 1881–1886).

Treatments of the failure to deter Hitler can be found in Frank McDonough, *Hitler, Chamberlain, and Appeasement* (Cambridge, UK, 2002); Richard Davis, *Anglo-French Relations Before the Second World War* (New York, 2001); Keith Robbins, *Appeasement* (London, 1997); D. C. Watt, *How War Came* (London, 1989); Allan Bullock, *Hitler: A Study in Tyranny* (New York, 1962 ed.); Winston Churchill, *The Gathering Storm* (Boston, 1948); and materials from the British Foreign Office in *Documents on British Foreign Policy, 1919–1939* (London, 1946–1985) and from the French Foreign Office as *Documents diplomatiques, 1938–1939* (Paris, 1939).

The case of Taiwan is analyzed in Michael S. Chase's 2019 Council on Foreign Relations report "Averting a Cross-Strait Crisis"; Robert Manning's 2014 Atlantic Council report "The Future of U.S. Extended Deterrence in Asia to 2025"; Charles Glaser, "Will China's Rise Lead to War?," *Foreign Affairs*, 90 (March/April, 2011): 80–91; Nancy Bernkopf Tucker, *Strait Talk* (Cambridge, MA, 2011); the 2009 RAND report "New Opportunities and Challenges for Taiwan's Security"; "Beijing Warns of War with Taiwan," BBC News, July 30, 2004; Douglas McCready's 2003 Strategic Studies Institute report, "Crisis Deterrence in the Taiwan Strait"; Robert S. Ross, "Navigating the Taiwan Strait: Deterrence, Escalation Dominance, and US-China Relations," *International Security*, 27 (Fall 2002): 48–85; Pan Zhongqi's 2001 Stimson Center report, "The Dilemma of Deterrence"; and the 2000 RAND report entitled "Taking Charge." Evolving developments can be followed by exploring—and comparing—the websites of the U.S. Department of State at www.state.gov, the Foreign Ministry of the People's Republic of China at www.fmprc.gov.cn or at www.fmprc.gov.cn/eng, and the Foreign Ministry of the Republic of China at www.mofa.gov.tw.

History abounds with many cases of deterrence for those interested in further exploration. Among some of the more suggestive are America's Monroe Doctrine against Europe (1823), Britain and France against Russia (1853), the North's efforts to deter British intervention in the American Civil War (1862–1865), Bismarck against Austria (1870), Germany against France after 1871, the Anglo-German naval arms race prior to 1914, the Berlin Blockade (1948), the United States and NATO against the Soviet Union after 1949, Chinese Communist intervention in the Korean War (1950), the Eisenhower Doctrine in the Middle East (1957–1958), American "Pactomania," the Berlin Crisis (1961), outbreak of the Arab-Israeli War (1973), Operation Desert Shield to deter Saddam Hussein from attacking Saudi Arabia and Israel (1990–1991), the creation of no-fly zones over Iraq to protect Shi'a Muslims and Kurds from attacks (1991–2002); arms sales to Saudi Arabia to deter Iran (2010–present); and ongoing relations between Pakistan and India.

CHAPTER 10

Coercive Diplomacy

In the intense heat of August 1990, Saddam Hussein's well-armed Iraqi troops invaded neighboring Kuwait, quickly overrunning its ill-prepared defenses. This blatant aggression imperiled security throughout the Middle East, threatened oil supplies, and shocked world leaders and peoples alike as they contemplated what would happen if they passively allowed the strong to conquer the weak at will. A remarkable international consensus rapidly emerged, therefore, to demand that Saddam pull his forces completely out of Kuwait. To make this happen, and in accordance with the provisions of the United Nations Charter, members of the Security Council authorized coercive diplomacy against him. They began by imposing sanctions, instituting an embargo, and freezing financial assets to hurt him economically, keeping the threat of military force in the background. When this gradual turning of the screw failed to erode his motivation, they dramatically escalated their level of coercion. Working closely with other countries as partners, President George Bush the elder secured support for an explicit ultimatum backed by the threat of force. They demanded a complete withdrawal from Kuwait and threatened "to use all necessary means" unless full compliance occurred by the deadline of January 15, 1991. To enhance the credibility of this threat, more than 500,000 troops, armed with highly sophisticated weapons, were positioned for an attack. As U.S. secretary of state James Baker described it: "Iraq must either comply with the will of the international community and withdraw peacefully from Kuwait or be expelled by force." Despite this threat and the overwhelming military power poised against him, Saddam in refused to comply. His motivation to retain his conquest was greater than his motivation to avoid war. Diplomatic coercion consequently failed and the Persian Gulf War began.

This certainly represented neither the first nor the last effort at coercive diplomacy. Due to profound concerns about brutal violations of human rights and their impact on security, NATO attempted to coerce Slobodan Milosevic to pull all of his forces out of Kosovo in 1999. For much the same reason, many members of the United Nations, the European Union, and the Arab League tried to compel Muammar Gaddafi during 2011 to stop unleashing bloodshed against his own people and to relinquish his control of Libya, as they did later against Bashar al-Assad of Syria. Each of these recent cases, among many others, came in a long line of efforts to employ diplomatic coercion.

For centuries, thoughtful practitioners and observers have considered that attempts to gain objectives by threatening—as compared to actually using—punishment might be accomplished with fewer costs and less bloodshed than resorting to war. Over 2,300 years ago in China, Sun Tzu wrote in *The Art of War* about the value of threatening to use force to intimidate by influencing an adversary's will. Thucydides similarly observed in his *History of the Peloponnesian War* at approximately the same time how the Greek city-states often engaged in making threats in order to get what they wanted. He recounted how in one of the most famous cases of coercive diplomacy, the powerful Athenians issued demands to the much weaker Melians, threatening that failure to comply would result in great punishment. "You, by giving in," they declared, "would save yourself from disaster . . . [for] your actual resources are too scanty to give you a chance of survival against the forces that are opposed to you at this moment." Machiavelli in his *Art of War* and *The Prince* provided other suggestions about employing threats, as did Hobbes in his *Leviathan* when emphasizing the "coercive power to compel." Even the refined and restrained François de Callières maintained that every diplomat must understand the significance of pressure in order to be effective in persuasion and bargaining.

Statesmen of the classical period of diplomacy possessed a general knowledge of these writings and, through time, increasingly made coercive diplomacy an integral part of their conventional wisdom and practice of statecraft. They never systematically articulated the principles of the strategy, however, or explicitly identified its various characteristics. Instead, they simply observed through their own successes and failures that as a political-diplomatic strategy of bargaining by using threats, it provided a valuable alternative to an exclusive reliance on military action. They learned through time, for example, that strong threats could sometimes persuade an opponent to stop an invasion or give up territory. They also came to learn that coercive diplomacy could be a seductive strategy that held hidden limitations and dangers, for sometimes threats could backfire and escalate, even to war.

These broad and rather simple generalizations about coercive diplomacy, like those about deterrence, prevailed until military technology made it possible to distinguish the power to hurt from the power to destroy. Once this occurred with strategic bombing, the threat to inflict harm could be separated, in fact as well as in theory, from the threat to destroy military capabilities. With the increased dangers made possible by nuclear weapons and sophisticated delivery systems during the Cold War, it thus became critical to make a distinction between *threats* and the actual *use* of armed force in statecraft. Theorists and strategists consequently began to devote serious attention to identifying and understanding the principles of coercive diplomacy.

PRINCIPLES OF COERCIVE DIPLOMACY

In his pioneering study entitled *The Strategy of Conflict*, theorist Thomas Schelling observed that "most conflict situations are essentially *bargaining* situations." For this reason, he argued with considerable insight that statecraft should be concerned not "with the efficient *application* of force but with the *exploitation of potential*

force." In *Arms and Influence*, he further discussed how nations use threats of their capacity for violence as bargaining power:

> To inflict suffering gains nothing and saves nothing directly; it can only make people behave to avoid it. The only purpose, unless sport or revenge, must be to influence somebody's behavior, to coerce his decision or choice. To be coercive, violence has to be anticipated. And it has to be avoidable by accommodation. The power to hurt is bargaining power.

With this in mind, he therefore concluded, "There is a difference between taking what you want and making someone give it to you . . . It is the difference . . . between action and threats."

These particular observations, in addition to the work of many other theorists, help us to understand that the strategy of coercive diplomacy, or forceful persuasion (or *compellance*, as some prefer to call it), employs threats to persuade an opponent to do something. It seeks to convince an adversary to call off or undo some encroachment, such as removing troops or weapons from a particular area, halting an invasion in progress, or giving up territory that has been occupied. To do this, coercive diplomacy—like deterrence, with which it is frequently compared—generally bargains with threats of force. But unlike deterrence, which attempts to dissuade an opponent from undertaking action that *has not yet been initiated*, coercive diplomacy attempts to reverse actions that *are already occurring or have been undertaken* by an adversary. Deterrence tries to *inhibit* behavior by fear of the consequences. To deter, a state incurs an obligation to defend or digs in and waits—in the interest of inaction. Coercive diplomacy is much more difficult, for it seeks to *initiate* behavior by fear of the consequences. To coerce, a state puts into motion a policy to make the other move—in the interest of action. It is the opponent who must act in order to avoid a collision.

Another distinction lies in the difference of purpose. Although each attempts to influence behavior, deterrence is basically a defensive strategy, while coercive diplomacy can be either defensive or offensive in nature. Defensive coercion may be attempted by a single nation, a collective group or alliance of states, or the United Nations to persuade an opponent to stop or undo an encroachment that is viewed as highly dangerous to the maintenance of the status quo or the international system, and it is often employed when deterrence has failed. Offensive coercion, on the other hand, may be attempted in order to blackmail adversaries to give up something that they already possess rather than having to forcefully take it.

Coercive diplomacy thus is different from the crude use of military force, for it seeks to *persuade* opponents to stop their aggression or change course rather than physically bludgeoning them into doing it. Like deterrence, coercive diplomacy tries to employ threats not to harm adversaries physically or negate their capabilities, but to affect their motivation or *will*. It attempts to convince opponents that their interests would be best served by changing the direction of their behavior and thereby avoiding the threatened punishment, giving them the opportunity to stop or back off before employing force or escalating its use. They are told that it is *they* who must turn aside if catastrophe is to be avoided. As such, the behavior of one is contingent upon the behavior of the other—and neither one is capable of having full control of the other. Coercive diplomacy, therefore, is essentially a *diplomatic* strategy backed by the threat of force. The volatile nature of the bargaining, however, when coupled with the employment of threats and perhaps the demonstration of just enough exemplary military force to emphasize one's determination to use more if necessary, often requires careful and appropriate diplomatic communication and signaling, bargaining, negotiating, and crisis management with the opponent.

This strategy offers the possibility of achieving one's objective economically, with little bloodshed, fewer political and psychological costs, and often much less risk of escalation than does traditional military strategy. For this reason, it is often dangerously beguiling. Leaders of militarily powerful countries are sometimes arrogantly tempted to believe that they, with little risk to themselves, can issue demands and make threats that easily intimidate weaker opponents. But most people do not like to be threatened or have demands made against them, and even a superpower can fail to coerce a weak adversary and may find itself drawn into a costly and prolonged conflict. If a recalcitrant opponent refuses to comply and, in effect, calls the bluff of the coercing power, the latter will be caught somewhere between backing down and thereby risking the loss of credibility and future bargaining power or waging war and thereby risking loss of life and military defeat. Because both outcomes are possible, leaders should never undertake coercive diplomacy without the greatest of care.

Given the obvious dangers and high risks of this strategy, it is therefore important to identify the conditions that favor its success, or by their absence mitigate against it. Comparisons of historical cases suggest that six are of critical importance.

1. Motivation. Since coercive diplomacy is directed toward an opponent's will, a coercing power must convey that it is more highly motivated to achieve its stated demands than the adversary is to oppose them. It must, in other words, communicate the message that there is an asymmetry of motivation: that, for whatever reason, its own propensity for creating and tolerating risks is by far the higher of the two. In this regard, as we saw with deterrence, the motivation of a state attempting coercive diplomacy becomes more convincing if it can demonstrate that its vital national interests are genuinely at stake and that these are acknowledged by strong domestic and international support. But motivation is affected by many psychological, political, and cultural factors, and these can be influenced by what is demanded, what is threatened, what is offered, and what amount of time is offered for a resolution.

2. Nature of Demands. Careful attention, for example, must be given as to what exactly is demanded of an opponent, for this can greatly affect the balance of motivation. The demand that an adversary *stop* a particular course of action requires appreciably less than a demand to *undo*, or give back, whatever has already been gained at the cost of time, money, prestige, and perhaps even lives. This distinction is extremely important for an obvious reason: if one demands a great deal, the opponent's motivation to not comply will likely be strengthened. But if the coercing power can carefully limit its demands to what is essential to itself without humiliating or engaging the vital interests of the opponent and is clear about the precise terms of settlement, then it is more likely to create a motivation that favors the success of the strategy.

3. Credible and Potent Threats. Motivation also is affected by fear. Coercive diplomacy—like deterrence—requires threats that are both credible and sufficiently potent in the mind of the opponent to create a fear of *unacceptable punishment* if there is noncompliance with the demands. To do this, the coercing state must demonstrate that it has both the *ability or capabilities* and the *will and resolution* to inflict unacceptable damage on something that opponents value more than the object of dispute, and thereby to persuade them to overcome their natural reluctance to comply with demands and to take the kind of action that will avert punishment. These threats might involve economic sanctions, the severance of diplomatic relations, demonstrations of force, blockades, limited invasion, declaration of war, or escalating the targets or the types of weapons used in a war already in progress, among many other possibilities. Regardless of the precise nature of the threat, however, the potential power to hurt is used as bargaining power to induce adversaries to avoid it.

4. Incentives. Coercive diplomacy is far more than just "the art of making threats," for the offer of positive incentives can have a profound impact on motivation as well. Practitioners of coercive diplomacy often mistakenly rely solely on threats of punishment and thereby completely overlook the often-critical importance of offering incentives. Yet, there are times when diplomatic objectives can be achieved only if one offers genuine and even substantial concessions. Coercive diplomacy thus is best conceived as a flexible strategy in which the "carrots" of incentives are combined with the "sticks" of threats in such a way that both bargaining sides believe they are getting "something for something."

5. Urgency. Finally, those practicing the strategy of coercive diplomacy need to decide how much of a sense of urgency to create in the adversary's mind to achieve compliance with the demands. In crisis situations, time is short and resolution is normally sought sooner rather than later. On some occasions, leaders adopt a "try-and-see" approach. In this variant of the strategy, a coercing power makes modest threats and waits to see whether they will suffice to persuade the opponent before escalating and taking the next step to further action. This approach is consistent with the principles of crisis management, for it attempts to slow the momentum, provide time for communication and thoughtful decision making, and gradually turn the screw of coercion by an incremental progression of pressure if necessary. When, on the other hand, strategists wish to deliberately create an acute sense of urgency, they go to the other extreme and employ a full-blown ultimatum, complete with a demand, a threat, and the characteristic short time limit for compliance. Historically, such limits have ranged from a few weeks or days down to only a few hours. The 1939 British ultimatum to Hitler after he invaded Poland demanded a reply within two hours and the American ultimatum to Germany in 1916 demanded compliance "immediately." Since they are designed to speed up the pace of bargaining, ultimata normally announce that "the clock is ticking toward a showdown" or that "time is running out."

6. Skilled Leaders. This strategy, like all others, also requires people skilled in statecraft. They must understand that coercive diplomacy is fraught with risks and much more difficult and problematic than is often thought. They must appreciate that motives and interests at stake in any conflict may be vague or incorrectly perceived, that demands made on the opponent may lack clarity or specificity, that the threat of punishment for noncompliance may be ambiguous or lack sufficient potency or credibility, that a coercing power may not fully convey a sense of just how urgently it wants to find a solution to the conflict at hand, or that the target of coercive diplomacy may engage in unjustified wishful thinking.

Of particular importance, leaders must appreciate that people normally do not respond well to demands and threats made against them. They may lash out in an emotional response, launch a preemptive strike, or dig in their heels, creating a response that is the complete opposite of what was desired. Unlike deterrence, in which a target easily can comply while claiming that it never intended to change its behavior in the first place, coercion requires that the target visibly alter its behavior in overt submission with a great loss of face. All this helps to explain why success in the application of coercive diplomacy is not easy to achieve, why the strategy so often fails, and why disaster can be just a single decision or mistake away.

AMERICAN "GUNBOAT DIPLOMACY," 1852–1854

The expression "gunboat diplomacy" came into general usage during the nineteenth century as maritime powers increasingly saw that in conspicuous demonstrations of armed force, navies often served better than land-based armies as instruments of coercive diplomacy. Warships mounted with heavy guns could be easily dispatched and withdrawn, displayed and moved about in various combinations with other vessels, flexibly tailored to incrementally adjust the amount of armed force required by particular circumstances, and generally were able to be controlled for purposes of crisis management. They could project armed force and make highly credible threats over great distances, particularly if there were significant asymmetries of power and technological capabilities, as the Americans and Europeans discovered in Asia, Africa, Latin America, and the islands of the Pacific. For all these reasons, as one naval officer observed, navies could "best unite force with persuasion."

With this in mind, the U.S. government determined in 1852 that its navy would make an excellent tool to coerce the Japanese into changing their long-standing closed-door policy that thwarted American interests and influence in the Pacific. Japan had deliberately and successfully secluded itself from other powers for two centuries, refused to engage in international trade, and forcefully resisted any efforts by foreigners to penetrate the country. President Millard Fillmore wanted to break this policy, which stood in the way of his dreams of expansion. He therefore ordered the stern-looking Commodore Matthew C. Perry, who had considerable personal experience with "gunboat diplomacy" in Africa and Mexico, to cross the ocean with a squadron of ships and to demand that the Japanese "open" their country. American leaders sought to entice them with trade and to intimidate them with a credible threat to inflict harm. Naval superiority and technological sophistication, they believed, could demonstrate capabilities better than anything else and would be able to simultaneously show the leaders of Japan "both the emblem of peace and the cannon's mouth."

The instructions issued to Perry provide a most interesting and classic case of coercive diplomacy. The Department of State warned him that in bargaining situations like this, "it is manifest, from past experience, that arguments or persuasion addressed to this people, unless they be seconded by some imposing manifestation of power, will be utterly unavailing." He was therefore instructed to begin with a friendly and conciliatory approach to the Japanese, but in words that deserve to be quoted directly:

> If, after having exhausted every argument and every means of persuasion, the commodore should fail to obtain from the government any relaxation of their system of exclusion . . . he will then change his tone, and inform them in the most unequivocal terms that it is the determination of this government to insist . . .
>
> Do everything to impress them with a just sense of the power and greatness of [the United States] and to satisfy them that its past forbearance has been a result, not of timidity, but of a desire to be on friendly terms with them.

Thus, when Perry sailed his squadron, including four men-of-war, two of which were steam frigates carrying eight-inch guns that were among the fastest ships in the world at the time, into what is now Tokyo Bay in 1853, he sought to inspire fear and thereby gain psychological advantage. It worked. According to firsthand accounts, as the Japanese, who had never before seen steamships, watched them come belching smoke, actually moving against a strong wind, and displaying power in their own harbor, they became terrified. As historian Arthur Walworth writes in *Black Ships Off Japan*, to the rice farmers watching from the shore "the ships seemed sullen, masterful, full of pent-up force," and they believed that the wrath of these "floating volcanoes" would be unleashed against them. To drive the point home further, Perry landed with a thirteen-gun salute, nearly four hundred officers and men, two heavily armed black bodyguards, and a band playing "Hail, Columbia!" Here he delivered a letter from Fillmore boasting about the power of the American navy and demanding that Japan open itself to trade and provide access to shipwrecked seamen and coaling stations. If the Japanese refused to comply, Perry threatened menacingly, he could not "hold himself accountable for the consequences."

The Japanese immediately replied that the impertinent letter and its demands were an insult, contrary to their laws and their interests, and ordered Perry to leave. Although somewhat taken aback, the commodore had studied as much about the history of Japan as he could in advance, and this led him to conclude that a positive answer would require time and thoughtful deliberation in which its leaders carefully weighed the consequences of noncompliance. He could play on the fact that they were internally torn at the time between the traditionalists, on the one hand, and those who favored progressive change, on the other, and that these groups would debate both the advantages of incentives and the disadvantages of punishment coupled within his coercive diplomacy. The incentives, or inducements, could be found in the benefits that might flow from the offer for commercial trade and access to advanced Western technology. The punishment for noncompliance also had to be considered, for they already had seen the success of Western "gunboat diplomacy" in Asia and had the object lesson of China's

earlier humiliation at the hands of the British navy before them. Perry announced that he would temporarily leave, but using forceful language in combination with his gunboats, pointedly threatened that he would give them several months for an answer and would return if necessary with even more force.

Perry's second arrival in Japan during March 1854 sought to ratchet up the level of coercion, for he wanted to intimidate by demonstrating beyond any reasonable doubt both the will and the capability of the United States to use armed force if the Japanese did not comply with his demands. This time he came with even more naval power, including three modern steamers out of a total of nine warships. As one of his crew members described the scene, there was a "long line of boats crowded with men glittering with bayonets, the brass . . . guns blazing in the sun ready to vomit forth death and destruction." He also brought gifts, particularly a miniature railroad train and telegraph designed to impress the Japanese with American technological prowess and superiority. For added effect, Perry presented a copy of a published history of the American war against Mexico, which included dramatic sketches of the results of the devastating bombardment by the U.S. fleet against Veracruz in Mexico.

Not surprisingly, the leaders of Japan engaged in serious and often agonizing debate about how best to respond to these threats. Some argued that they should never give in or meekly comply with the outrageous and arrogant American demands, whatever the cost, for it would be a "disgrace" to national prestige and "honor." Others, like advisor to the shōgun, Naosuke Ii, rationally and pragmatically calculated that the Americans possessed sufficiently potent will and ability to harm them and, consequently, that the Japanese had reason to fear the consequences if they failed to comply. As he wrote in his revealing memorandum:

> Since 1609 . . . we have had no warships capable of opposing foreign attack on our coasts with heavy guns . . . There is a saying that when one is besieged in a castle, to raise the drawbridge is to imprison oneself and make it impossible to hold out indefinitely; and again, that when opposing forces face each other across a river, victory is obtained by that which crosses the river and attacks. It seems clear throughout history that he who takes action is in a position to advance, while he who remains inactive must retreat.

To avoid disaster, he therefore proposed a tactical retreat:

> Even though the shōgun's ancestors set up seclusion laws, they left the Dutch and the Chinese to act as a bridge [to the outside world]. Might this bridge not now be of advantage to us in handling foreign affairs [with the Americans], providing us with the means whereby we may for a time avert the outbreak of hostilities and then, after some time has elapsed, gain a complete victory?

With these rather carefully calculated thoughts in mind, the leaders of Japan determined that they would reluctantly comply with the American demands.

The result took the form of the 1854 Treaty of Kanagawa. Here, the Japanese accepted the incentives that were offered and agreed to open two ports for obtaining coal and other supplies, establish consular privileges in these locations, and assist shipwrecked American crews. Beyond these concessions, however, they refused to do more or open up their entire country. Perry wisely understood

that he could not achieve anything else without risking extended war far from American shores, and thus accepted the terms. He returned home triumphantly declaring that his success was but a foretaste "that the people of America will, in some form or other, extend their dominion and their power, until they shall have brought within their mighty embrace the islands of the great Pacific, and place the Saxon race upon the eastern shores of Asia." The Japanese, in sharp contrast, viewed their concessions as merely a temporary expedient designed to avoid immediate disaster and buy time for modernization until, in the words of Naosuke, the circumstances changed in their favor such that they might secure "complete victory." The memory of this "gunboat diplomacy" lasted for decades, with the Americans believing that they could successfully intimidate Japan whenever they wished and the Japanese vowing that they would never allow themselves to be coerced in such a way again.

THE CUBAN MISSILE CRISIS, 1962

When the American intelligence community discovered the Soviet Union secretly deploying medium- and intermediate-range ballistic missiles in Cuba during October 1962, the world found itself suddenly plunged into the most dangerous crisis of the entire Cold War. This discovery produced stunned surprise and anger among American leaders. Once it was realized that as soon as the missiles became operational they could strike almost any city within the United States, anger turned to an acute sense of peril. Members of the Joint Chiefs of Staff immediately and unanimously advised that the use of armed force was "essential," declaring that "military steps were the only ones the Soviet Union would understand." President Kennedy rejected their advice, for he believed that even surgical air strikes against the missile sites alone would lead to war and absolute disaster. He perceived Khrushchev as sufficiently intelligent to retreat if opposed resolutely and given sufficient time to calculate his interests. Rather than employing military force in the first instance, therefore, Kennedy decided to try the strategy of coercive diplomacy to compel Khrushchev to undo his action by removing the missiles himself.

To begin, Kennedy determined that he would impose a naval blockade around the island of Cuba. This would be short of armed combat but nevertheless would provide dramatic, forceful, and highly credible coercive pressure that the Soviets could easily understand. Moreover, such a blockade could be more easily controlled than troops on the ground in an invasion force and could be quickly increased if the circumstances warranted. Although the naval blockade could prevent additional Soviet missiles, warheads, and military equipment from reaching Cuba, it obviously could not remove the missiles already there and in the process of being made operational. Kennedy nevertheless hoped that the blockade and preparations for a possible air strike or invasion of Cuba would demonstrate his resolution, give Khrushchev time to consider that he had greatly miscalculated the likely American reaction, and exert enough bargaining leverage and pressure to coerce Khrushchev into withdrawing the missiles.

There was no assurance, however, that coercive diplomacy was a viable strategy or that it could be applied without setting into motion developments that would result in a war that neither side wanted. In an age of weapons of mass

destruction, the risks of catastrophe were enormous. What would happen if Khrushchev, who denounced the blockade as an "act of war," ordered Soviet vessels and submarines to smash through it and test Kennedy's resolve? Might this lead to combat on the high seas or Soviet retaliation elsewhere that could lead to uncontrollable escalation—perhaps even a thermonuclear war? Would Khrushchev, who had invested so much in the missile deployment, be capable of such a public retreat before the eyes of the world? What if neither Kennedy nor Khrushchev could practice some measure of crisis management or maintain top-level civilian control of their own military forces as instruments of statecraft?

It is precisely these kinds of questions that reveal a striking tension between coercive diplomacy and the principles of crisis management in order to avoid triggering unwanted escalation and possibly war. This is why Kennedy exercised deliberate restraint and initially chose to ignore the advice from his military hawks to use force immediately, employing instead the "try-and-see" variant of coercive diplomacy at the outset. During the first five days of the confrontation, for example, the president deliberately avoided issuing Khrushchev a time limit for compliance with his demand for removing the missiles or explicitly threatening him with an air strike or invasion for noncompliance. As for Khrushchev, even though he blustered and issued coercive threats of his own in an effort to undermine Kennedy's resolve, he nonetheless went to great lengths to avoid a clash at sea. Within hours after Kennedy announced the blockade, to illustrate, Khrushchev chose to resist his own hardline military advisors, whom he described as "maniacs," and directed Soviet vessels carrying missiles and other military equipment to Cuba to turn around. Both Khrushchev and Kennedy appreciated the risks associated with the use of force, and thus they behaved with sober prudence and reasonable skill to avoid escalation and to extricate themselves from the war-threatening crisis.

Events nevertheless seemed to take on a life of their own, and both leaders experienced disturbing new challenges to their ability to synchronize their interaction and to manage the crisis. The context and meaning of possibly critical moves and communications became confusing, and deciphering the intentions and calculations behind specific moves of the opponent became difficult. Leaders in Washington puzzled over the discrepancy between Khrushchev's personal and more accommodating private letter, in which he hinted at a deal for withdrawal of the missiles in return for an American pledge not to invade Cuba, and his more formal hardline letter of the next day, which advanced new demands. Other disturbing events occurred. Soviet military officers shot down a U-2 spy plane over Cuba without an explicit order from Moscow to do so, Cuban air defense forces fired on two other U.S. aircraft as they swooped low over the missile sites, an American reconnaissance plane wandered by mistake over Siberia, aggressive antisubmarine activities by the U.S. Navy forced all Soviet submarines in the area to the surface, and ominous reports arrived that the Soviet consulate was burning classified papers. Any of these developments could have triggered escalation into war. Policymakers in the White House anxiously speculated that the Kremlin was now taking a harder line in order to test U.S. resolution, that perhaps Khrushchev was no longer in charge, or that Moscow was trying to extract a higher price for removal of the missiles. To make matters worse, each passing day of work by Soviet technicians in Cuba brought the missiles closer to operational.

A new sense of urgency now gripped Kennedy and his advisors, and they determined to make two drastic changes in their strategy of coercive diplomacy. The first of these was to convert the weaker try-and-see approach into the more serious variant of the ultimatum. To do this, the president sent his brother Robert to personally deliver a much more potent threat and a time limit of twenty-four hours to Soviet ambassador Anatoly Dobrynin, telling him:

> We had to have a commitment by tomorrow . . . He should understand that if they did not remove those [missile] bases, we would remove them . . . Time was running out. We had only a few more hours—we needed an answer immediately from the Soviet Union. I said we must have it the next day.

Kennedy thereby focused his demand on the limited objective of the removal of the missiles rather than the broader and more extensive issue of changing the Communist regime of Fidel Castro. He wanted to convince Khrushchev that the motivation of the United States to get the missiles out of Cuba, only a few miles from its shores, was higher than that of the Soviet Union to keep them there—and that he had the resolution to achieve precisely that objective. The credibility of this urgent threat received further potency from the fact that allied partners in NATO and the Organization of American States strongly supported the American position, that preparations for an armed invasion of Cuba by the United States just had been completed, and that Soviet and Cuban intelligence sources warned Moscow that American military action was imminent.

The second important change was the decision to couple this additional coercive pressure with inducements to make it easier for the Soviet leader to agree to remove the missiles. That is, Kennedy determined that he would create a carrot-and-stick approach, coupling the ultimatum with certain concessions that he had earlier refused to discuss. He offered to call off the naval quarantine and then, most significantly, to pledge that the United States would not invade Cuba if the Soviets removed their missiles under appropriate United Nations observation and supervision. He also secretly agreed to remove U.S. Jupiter missiles stationed in Turkey on the border of the Soviet Union. The combination of this quid pro quo and mutual reassurance—along with the growing urgency and intense fear generated by the possibility of thermonuclear war—created powerful incentives on both sides to prevent unacceptable escalation. Within just a few hours of receiving these offers, Khrushchev accepted Kennedy's formula.

CONTEMPORARY COERCION AGAINST IRAN AND ITS NUCLEAR PROGRAM

One of the most serious challenges of our time is the proliferation of nuclear weapons. Any increase in the number of states or terrorists who gain possession of the capability to inflict mass destruction is widely seen as a danger to the world. It is for this reason that the international community has viewed the nuclear enrichment program of highly volatile Iran with such alarm.

The seeds of nuclear development here were first sown under Mohammed Reza Shah Pahlavi, with the assistance of Europeans and the Americans under their "Atoms for Peace" program, designed to generate fuel for civil energy. But this collaboration changed abruptly with the revolution of 1979, the overthrow of the shah, and the advent of the Islamic Republic of Iran. The new government held deep suspicions of the West and "the influence of foreign powers," especially the United States. This was the country they described as "the Great Satan" that had engineered the overthrow of the democratically elected Iranian prime minister Mohammad Mosaddeq in 1953 and installed the unpopular shah, imposed trade sanctions on them after the seizing of American diplomats as hostages during the revolution, protected their archenemy Israel, supported their adversary Saddam Hussein during the wasting Iran–Iraq War of 1980–1988 (the longest conventional war of the twentieth century), placed them on its list of state sponsors of terrorism, and described Iran as part of an "Axis of Evil" list after 9/11. To rebuild their severely war-damaged nuclear infrastructure and/or to develop their military capabilities either for defense or for added prestige and clout at home and in the region, Iranian leaders began a program of nuclear enrichment. Sometimes they proceeded openly, sometimes clandestinely.

International concern and suspicion increased when in 2002 an Iranian opposition group disclosed details about two secret enrichment facilities. Iran's leaders responded by repeating the long-held—and accurate—position that the Nuclear Non-Proliferation Treaty legally acknowledges the "inalienable right" of parties "to develop . . . nuclear energy for peaceful purposes." Nevertheless, after an inspection, the United Nations' watchdog International Atomic Energy Agency (IAEA) concluded that Iran "has failed to meet its obligations . . . with respect to the reporting of nuclear material, the subsequent processing and use of that material, and the declaration of facilities where the material was stored and processed." Tehran denounced the report, accusing the IAEA and others of applying double standards and being hopelessly under the influence of "pro-West" and "anti-Iranian" "corrupt powers." Thus began an intense controversy about whether Iran's nuclear program was designed solely for peaceful purposes, as claimed by Iran, or for weapons development, as feared by others.

Iran continued with denial, deception, and concealment. This intensified alarm and fed suspicions. The IAEA's board of directors reached a point where it declared an "absence of confidence that Iran's nuclear program is exclusively for peaceful purposes" and thus voted to send this case to the United Nations Security Council for action.

After considering the mounting evidence, the Security Council, including all of its permanent and veto-wielding members, decided to employ collective coercive diplomacy. Its 2006 resolution explicitly "*demands* . . . that Iran shall suspend all enrichment-related and reprocessing activities . . . to be verified by the IAEA." The Council combined this with the threat that if Tehran did not respond positively within one month, they would "adopt appropriate measures under Article 41 of Chapter VII of the Charter of the United Nations to persuade Iran to comply." They warned that "further decisions will be required should additional measures be necessary." Iranian president Mahmoud Ahmadinejad reacted immediately by declaring: "Those who think they can use the language of threats and force against Iran are mistaken. If they don't realize that now, one day they will learn it the hard way."

The Iranians' motivation for continuing their enrichment program remained intense, and they refused to be intimidated or to comply with the demand. The Security Council therefore responded by stating that it was "*Determined* to give effect to its decisions by adopting appropriate measures to persuade Iran to comply." To do this, its members gave Iran a sixty-day timeframe to take action in order to avoid the punishment of sanctions. When Iran refused, they escalated their coercive diplomacy by increasing the potency of costs for noncompliance. They created the Iran Sanctions Committee and imposed sanctions targeted against the transfer of nuclear and ballistic missile technologies and froze the assets of key individuals and companies involved with the enrichment program. Through time, they intensified the level of punishment by imposing an arms embargo, travel restrictions, cargo inspections, seizures of illicit materials, and the freezing of funds belonging to the Iranian Revolutionary Guard Corps. At the same time, several nations decided to go beyond the United Nations–authorized coercive diplomacy by using their collective capabilities and imposing even more punishing sanctions against Iran.

Despite these efforts, Iran remained defiant. Its leaders refused to change their behavior. President Ahmadinejad continued to describe the sanctions as "intimidation" imposed by "arrogant powers," vowing that he would "not yield to pressure." "You can issue as many resolutions as you like and dream on," he declared, asserting that Iran "will not retreat one iota." Indeed, although still claiming that the program was intended only for peaceful purposes, he proudly proclaimed in 2010 that Iran had succeeded in becoming a "nuclear state." Even experts wondered precisely what that meant. The IAEA raised the stakes even higher with a damning report in November 2011 presenting evidence revealing the use of sophisticated centrifuges to speed uranium enrichment, computer modeling of high-yield detonations, and experiments with weaponization and payload integration into a missile delivery vehicle, concluding that Iran had carried out activities "relevant to the development of a nuclear explosive device."

Iranian leaders continued to resist, to obfuscate, to play for time by dangling the possibilities of compromise, and to find weaknesses in the coercion against them. Both the United States and the European Union thus determined "to rachet up the pressure" in order to force Iran to recalculate and "think again" about the costs of continuing its course of action. This time they significantly increased the punishment by striking at a particularly vulnerable target, banning all crude imports from Iran's oil industry in order to strangle the lifeblood of its economy. They also shut Iran out of the Society for Worldwide Interbank Financial Telecommunication (SWIFT), the major clearinghouse used by virtually every nation and corporation in the world to electronically convert currencies and process payments.

In order to increase the level of punishment for noncompliance, threats of armed force now were added to this mixture as well. President Obama announced that "military options" were "on the table," asserting: "I don't bluff." The Americans and the British sent naval vessels into the Persian Gulf off the coast of Iran in 2012 to demonstrate their power and their resolve. Speaking before the Armed Services Committee, Senator John McCain declared, "The list goes on and on of the threats that we have made to the Iranians and so far no action . . . We keep pointing the gun. We haven't pulled the trigger yet, and it's about time we did." Israeli officials made even more threatening statements, warning that they might soon launch an armed attack on Iranian nuclear facilities. This threat produced great alarm since it could easily trigger a much wider conflagration and because Israel had previously used force to destroy a nuclear reactor in Iraq in 1981 and another in Syria in 2007, and already stood accused of assassinating several Iranian nuclear scientists in covert operations and (along with the United States) of using a sophisticated computer worm to launch a cyberattack against Iranian uranium enrichment facilities.

Supreme Leader Ayatollah Ali Khamenei of Iran angrily responded by accusing those powers seeking to coerce in the name of nonproliferation as blatant hypocrites with double standards when it came to the possession of nuclear weapons by Israel, a country that he described as a "cancerous tumor that should be cut and will be cut." He refused to allow IAEA inspectors to visit suspected weapons development sites, announced a series of air defense war games dubbed "Sarallah" or "God's Revenge" to practice protecting these sensitive facilities from any attack, and counter-threatened to close the strategic Strait of Hormuz through which much of the world's seaborne oil passes. "Pressures, sanctions, and assassinations," he boasted, "will bear no fruit. No obstacles can stop Iran's nuclear work."

Despite these public boasts, however, the threats of military action and especially the devastatingly crippling effects of sanctions on their economy proved to be particularly potent in forcing Iranian leaders to the negotiating table. In doing so, they knew that they would have to confront an imposing array of the most powerful nations in the world who thus far had employed coercive diplomacy against them. These included all of the permanent members of the United Nations Security Council—Britain, China, France, Russia, and the United States—plus Germany and the European Union.

After nearly two years of intense, and often bruising, negotiations, these highly diverse parties reached agreement in the 2015 Joint Comprehensive Plan of Action (JCPOA), known as the Iran pact. Iran was forced to give up 100 percent of its stockpile of medium-enriched uranium and nearly 98 percent of its low-enriched uranium, to redesign a critical reactor in such a way that it could not produce any weapons-grade plutonium, to drastically reduce the numbers and types of centrifuges used to enrich uranium, to accept limitations on its nuclear research and development, and to subject itself to very intrusive inspection, monitoring, and verification by the IAEA, thereby significantly restraining its nuclear activities for at least a decade. In exchange, the other powers gave Iran incentives, or "carrots": partial relief from sanctions, access to assets frozen overseas, a resumption of the sale of oil on international markets, and use of the global financial system for trade. When it was signed, Secretary of State John Kerry described the Iran pact as a case study of successful coercive diplomacy that—whatever its flaws—greatly restrained Iran's ability to weaponize its nuclear program and as "one of the most restrictive arms control agreements in history."

Although widely hailed by nearly all countries, there were some who condemned the pact. These included hardliners in Iran who were furious about being coerced in the first place and who vehemently opposed any restrictions at all. Benjamin Netanyahu of Israel denounced it from the other extreme for not imposing enough. On the campaign trail in the United States, Donald Trump castigated the Obama-era agreement as "the worst deal ever," asserting that his "number one priority [will be] to dismantle the disastrous deal with Iran."

It is not surprising, therefore, that major upheaval erupted when President Trump stridently and unilaterally pulled completely out of the Iran nuclear pact in 2018. This action was taken over the strenuous objections of all of the other permanent members of the United Nations Security Council and parties to the accord, against the advice of both the Department of State and the Department of Defense, and even though international inspectors from the IAEA and America's own intelligence agencies repeatedly verified that the agreement was working as intended, that Iran was living up to the conditions, and that there had been "no violations." It also prompted a rare public rebuke from former president George W. Bush who, drawing lessons from his own experience, warned about the dangers of ignoring allies and failing to honor the promises of agreements.

Not content with merely withdrawing from the accord that placed restraints on Iran's nuclear program, the administration then went on to launch a wide-ranging and particularly aggressive variant of coercive diplomacy against Iran. National security advisor John Bolton (who previously had advocated a military attack to overthrow the Iranian government) described the purpose: to exert "maximum pressure." When Iranian president Hassan Rouhani responded by warning of serious consequences, President Trump fired off a tweet in all-capital letters:

> NEVER, EVER THREATEN THE UNITED STATES AGAIN OR YOU WILL SUFFER CONSEQUENCES THE LIKES OF WHICH FEW THROUGHOUT HISTORY HAVE EVER SUFFERED BEFORE!

Coercive diplomacy against Iran up to the point of American abrogation of the 2015 pact possessed two important qualities. The first of these is that it was endorsed by the United Nations Security Council and the world's most powerful countries. This collective effort provided an unusual measure of credibility, potency, and legitimacy. The second is that its demands demonstrated proportionality by clearly focusing on very specific terms of settlement for the singular and limited issue of Iran's nuclear program. This new coercion by the United States acting alone, in sharp contrast, possessed neither of these. The administration rejected the appeals of all of its former partners and struck out entirely on its own. At the same time, it refused to focus or provide clarity in its demands, seeking instead an ill-defined and wide array of issues ranging all the way from Iran's nuclear capabilities, missile development, and conventional arms buildup, to its support for proxy militant groups in such places as Syria and Yemen, and even regime change in Tehran itself—all simultaneously lumped together under what Secretary of State Mike Pompeo expansively called "malign behavior."

The United States thus launched its new campaign by imposing crippling economic sanctions designed to strangle Iran's economy by cutting off its main sources of revenue, targeting not only Iran but also any state and their private companies that traded with Iran in order to coerce them too to fall in line. These included the European, Russian, and Chinese parties to the original pact as well as Japan, South Korea, and India, among others heavily dependent on importing oil from Iran. Predictably, this infuriated allies and adversaries alike. Over the objections of the Department of Defense and the Central Intelligence Agency, the Trump administration took the unprecedented step in 2019 of designating an element of the Iranian government, the Revolutionary Guard Corps, as a "terrorist organization." Iran reciprocated by declaring that officers of Central Command directing American armed forces in the Middle East were the real "terrorists," and began to make military preparations. To increase the coercive pressure, the United States then sent the USS *Abraham Lincoln* Carrier Strike Group, a bomber task force, Patriot missiles, drones, and more troops to the Persian Gulf, announcing that it was prepared to use "unrelenting force."

In the face of this coercion designed to intimidate, Iran determined not to be intimidated. President Rouhani declared that he would never give in to American pressure and announced that if Washington no longer felt bound to honor the promises of the pact, it would not as well. Iran therefore began to restart some of its uranium enrichment program—the very outcome that the original nuclear agreement had been designed to avoid. Hardliners in Tehran saw this as not a "threat" but a "gift." It gave validation to their claim that the United States could never be trusted and enabled them to strengthen their power against moderates at home, all the while vowing to resist, warning of a "mother of all wars," and shouting to impassioned crowds, "Death to America!" Provocative acts and rocket attacks against nearby American bases and allies quickly followed. Other governments around the world voiced deep concern that this reckless faceoff and cycle of bellicose rhetoric and muscle flexing in an already highly volatile region carried perilous risks of miscalculation and military confrontation. Many spoke openly about the possibility of war.

This case serves as a reminder of the high level of risk inherent in coercive diplomacy, especially when the positions are so diametrically opposed and the parties seem to be locked in an escalatory spiral careening toward collision. It is at times like this when the challenges of force and statecraft are particularly acute—and dangerous.

ANALYSIS

Coercive diplomacy is an attractive, indeed sometimes a beguiling, strategy because it offers strong powers the possibility of achieving their objectives without war. Yet, like deterrence, it typically assumes a type of simple, uncomplicated rationality on the part of the opponent. If opponents are "rational," they will surely see in any cost–benefit analysis that it is in their interest to comply with the demands made against them and back down. This assumption, however, oversimplifies the roots of motivation, emotional impulses, and other considerations that may influence those who are the targets of coercive diplomacy. Governments are not unitary actors, and there is frequent competition among various bureaucracies, military branches, interests, and personalities. All of these have very different perceptions, values, ideas about what constitutes the "national interest" or "honor," and calculations of possible benefits or "unacceptable" costs.

Moreover, there is no way to confidently or successfully predict what leaders will do when provoked by the harsh demands, threats, and time limit of an ultimatum. An opponent's response to intimidation and reluctance to undertake a humiliating retreat, as cognitive psychology repeatedly emphasizes, can activate psychological tendencies to engage in wishful thinking, discount evidence that challenges existing preconceptions, and distort the ability to correctly anticipate the behavior of others, thereby leading to critical misperceptions and miscalculations. This is particularly important to appreciate since coercive diplomacy is not a physical attack, but a psychological tool designed to influence and persuade. Analyses of cases thus reveal that successes and failures entail a complex and sometimes quite subjective matrix of historical, psychological, cultural, and political variables.

Those Japanese leaders who complied with the demands of Commodore Perry's "gunboat diplomacy," for example, did so in part because they held a much longer perspective of history than did the Americans and believed that their action was a mere tactical move to buy time until circumstances changed in their favor. At the onset of the Cuban Missile Crisis, Khrushchev mistakenly perceived Kennedy as a young, inexperienced leader who could be pushed around. Moreover, as the crisis escalated, it revealed that Soviet policymakers subjected to days of stress, sleep deprivation, and decisions made under pressure became emotional and erratic. Among the American leaders as well, Robert Kennedy observed, there were those "of the highest intelligence" who "because of the pressure of events . . . appeared to lose their judgment and stability." When the Trump administration launched its coercive diplomacy against Iran, it did not instill a fear of unacceptable punishment as hoped, but instead produced just the opposite reaction: it provoked Iranian hardliners to dig in their heels and become even more determined to pursue their objectives, often becoming more reckless and assertive in their policies.

Coercive diplomacy, by its very nature, is a strategy that induces stress. Unlike negotiation, it shifts attention away from common interests and focuses instead on conflict. It can trigger shock, anger, fear, pride, humiliation, and a sense of desperation that easily can exacerbate rather than resolve a crisis and thereby actually provoke the very kind of behavior it sought to avoid. As scholar Robin Markwica observes in his recent book *Emotional Choices*, stress can seriously degrade performance by creating decisional pathologies among fatigued leaders forced to make critical decisions under the pressure of time when the costs of failure are high. Outbursts of emotion provoked by coercion easily can increase cognitive rigidity, impair the ability to accurately process new information that challenges existing beliefs, reduce creativity and the ability to improvise, narrow the range of perceived alternatives or options, and limit the degree of toleration for ambiguity. One would like to believe that the fateful decisions of war and peace are not influenced by such factors, but they often are.

An analysis of these historical cases also reveals the critical importance of motivation or will—for both sides. Success is more likely if the state employing coercive diplomacy can create an asymmetry of motivation by conveying that it is much more motivated to achieve its objectives than the adversary is to oppose them. Perry took great efforts to convince the Japanese, for example, of the overwhelming determination of his country to realize its goal. During the Cuban Missile Crisis, Kennedy made it clear that absolutely vital American interests were at stake just off its shores and that he would actually risk the possibility of thermonuclear war in order to remove the missiles. When coercing Iran, however, most nations possessed a serious interest in preventing the proliferation of nuclear weapons in a highly unstable region, but that interest was somewhat removed from their own immediate borders and did not appear to necessarily be threatened as long as uranium enrichment remained at a low or medium grade. In sharp contrast, Iranian leaders were intensely motivated to resist coercion, viewing their acquisition of nuclear technology as vital to their national interests, their sovereignty, their security, and their prestige.

Historical cases also reveal that motivation sometimes can be deliberately enhanced or diminished by the nature and extent, or proportionality, of what is actually demanded of an opponent. The quite natural motivation of the Japanese to resist American coercion in the nineteenth century, for example, was significantly lowered by the fact that the United States did not demand any more than a relatively modest opening of a few ports for trade and assistance to shipwrecked American sailors. Similarly, during the crisis over Cuba, Kennedy's limited demand, confined to the objective of removing the missiles alone, significantly helped to persuade Khrushchev that he could comply without threatening the vital national interests of the Soviet Union. The limited demand on Iran that it accept restrictions on its nuclear enrichment program and open its facilities to inspection helped lead to the nuclear pact of 2015. In sharp contrast, once the United States began its expansive demands after 2018 to include such other issues as the overthrow of the Iranian government itself, leaders in Tehran could hardly be realistically expected to be motivated to comply and end their existence by committing political suicide.

These revelations about motivation should serve as warnings to those who believe that the credibility and strength of threats is *the* critical factor on which successful coercion depends. Leaders of militarily powerful states may be tempted at times to believe that they can, with little risk, simply throw their weight around and intimidate weaker opponents into giving in to their demands. But the leaders of militarily weaker states may be intensely motivated by what they have at stake and, for this reason, harden their position and refuse to back down.

Credibility and potency nevertheless are often of critical importance to coercive diplomacy. In each of our historical cases, those employing this strategy sought to create a fear of unacceptable costs by attempting to convey that they possessed both the will and the ability to carry through with the threatened punishment in the event of noncompliance. They wanted to use their potential power to hurt as bargaining power to make their opponents act in order to avoid it. Perry's use of "gunboat diplomacy" effectively threatened to use American superiority in military technology to inflict punishment on Japan. When Kennedy threatened Khrushchev in 1962, he focused very specifically on the potential use of armed force to attack the missile sites in Cuba in order to destroy the weapons before they became operational. This, in turn, raised an even greater fear: if the threat were carried out neither side would be able to control the devastating consequences. Once the world's most powerful nations (including their friends Russia and China on the United Nations

Security Council) collectively agreed to impose crippling sanctions on them, there could be no doubt among Iranian leaders about the credibility and the potency of punishment if they continued along their path of unrestrained nuclear enrichment. This drove them to change course and accept the conditions of the 2015 pact. When the Americans unilaterally pulled out the agreement in 2018 over the strong objections of all their former partners, however, the credibility and the potency of international coercive threats against Iran could not help but suffer.

The existence of incentives also can play a particularly significant role in the success or failure of coercive diplomacy. Few international problems are ever resolved by simply making threats. But, as these historical cases reveal, incentives—like threats—also must be credible and have sufficient potency in order to affect the motivation of opponents to comply with demands made against them. As we saw in the cases of negotiations, both sides must see that they will receive benefits, that they will get "something for something" rather than "nothing for something." When attempting to coerce Japan in the nineteenth century, the United States effectively coupled inducements with its threats. Perry offered to extend the benefits of commercial trade and access to Western technology, and this possessed considerable appeal, at least to the progressives in the Japanese court. Kennedy offered substantial inducements: a promise to call off the naval quarantine, to not invade Cuba, and to remove the U.S. Jupiter missiles from Turkey. These concessions played a profound role in altering Khrushchev's balance of motivation to comply. The incentives of sanction relief and economic benefits offered to the leaders of Iran certainly helped to secure compliance with the nuclear pact. In sharp contrast, when discussing the "carrots" and "sticks" of the new "maximum pressure" coercive diplomacy, John Bolton said of himself, "I am not much of a carrot man."

Coercive diplomacy also can be affected by the level of urgency. In one way or another, states determine how much time they will give an opponent to reflect on the costs that are likely to follow if the threats of punishment are carried out. They can vary their choices between a mild try-and-see approach or a much more extreme ultimatum that dramatically escalates the pressure by setting a time limit for compliance. American "gunboat diplomacy" in 1853 and 1854 utilized the former, giving the Japanese eight months for what they hoped would be ample time for thoughtful deliberation. A wide variety of time limits were applied to Iran over the years, sometimes specific and sometimes vague. During the Cuban Missile Crisis, Kennedy's ultimatum gave the Soviet Union twenty-four hours to remove the missiles. Soviet compliance in this particular case, however, appears to have much more to do with the asymmetry of motivation, enormous fear of war, and the existence of potent incentives rather than the press of time. Indeed, research on other historical cases suggests that ultimata with short time limits easily can add unnecessary stress and provocation to already dangerous confrontations.

Finally, these cases, ranging from Japan to the Soviet Union and Iran, from the Pacific to the Caribbean and the Strait of Hormuz, from the nineteenth century to the twenty-first, and from gunboats to missiles, all provide invaluable demonstrations of the fact that coercive diplomacy, like all strategies of force and statecraft, is highly dependent on the historical context. Each occurred with particular leaders making decisions within the range of possibilities and restraints afforded by their own time and place. Moreover, each was affected by the broader

diplomatic revolution that changed many features of diplomacy and the international system itself.

Public opinion and the media, for example, played a relatively small role in shaping the agenda or influencing international relations in the nineteenth-century case of American coercion against Japan. There was little knowledge or even interest among either the American or the Japanese public in the other, and Perry actually received specific instructions to refrain from any communication with the press. In an age of extensive television coverage, Kennedy and his advisors were forced to devote considerable effort during the Cuban Missile Crisis to calculating the impact of their decisions on domestic opinion at home, fearing the severe political consequences of appearing to be "weak" on the eve of an election. In addition, they regarded global opinion to be particularly important, and thus worked hard to present a favorable impression among allies in Latin America and Europe, whose support they sought, and at the United Nations before what they called "the courtroom of world opinion."

When members of the Security Council determined to use coercive diplomacy against Iran, they too were greatly influenced by global opinion fearful of nuclear proliferation. Both Obama and Trump found themselves under enormous pressure from organizations ranging from those like the National Iranian American Council and the Federation of American Scientists advocating restraint and diplomatic negotiation, to those like United Against Nuclear Iran and the American Israel Public Affairs Committee pushing for a policy of "don't speak to evil" and of launching an armed attack if necessary. Leaders in Tehran, for their part, knew that polls throughout Iran consistently indicated a deep and passionate distrust of foreign powers, with enormous popular support (at times reaching nationalistic frenzy) for refusing to be intimidated and standing up to external coercion and pursuing their nuclear enrichment program, even among those who suffered under sanctions and detested the repression of the regime itself.

The number of actors in the international system further demonstrated the growing challenges and complexities of diplomacy. When America employed coercion against Japan in 1853 and 1854, it knew for all intents and purposes that it needed to calculate only the relatively isolated interests and reactions of itself and Japan. During their confrontation of 1962, both Kennedy and Khrushchev were painfully aware of the fact that their decisions (made all the more complicated by the ideological contest of the Cold War) would affect the entire planet. As Robert Kennedy ominously explained, the crisis "was my life—and for Americans and Russians, for the whole world, it was their life as well." In the case of Iran, the large number of actors in the United Nations, the European Union, and the powerful parties to the nuclear pact had the effect of both strengthening the credibility, potency, and legitimacy of the coercion while at the same time weakening it by increasing differences of opinion over the precise nature of the demands, the threats, the incentives, and the urgency of time.

Technological changes have greatly impacted the context of coercive diplomacy as well. Strategic information during the 1850s for Commodore Perry and everyone else, in the words of one observer, was gathered and shared by "mouth-to-mouth" communication and "rumor." By 1962, the advanced technology of U-2 spy planes flying miles above the earth made it possible to show dramatic photographs of the Soviet Union placing missiles in Cuba and thereby convincingly

counter Khrushchev's claims to the contrary. It also had the enormous advantage of providing warning of pending danger and allowed the Americans to discover the missiles before they became operational, and thus design their coercion accordingly. When employing coercive diplomacy against Iran, spy satellite imagery from vast distances in space could precisely locate enrichment facilities, determine which ones had been fortified to withstand armed attacks, and through isotopic detection of air samples ascertain the level of uranium enrichment.

But the greatest change has occurred in weapons technology. When the United States engaged in early "gunboat diplomacy," the weapons at the disposal of the navy were much more sophisticated than those possessed by the Japanese, but nevertheless very limited. If coercion had failed in 1854, it would have taken months to mobilize additional force across the ocean, and, even then, the amount of damage that could have been inflicted remained very small. These limitations changed dramatically in the next century. Indeed, by 1962, both Kennedy and Khrushchev understood that their sophisticated delivery systems, nuclear weapons, and the radioactive fallout resulting immediately from their use would lead to unprecedented catastrophe. As Mohamed ElBaradei notes in *The Age of Deception: Nuclear Diplomacy in Treacherous Times*, such calculations and the fears that accompany them are renewed whenever issues of proliferation arise, as they do in the case of Iran. Indeed, as one of the leading decision makers at the time of the Cuban Missile Crisis put it, with modern weapons the failure of coercive diplomacy could lead to "the abyss of nuclear destruction and the end of mankind."

The potential extraordinary costs resulting from the deliberate manipulation of risks through the use of demands and threats, especially in our own time, have led any number of scholars and policymakers alike to become acutely aware not only of the uses of this strategy but also of its difficulties, limitations, and dangers. A broad-ranging and insightful study entitled *The United States and Coercive Diplomacy*, edited by Robert Art and Patrick Cronin, to provide but one example, explores several post–Cold War cases. It focuses on cases ranging from Serbia and Afghanistan to Haiti and North Korea, and from nonstate actors like warlord Mohamed Farrah Aidid in Somalia to terrorists like Osama bin Laden. The authors point out that policymakers are not always well schooled in matters of force and statecraft, are often insufficiently sensitive to the risks of coercive diplomacy, and do not fully appreciate the complexities of how difficult it is to apply theoretical principles to actual policy in particular circumstances or to predict outcomes. They observe that possession of military superiority over an opponent is not at all sufficient for success and that targets may refuse to back down for reasons such as honor or prestige and may develop "counter-coercion" techniques of their own. They also find that this strategy is more difficult in the case of nonstate actors like terrorists or suicide bombers, who are intensely motivated to resist and who possess few tangible assets that can be threatened with punishment. After carefully exploring these cases and analyzing the evidence, they conclude that coercive diplomacy has sometimes worked—but more often has failed.

All systematic analyses of case studies of coercive diplomacy reveal that this strategy, perhaps even more so than deterrence, is highly dependent on context. It does not take place in a vacuum, and thus must be tailored in an exacting way to fit the unique configuration of each situation and to take into account the background

of relationships and particular behavioral characteristics of a specific adversary. As Sun Tzu warned centuries ago based upon his own reading of the lessons of history: "Know your enemy."

But the many details of a crisis in which coercive diplomacy may be employed are seldom clearly visible to any policymaker, miscalculations and unintended consequences are likely, and, as a result, the strategy can easily fail. Efforts to engage in coercive diplomacy therefore rest heavily on skill at correctly assessing adversaries and their perspectives, appreciating limits, maintaining proportionality between the objectives being pursued and the leverage being applied in their pursuit, providing reassurances, adjusting to ever-changing circumstances, and relying more on explicit diplomatic communication rather than military signals alone. Leaders employing coercive diplomacy must continually evaluate the risks of what they are doing and must slow the momentum of events as necessary in order to give the opponent time for sober reflection. They must choose and time their actions carefully to make them compatible with the opponent's ability to appraise the evolving situation and to respond appropriately. Moreover, they must always leave the adversary with a way out of the crisis that avoids the extremes of either war or abject humiliation. As all of these observations suggest, coercive diplomacy includes some of the important requirements of crisis management, a topic to which we now turn in the next chapter.

SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER EXPLORATION

The theory of coercive diplomacy is articulated in Alexander L. George and William E. Simons (eds.), *The Limits of Coercive Diplomacy* (Boulder, CO, 1994 ed.), and Alexander L. George, *Forceful Persuasion* (Washington, D.C., 1991). See also Robin Markwica, *Emotional Choices: How the Logic of Affect Shapes Coercive Diplomacy* (New York, 2018); Todd Sechser and Matthew Fuhrmann, *Nuclear Weapons and Coercive Diplomacy* (New York, 2017); Allison Carnegie, *Power Plays* (New York, 2015); Robert Art and Kelly Greenhill (eds.), *The Use of Force* (Lanham, MD, 2015); Thomas Christensen, *Worse Than a Monolith* (Princeton, 2011); Thomas Schelling, *Arms and Influence* (New Haven, CT, 2008 ed.); Bruce Jentleson, Stanley Foundation Policy Analysis Brief, "Coercive Diplomacy," (December 2006); Robert J. Art and Patrick M. Cronin (eds.), *The United States and Coercive Diplomacy* (Washington, D.C., 2003); James A. Nathan, *Soldiers, Statecraft, and History* (Westport, CT, 2002); Daniel Byman and Matthew Waxman, *The Dynamics of Coercion* (Cambridge, UK, 2002); Kenneth Schultz, *Democracy and Coercive Diplomacy* (Cambridge, UK, 2001); Lawrence Freedman (ed.), *Strategic Coercion* (Oxford, 1998); Peter Jakobsen, *Western Use of Coercive Diplomacy After the Cold War* (New York, 1998); Paul Gordon Lauren, "Theories of Bargaining with Threats of Force: Deterrence and Coercive Diplomacy," in Paul Gordon Lauren (ed.), *Diplomacy: New Approaches in History, Theory, and Policy* (New York, 1979); Barry Blechman and Stephen Kaplan, *Force Without War* (Washington, D.C., 1978); and Paul Gordon Lauren, "Ultimata and Coercive Diplomacy," *International Studies Quarterly*, 16 (1972): 131–165.

The case of "gunboat diplomacy" in Asia is treated in Thomas Patterson et al., *American Foreign Relations* (Boston, 2009 ed.); Akira Iriye (ed.), *Mutual Images: Essays in American-Japanese Relations* (Cambridge, MA, 1975); Roger Pineau

(ed.), *The Japan Expedition of 1852–1854* (Washington, D.C., 1968); Samuel Eliot Morrison, *"Old Bruin"* (Boston, 1967); William G. Beasley (trans. and ed.), *Select Documents on Japanese Foreign Policy, 1853–1868* (London, 1955); Arthur Walworth, *Black Ships Off Japan* (New York, 1946); and Francis L. Hawks (ed.), *Narrative of the Expedition of an American Squadron* (Washington, D.C., 1856). For broader discussion of navies as instruments of coercive diplomacy, see Robert Mandel, "The Effectiveness of Gunboat Diplomacy," *International Studies Quarterly*, 30 (1986): 59–76; James Cable, *Gunboat Diplomacy, 1919–1979* (New York, 1986 ed.); and Edward Luttwak, *The Political Uses of Sea Power* (Baltimore, 1974).

Much has been written about the Cuban Missile Crisis, including David Gibson, *Talk at the Brink* (Princeton, 2012); Don Mutton and David Welch, *The Cuban Missile Crisis* (New York, 2011); Michael Dobbs, *One Minute to Midnight* (New York, 2009 ed.); Sheldon Stern, *The Week the World Stood Still* (Stanford, CA, 2005); Ernest May and Philip Zelikow, *The Kennedy Tapes* (Cambridge, MA, 2002 ed.); Robert Kennedy, *Thirteen Days* (New York, 1999 ed.); and Alexandr Fursenko and Timothy Naftali, *One Hell of a Gamble* (New York, 1998).

The case of contemporary coercion against Iran can be explored in recent issues of journals such as *Foreign Affairs*, *Foreign Policy*, and *The National Interest*; in the archived articles from 2018 to the present from reputable news organizations with international capabilities; and in a comparison of the websites of the U.S. Department of State at www.state.gov, the Iranian Ministry of Foreign Affairs at www.en.mfa.ir, the European Union at www.eeas.europa.eu, and the International Atomic Energy Agency at www.iaea.org. For historical background see Dina Esfandiary, "The Trump Administration's Maximum Pressure Campaign: A Prelude to War with Iran?," *Bulletin of Atomic Scientists*, May 6, 2019; Dennis Ross, "The Inside Story of Obama's Iran Strategy," *Politico*, October 10, 2015; John Bolton, "To Stop Iran's Bomb, Bomb Iran," *New York Times*, March 26, 2015; Mohamed ElBaradei, *The Age of Deception* (New York, 2011); United Nations Security Council Resolutions 1929 (2010), 1803 (2008), 1747 (2007), and 1737 (2006) at www.un.org/Docs/sc; Barry Blechman and Daniel Brumberg, *Engagement, Coercion, and Iran's Nuclear Challenge* (Washington, D.C., 2010); and Alireza Jafarzadeh, *The Iran Threat* (New York, 2007).

Many other cases of coercive diplomacy exist in the annals of force and statecraft. Some of the more suggestive of these include the Great Powers against Mehemet Ali of Egypt (1840); Britain against Greece in the Don Pacifico Affair (1850); Britain against the United States in the *Trent* Affair (1861); the French ultimatum against Siam (1893); Italy against Turkey (1911); the ultimata leading to the outbreak of the First World War (1914); Hitler against Czechoslovakia (1938); Britain and France against Hitler after the invasion of Poland (1939); the United States against Japan (1938–1941), Laos (1961–1962), North Vietnam (1965), Nicaragua and Libya (1981–1989), Somalia (1992–1994), Haiti and North Korea (1994), Saddam Hussein and Iraq (1990–2002), Bosnia (1995), Kosovo (1999); and the international coercion against Libya (1992–2003 and 2011), Syria (2011–present), Russia (2014–present), and North Korea (2006–present).

CHAPTER 11

Crisis Management

"The most dangerous moment in human history"—this is the way that historian Arthur Schlesinger Jr. describes the Cuban Missile Crisis. For the first time in history, global devastation was within the immediate grasp of two human beings. One false step could condemn millions to their deaths. As the superpowers teetered on the very brink of possible annihilation, the deeply worried Soviet leader Nikita Khrushchev sent a personal letter to President John Kennedy warning that if they continued to escalate their actions against each other, the result would be absolute disaster. "The more the two of us pull," he observed, "the tighter the knot will be tied," and

> a moment may come when that knot will be tied so tight that even he who tied it will not have the strength to untie it, and then it will be necessary to cut that knot, and what that would mean is not for me to explain to you, because you yourself understand perfectly of what terrible forces our countries dispose. Consequently, if there is no intention to tighten that knot, and thereby doom the world to the catastrophe of thermonuclear war, then let us not only relax the forces pulling on the ends of the rope, let us take measures to untie that knot. We are ready for this.

Because both leaders came to understand that they were not only *rivals* but *necessary partners* in avoiding the frightening consequences of a war that neither wanted, they sought to actively manage the crisis, taking urgent and deliberate steps to prevent it from spiraling out of control. In the end, they succeeded. But the experience had been terrifying, and shortly thereafter Secretary of Defense Robert McNamara remarked soberly, "Today there is no longer any such thing as military strategy; there is only crisis management."

His words are an overstatement and a simplification of the lessons to be learned, but they serve to emphasize the critical importance in statecraft of keeping war-threatening situations under control. The history of relations among states is studded with innumerable international crises that resulted when negotiation, deterrence, and/or coercive diplomacy all failed. Some of these were managed peacefully, but others ended in war that neither side wanted. In each crisis,

Crisis Managers and Crisis Management at the White House: The Cuban Missile Crisis

policymakers found themselves called upon to make high-stakes and delicate diplomatic and military decisions under great stress. They knew that their decisions might result not merely in success or failure for their own nations, but in the preservation or the ruin of the international order itself. With the current existence of weapons of mass destruction, a nearly overwhelming volume of information in an age of instantaneous communications, and the intense stress of time and events, crisis management becomes even more important. Indeed, this explains not only the creation of the independent and nonpartisan Crisis Management Initiative, based in Helsinki, and the International Crisis Group, headquartered in Brussels, but also the fact that the highly secure and sophisticated Operations Center in the U.S. Department of State maintains the 24/7 Crisis Management Support team of watch officers to alert, brief, and advise policymakers on how to manage sudden and serious international crises in our world today.

PRINCIPLES OF CRISIS MANAGEMENT

Leaders who are responsible for major decisions about force and statecraft from the historical past to the present have understood that crises provide one of the most fascinating and most frightening features of international affairs. They generally break out suddenly, present serious threats to vital interests, demand quick decisions under intense stress, and stand on the threshold of war or peace. There are times when they are resolved or defused, and other times when they explode into armed conflict. If one state deliberately intends to launch a premeditated, preemptive, or preventive war to achieve its objectives, of course, there is little that another can do to prevent it. But what about those cases that escalate into an inadvertent war that neither side wants or expects at the outset of a diplomatic crisis? How does

one account for the fact that some international confrontations end peacefully and some result in war? To what extent does the ability or failure of the adversaries to apply principles of crisis management explain the outcome? And, more basically, what exactly are these principles of crisis management?

As a tool for resolving conflicts and avoiding inadvertent war, crisis management was a familiar phenomenon during the classical system of diplomacy. Its techniques and modalities were developed over time by trial and error with a certain level of prudence, self-restraint, and good judgment, coupled with the advantages of limited armed force and the shared norms of cultural homogeneity, but never with any explicit theory of principles to guide policymakers. There were accounts of the kinds of mistakes that statesmen had made at moments of high crises, but certainly never a systematic effort to articulate lessons from the past or to learn how to actually manage a crisis once it broke out. This began to change with the terrifying Cuban Missile Crisis, the experience of which created an infinitely greater sense of urgency about managing crises in the age of weapons of mass destruction. It prompted scholars and policy researchers to seriously study crisis management in detail. As a result, we now know much more about the challenges of information processing and decision making under crisis conditions, of command and control, of coordinating diplomatic and military actions, of communication with opponents, and of the special tasks required for practicing crisis management.

1. From Conflict to Crisis. Analyses of historical cases, for example, quickly reveal that *it is only because neither side is willing to back down that a perceived conflict of interest results in a crisis* in the first place. Confrontations between adversaries can easily be managed and terminated—in fact, avoided altogether—if one side is willing to back away. In fact, in many situations it requires a deliberate policy decision to transform a conflict of interest or a misunderstanding into an actual crisis. President Truman, to illustrate, was urged not to oppose the Soviet-imposed blockade of West Berlin in 1948 based on the grounds that it would be highly disadvantageous for the United States to become involved in military operations to defend an outpost lying well inside East Germany. He nevertheless chose to ignore that advice and decided to challenge the Soviet Union from changing the status quo in its favor. This marked the beginning of the Berlin Crisis.

2. Tension Between Resolve and Restraint. Once a crisis is set into motion, there is a *built-in policy tension for each side*. That is, each side *feels compelled to do what is needed to protect or advance what it perceives as its most important interests*. At exactly the same time, however, *these very interests force it to recognize the necessity for self-restraint and to avoid actions that could trigger unwanted escalation*. It is the tension between these two objectives—protecting one's interests and showing resolve while simultaneously avoiding measures that could trigger undesired escalation and possibly war—that creates the essential dilemma that all policymakers must solve if they hope to successfully practice crisis management.

3. Appropriate Strategy. The resolution of this dilemma during a war-threatening crisis requires leaders *to develop a careful political-military strategy that combines force and statecraft in a way appropriate to the situation at hand*. They need to be particularly sensitive to both diplomatic and military considerations,

balancing the two in such a way as to avoid the extremes of relying either exclusively on weapons or exclusively on words. Military preparations and threats of force are often indispensable for supporting diplomatic efforts in crisis situations, but the logic of military operations can conflict with the logic and requirements of diplomacy. Quickly deploying troops or naval assets may make perfect sense as a means of conveying resolve or of preparing to fight if war should erupt, for example, but at the same time may present grave dangers by working against the political and diplomatic necessities of proceeding slowly and building in pauses for thoughtful deliberation and communication. Successful crisis managers need to combine both of these factors but must understand that threats and movements of military forces, as Clausewitz observed many years ago, must be commensurate with limited objectives and carefully employed as instruments of policy, not as substitutes for policy.

4. Limited Objectives. In developing such a strategy, it is of considerable importance to recognize that management is greatly facilitated if both sides resist the temptation to inflict a damaging and humiliating defeat on the other and instead *carefully limit the objectives that they pursue in the confrontation.* Why is this self-restraint important? The more ambitious or "offensive" the aims intended to alter the existing situation at the expense of the adversary, the more strongly motivated the opponent will be to resist. Less demanding or "defensive" aims, by way of contrast, tend to provide lesser threats to vital interests and thereby increase the probability of accommodation. In the end, all parties must recognize each other's legitimate interests and must strive to find a mutually acceptable formula for terminating the crisis.

5. Limited Means. Successful crisis management also requires creating *proportionality between the objectives being pursued and the leverage applied in their pursuit*—that is, *the limitation of the means is matched to limited ends.* A power such as the United States, for example, has unparalleled military forces for attacking and destroying any number and variety of targets. What is described as "gross military capabilities" of this character, however, do not necessarily provide a president with viable "usable options" in crises in which armed forces need to be carefully tailored to the peculiarities of a particular situation. The use or threatened use of excessive force during the critical opening stages of a diplomatic crisis laden with the potential for dangerous escalation might well signal a desire to militarily impose one's will on an adversary rather than to actually manage the crisis by means of diplomacy.

During the Cuban Missile Crisis, to illustrate, Kennedy managed to limit both ends and means. He rejected the advice that he aim at a regime change or the removal of Fidel Castro and confined the objective to the removal of the immediate danger of the missiles themselves. Similarly, he rejected the recommendation from the Joint Chiefs of Staff that he launch air strikes against the missile sites or an armed invasion against Cuba itself, deciding instead to combine the means of a naval blockade with those of diplomacy for crisis management.

6. Operational Principles and Conditions. Studies of historical cases also indicate that *all* sides in an international confrontation must understand, create, and adhere to other *operational principles and conditions that favor crisis management.* Limited objectives and means alone, in other words, will not ensure control

over the danger of escalation and inadvertent war. Leaders also must seek to maintain control by consciously avoiding stress-induced decisional pathologies such as cognitive rigidity, feelings of desperation, or passive resignation with its notions of "inevitability" and the mistaken belief that there are "no alternatives" and there is nothing they can do. This leads to the disaster of self-fulfilling prophecy. They must instead intentionally refuse to submit to the pressures produced by the rush of events and create conditions that favor managing a crisis. Such favoring conditions are highly context dependent, and the importance of each varies from one crisis to another; although none guarantees success, they all have been found likely to make a difference and affect outcomes. Each arises, in one way or another, from the necessity of policymakers to deal with the inherent dilemma of force and statecraft that we have examined throughout: the need on occasion to use both, even though there is a tension that often exists between the military and the diplomatic measures that they employ in a crisis.

These favoring principles and conditions include:

1. *Maintaining top-level civilian control of military institutions and actions.* This certainly involves command and control over the selection and timing of military options, including specific tactical maneuvers and operations such as alerts, deployments, and movements that might lead to an undesired clash with the opponent's forces.
2. *Creating pauses in the tempo.* The momentum must be deliberately slowed down in order to provide adequate time for the two sides to exchange communications, assess the situation, reflect, make decisions, respond to proposals, and engage in consultation.
3. *Coordinating diplomatic and military moves.* Whatever military actions are undertaken must be made consistent with political-diplomatic efforts as part of a carefully integrated strategy for managing the crisis without war.
4. *Confining military measures to those that constitute clear demonstrations of one's resolve and yet are limited to the crisis at hand.* Proportionality between ends and means, in other words, must be maintained.
5. *Avoiding military moves that give opponents the impression that one is about to resort to large-scale warfare and, thereby, force them to consider preemption.* The task is to manage the crisis, not escalate it.
6. *Choosing diplomatic-military options that clearly signal a desire to negotiate rather than seek a military solution.* In this regard, confusing signals, inflammatory rhetoric, or extraneous "noise" that might lead to misperception must be avoided.
7. *Employing a strategy that leaves opponents a way out of the crisis that is compatible with their fundamental interests.* Management and accommodation are much more likely if the costs can be minimized.

7. Shared Risk and Shared Benefit. Although the mindset during these times normally focuses on the highly adversarial nature of the crisis, these last two operational principles draw attention to the fact that the antagonists are simultaneously both *rivals* and *necessary partners* who share two important things. In the first place, they share the grave *risk*, as Khrushchev described it by tying a knot

ever tighter, of becoming mutual victims of escalatory moves that easily could result in a war that neither one wants. Second, as in negotiation, they have a mutual interest in finding a *benefit* from an outcome, although not necessarily ideal for either party, that is better than the alternative of inadvertent war.

8. Skilled Managers. Effective adherence to these principles and conditions requires skill, judgment, and flexibility in adapting to unexpected developments when a crisis erupts. Such qualities, however, are not easy to find during war-threatening crises of intense pressure and acute stress, when rationality and objectivity can easily give way to shock, confusion, fear, anger, cognitive rigidity, miscalculation, and impulsiveness. Individual leaders may or may not possess the necessary skills. Some may rise to the occasion and become successful managers, while others may become completely overwhelmed by events and fail disastrously. Similarly, appropriate crisis management often imposes stringent constraints on the use of military force, and this can easily lead to serious tensions that strain the experience, imagination, and patience of diplomatic and military professionals alike. Civilians often have imperfect knowledge of, or control over, their military forces. Moreover, leaders with armed forces designed for offensive and assertive foreign policy may well find that they lose their capability to be used as highly refined, flexible, and discriminating instruments when needed for crisis management.

Utilizing these broad principles, it is possible to compare the relative performance of policymakers in different historical cases in such a way as to come to a deeper understanding of the nature of crisis management, the importance of context and the impact of the diplomatic revolution, and the more far-reaching issue of how success or failure in crisis management can result in the preservation or destruction of the international system itself.

BISMARCK AS AN "HONEST BROKER" IN THE CRISIS OF 1878

The origins of the Crisis of 1878 can be found in the slow disintegration of the Ottoman Empire, violations of human rights, and Great Power ambitions in the Balkans. Sensing a unique opportunity to expand its influence and territory, Russia declared war on the Ottoman Turks the previous year and sent its army marching south. When the Turkish resistance collapsed, Russian general Nicholas Ignatiev sought to exploit the temporary military advantage to the fullest. He deliberately disregarded his instructions from civilian authorities to do everything possible to avoid any foreign suspicion that might lead to intervention. Instead, he recklessly imposed the Treaty of San Stefano with seemingly unlimited objectives that would virtually destroy Turkey in Europe and unilaterally expand Russian territory in the Balkans and influence over the strategically important Bosporus and Dardanelles straits controlling naval access between the Black Sea and the Mediterranean Sea. These provisions not only directly violated previous agreements but granted advantages only to Russia that, if implemented, would completely upset the balance of power. The other powers therefore concluded that the treaty was completely unacceptable. France and Italy announced that the provisions threatened their

national interests. Austria mobilized troops in its southeastern provinces, declaring that it would oppose any Russian expansion by war if necessary. The Turks began assembling forces in and around their capital and erecting earthworks. Britain also threatened war, calling up its reserves, issuing orders for its navy to be sent through the straits into the Sea of Marmara, and bringing several thousand Indian troops to strategic stations in the Mediterranean as a demonstration, all while crowds in London began to sing the arrogant and bellicose chant that gave the word "jingoism" to the world:

> We don't want to fight, but by jingo if we do,
> We've got the men, we've got the ships, we've got the money too!

At exactly the same time, Russian troops were only one day's march from the very gates of Constantinople, poised to attack if necessary. A very localized conflict thus was poised on the brink of escalating into a large inadvertent war involving Europe as a whole. The situation became so tense, in fact, that one British commentator in retrospect ominously observed, "If even a midshipman had lost his temper, he might have run the country into war." Indeed, as historian William Langer concludes, "peace hung by a hair."

In this crisis situation, German chancellor Otto von Bismarck saw the possibility that any war involving several powers would bring catastrophic consequences upon the entire international system that he had been trying to construct since the unification of Germany. He was never particularly bothered by competition and rivalry, but wanted to avoid general war at all costs. Bismarck understood that the maintenance of peace and stability would not just happen on its own but required serious and deliberate efforts at crisis management. Of particular importance, he viewed the crisis itself as the real enemy. That is, he saw the task of management in this case as one not of advancing one's own power at the expense of an opponent, in which a gain by one side amounted to a loss for the other, but rather of convincing all the antagonists that they were partners in shared risk and had a common interest in avoiding escalation that could lead to inadvertent war. In response to the suggestion of the Austrian foreign minister and in keeping with the earlier norms and practices of the Concert of Europe, Bismarck consequently offered the hospitality of Berlin for an international conference and announced that he would attempt to serve as an "honest broker" to help manage the crisis.

The Congress of Berlin thus assembled in the German capital in June 1878. In addition to Bismarck, the representatives included most of the leading statesmen and foreign ministers of Europe, including the Earl of Beaconsfield (Benjamin Disraeli) and Lord Salisbury of Britain, Prince Gorchakov and Count Shuvalov of Russia, Count Andrassy of Hungary, William Waddington of France, and Count Corti of Italy, in addition to representatives of Turkey and observers from the Balkans. It lasted one month and was easily the most distinguished diplomatic gathering between the Congress of Vienna of 1814–1815 and the Paris Peace Conference of 1919. In fact, the knowledge that the congress would even be held and that they would have to actually face each other greatly encouraged the antagonists to work toward negotiating at least some agreements in advance.

In accordance with diplomatic custom, the delegates elected Bismarck, as the head of the hosting government, to be its president. But he emerged as the leader in

more than name. Bismarck became the vital crisis manager, dominating the meetings, setting the pace and tone, rigorously insisting that the most serious issues of dispute be addressed first, skillfully combining both incentives and threats, working sometimes in formal sessions and sometimes in private, and constantly reminding all parties of the requirements for crisis management, particularly when great tension and strain threatened the collapse of the congress itself. His success as an impartial "honest broker" cannot be better illustrated than by the fact that all sides accused him of having favored their opponents. Indeed, in the end, all of the participants of the congress agreed that without Bismarck and his personal skills, the effort would have ended in failure.

The key, of course, resided in adhering as closely as possible to the operational principles of crisis management. Delegates at the Congress of Berlin, for example, worked to maintain civilian control over their respective military forces. Bismarck—who had far more experience than he ever wanted in constantly struggling to insist that the German General Staff be an instrument rather than a maker of foreign policy—hardly needed to be convinced of the critical importance of this requirement. No troops or naval forces were allowed to threaten others during the course of the diplomatic deliberations, military commanders (like General Ignatiev, who had done so much to precipitate the crisis in the first place) found themselves kept under strict control, and military experts were invited to participate only as consultants during certain stages of the congress. This enabled the managers to coordinate diplomatic and military moves and to use armed forces to signal resolve and limited crisis objectives rather than to create impressions of large-scale warfare. Neither the Russians nor the British were willing to withdraw their forces from existing positions, for example, but both deliberately refrained from sending them any closer to Constantinople or using them in any way that might encourage the other to escalate. All parties desired to avoid what they called an "untoward event" like a midshipman losing his temper or some other incident that could trigger unwanted war.

As we have seen, it is not uncommon in situations of crisis for the antagonists to employ a combined political-military strategy for coercive diplomacy, used simultaneously with crisis management, even though the requirements of each might actually conflict with each other. In this case, the evacuation of Russian troops from the boundaries of Bulgaria and the matter of who would replace them became a major point of contention. When it appeared that negotiations had failed, the British issued an ultimatum and threatened that they would abandon the congress entirely if a solution could not be found. Rather than concluding that the situation was beyond control or that there was nothing he could do, Bismarck remained determined not to have the conference collapse, and labored indefatigably to secure a last-minute Russian concession.

Bismarck also used other techniques of crisis management throughout the congress. He constantly built in pauses in order to give all sides adequate time to communicate with each other, assess the situation, make decisions, and respond to proposals. When progress began to stall over the highly contentious issues of Bulgaria or the lines of military occupation, to illustrate, he engineered the postponement of the discussion for several days. In addition, he and his fellow delegates selected diplomatic-military options that signaled a desire both to negotiate

(rather than seek a military solution) and to leave opponents a way out of the crisis that was compatible with their fundamental interests. They came to understand the necessity of mutual restraint, of recognizing each other's interests, of having limited objectives, and of sharing some sense of responsibility to prevent war on behalf of the system as a whole.

The final settlement of the Treaty of Berlin consequently was based on reciprocal compensation in which none of the powers received everything they desired, but all obtained something that they wanted. Britain gained Cyprus, France received Tunis, and Austria obtained Bosnia and Herzegovina. The Turks were relieved of the excessive terms imposed by San Stefano and perhaps of another war that might result in the total dismemberment of their country, religious minorities within the Ottoman Empire received a level of international recognition and sanction for the protection of certain human rights, and although Russia was forced to give up its original grandiose aims, it nevertheless secured control over a new Bulgaria, the mouth of the Danube River, and several strategic strongholds at the eastern end of the Black Sea. The Italians and Germans obtained no additional territory but were spared the agony and the costs of having to choose sides between the other powers and thereby further fracture the international system if armed conflict had broken out. In this way, the crisis was successfully managed and an inadvertent war that easily could have engulfed all of Europe was avoided.

THE "GUNS OF AUGUST," 1914

If the Congress of Berlin provides evidence of skillful leaders practicing successful management, the crisis of 1914 that led to the outbreak of the First World War reveals a tragic instance of inept mismanagement. Several years of imperial rivalries, economic competition, arms races and war plans that magnified the "security dilemma" of escalatory suspicions, and a bipolar alliance system of "two armed camps"—pitting the Triple Entente of Britain, France, and Russia against the Triple Alliance of Germany, Austria, and Italy—had contributed to a series of one-after-another crises. But each of these had been controlled, or at least localized, and many observers assumed that this practice would continue with nations going to the brink of war and then resolving the crisis by diplomacy at the last moment. What they did not realize, however, was that the cumulative effect of these heightened tensions created a context that vastly compounded their peril by making succeeding crises more difficult to control. Each time, their countries assumed more severe levels of risk, unwarranted by national interests or rational strategic objectives. Each time, the commanders of their armed forces became more autonomous of civilian control, creating inflexible war plans prioritizing military over political requirements and speed rather than reflection. Of particular importance was the fact that the leaders were more interested in not appearing weak than in keeping the peace and frankly possessed neither the understanding nor the skills necessary to conduct effective crisis management.

All of this began to be painfully evident in the decisions made and the events that transpired after the assassination of the Austrian Crown Prince Franz Ferdinand at the hands of Serbian-sponsored terrorists on June 28, 1914.

This assassination was not, as the popular metaphor would have it, a match thrown onto a powder keg that automatically, and in a deterministic way, resulted in war. In fact, one of the more curious features of the crisis is that it started out very slowly and evolved over the course of six weeks. The Austrians, for example, took nearly one month to decide how to respond, and many of the troops remained on harvest leave, gathering crops rather than preparing for war. Prior to taking any serious action, they sought to ascertain whether their ally Germany would support them or not. Rather than carefully assessing his nation's vital interests at stake in the Balkans, or urging a diplomatic rather than a military solution, or insisting on some measure of management, however, the German Kaiser Wilhelm II acted impetuously. He granted a foolhardy "blank check" to Austria on July 5, telling them that he would support whatever they decided to do. In doing so, wrote historian Sydney Fay, he and his advisors were "putting a noose around their necks and handing the other end of the rope to a stupid and clumsy adventurer who now felt free to go as he liked." Insensitive as ever to the international implications of his decisions, Wilhelm II then simply abandoned his responsibilities and left for a holiday cruise.

With this unqualified support in their hands, the Austrians drastically escalated events by issuing a forty-eight-hour ultimatum to the shocked Serbs with demands so deliberately harsh that they guaranteed rejection. British foreign secretary Edward Grey said that he had never seen one government send another government "a document of so formidable a character." When the Russian foreign minister Sergei Sazonov saw the text of the ultimatum, he was aghast and shouted to the Austrian ambassador: "This means European war. You are setting Europe alight!" The Serbians composed a reply that actually acceded to most of the Austrian demands. In fact, when Wilhelm II read it, he wrote happily, "Every reason for war now disappears!" But by this time the Austrians were not interested in compromise or limited objectives. They summarily rejected the Serbian response, dismissed a British proposal for a conference that might have helped to manage the crisis, and declared war on Serbia on July 28, 1914.

Rather than building in pauses in the tempo, or avoiding military moves that give an opponent the impression that one is about to escalate, or choosing diplomatic-military options that signal a desire to negotiate rather than seeking a military solution—as required by crisis management—in order to keep the war confined to the Austrians and the Serbs alone, Russia decided to support Serbia by ordering partial mobilization against Austria. At this point, Tsar Nicholas II was shocked to discover that the only plan his military staff had prepared called for full and simultaneous mobilization against both Germany and Austria and to hear his commanders insist that any restraint would only lead to disaster. To make matters worse, instead of carefully coordinating diplomatic and military moves, at the same time that their armed forces were moving west toward the German border, Russian diplomats were telling the Germans that they had nothing to fear. The Germans perceived that threatening actions spoke louder than soothing words. They responded with the extreme variant of an ultimatum demanding that if Russia did not stop its mobilization within twelve hours, they would follow suit. The Russians refused, and Germany declared war against Russia on August 1,

thereby expanding the crisis exponentially. All of these developments occurred, remarkably, without a single serious discussion between St. Petersburg and Berlin about the substance of the crisis or the need for diplomacy and in the absence of any major, tangible dispute between the two countries.

This pattern of mobilization with its resulting escalation was repeated by others, and each successive step made the crisis more difficult to manage. Within only days of the Austrian declaration of war against Serbia, every one of the major European powers called up its armed forces. Each claimed that its military mobilization constituted a defensive measure only, taken merely as a response to the dangers posed by others. They all feared that disastrous consequences would occur if a potential adversary gained even a momentary advantage in mobilizing its army and navy. This encouraged them to see the military incentives of moving as quickly as possible rather than the advantages of building in pauses for thoughtful deliberation and negotiation. They also hoped that their own mobilization might serve as a deterrent, warning others against taking similar action. But in a context of fear, misperception, and complete failure to consider how others might react to what they did, this only magnified "the security dilemma" and produced exactly the opposite reaction. Every mobilization in turn—especially since they were never accompanied by serious efforts of diplomatic negotiation—gave all the others the overwhelming impression that large-scale warfare might be imminent and that they should consider countermeasures and preemption in order not to be placed at a serious disadvantage.

Crisis management, of course, requires the firm determination to actually manage or maintain control over events. Thus, the most serious mistake that any leader can make is to believe that there is nothing he or she can do to prevent war or that management is not possible. In a crisis situation, therefore, anyone seeking to manage must avoid falling prey to that dreaded word, "inevitable." Yet, this is precisely what the leaders of 1914 failed to do. Time and time again, and even at early stages of the crisis, they concluded that they were helpless, passively resigning themselves to whatever fate awaited them. Paul Cambon, the French ambassador in London, for example, stated that he saw "no way of halting the march of events." Arthur Nicolson, the British Permanent Under Secretary for Foreign Affairs, agonized, "I am of the opinion that the resources of diplomacy are, for the present, exhausted." In a telling comment written in his own hand, Wilhelm II declared in despair, "My work is at an end!" Similarly, one of the leading generals in Russia advised the foreign ministry that "war had become inevitable."

As the inflexible Russian war plan severely limited the options for civilian crisis managers, so too did the German counterpart known as the von Schlieffen Plan, which called for a quick military attack, striking first against France and then against Russia. The French, seeing an opportunity for revenge for their loss of territory during the Franco-Prussian War, had no interest in urging restraint upon their ally and instead actually encouraged Russia to resist German demands and promised unconditional support in doing so. At this stage, the Kaiser suddenly began to fear a two-front war and tried to persuade the chief of his General Staff, General Helmuth von Moltke, to change the plan in such a way as to divert German attention away from France and toward the more immediate

threat of Russia. Barbara Tuchman captures the memorable scene in *The Guns of August* with these words:

> Moltke was in no mood for any more of the Kaiser's meddling with serious military matters . . . He saw a vision of the deployment crumbling apart in confusion, supplies here, soldiers there, ammunition lost in the middle, companies without officers, divisions without staffs, and those 11,000 trains, each exquisitely scheduled to click over specified tracks at specified intervals of ten minutes, tangled into grotesque ruin of the most perfectly planned military movement in history.
>
> "Your Majesty," Moltke said to him now, "it cannot be done. The deployment of millions cannot be improvised. If Your Majesty insists on leading the whole army to the East it will not be an army ready for battle but a disorganized mob of armed men with no arrangements for supply. Those arrangements took a whole year of intricate labor to complete"—and Moltke closed upon that rigid phrase, the basis for every major German mistake, the phrase that launched the invasion of Belgium and the submarine war against the United States, the inevitable phrase when military plans dictate policy—"and once settled, it cannot be altered."

In fact, it could have been altered and, in accordance with the operational principles of crisis management, should have been altered. These plans were made by men and could have been changed by men. But they had been inspired by what was called "the cult of the offensive"—the belief that striking first would lead to quick victory. This obviously reduced interest in caution, restraint, and any negotiation or management. At the same time, Kaiser Wilhelm II, like Tsar Nicholas II, was not wise enough to see this, or strong enough to exert civilian control over military options or the military machinery that he had done so much to create. Both meekly acquiesced to their generals who demanded that their all-or-nothing war plans must determine policy and (turning the dictum of Clausewitz on its head) insisted that priority should be given to military necessity over political consequences.

To make matters even worse, almost no effort was made to coordinate diplomatic and military actions or communications as part of a carefully integrated strategy. On the very day that the German chancellor Bethmann-Hollweg sent a telegram to the Austrian cabinet stressing the need to exercise restraint and accept mediation in the crisis with Serbia, for example, Moltke sent his own telegram to the Austrian chief of staff Conrad von Hötzendorf urging him to mobilize his army at once. These completely contradictory messages not only signaled confusion to leaders in Vienna but made them quite naturally ask whether civilians or military commanders were really in control in Berlin. Similarly, instead of confining military moves to those that were appropriate to limited crisis objectives or selecting diplomatic-military options that would leave opponents a way out of the crisis compatible with their fundamental interests, these leaders foolishly plunged their countries and the world ever closer toward full-scale war—and catastrophe. Germany, to illustrate, issued an ultimatum to France demanding neutrality in the event of war and sent another ultimatum to Belgium that demanded free passage for German troops. When both were rejected, Germany declared war on France and launched an invasion of neutral Belgium, revealing a complete disregard for international law, a preference for a military solution over any negotiations at all, and a determination to seek unlimited objectives. In response, Britain issued an ultimatum to Germany, demanding that all troops be withdrawn from Belgium within less than one day. The demand was summarily rejected and Britain declared war against Germany. With this, the great storm broke and they plunged into war.

The leaders of the time thus failed to adhere to any of the principles of crisis management and thereby allowed a secondary conflict to escalate completely out of control. As a result of their failure, a local dispute in the Balkans led to the invasion of Belgium and the dispatch of British troops on the other side of Europe with a war everywhere between and one that eventually drew in the United States, China, and Japan. Their monumental and fateful mismanagement resulted not only in the horrors of the First World War, but the destruction of several of their own governments and the entire international system they had known.

TERRORISM AND THE MUMBAI CRISIS, 2008

One of the most volatile and dangerous relationships in the world is that between India and Pakistan. Indeed, despite diplomatic efforts to improve their relations, it is not uncommon to hear people on either side of the border that separates them refer to the other as implacable "mortal enemies." Ever since they were first created with the partition of British India in 1947, these two countries have fought four major wars and confronted each other over frightening border incidents, military standoffs, and an unending state of war preparedness. They have battled over the disputed Himalayan region of Kashmir, engaged in struggles between Muslims and Hindus, and vehemently contested cross-border terrorism. India and Pakistan also have compounded their rivalry by conducting a fierce and unrelenting nuclear arms race. All of these factors of bitter tension and six decades of poisonous mistrust established the context for the serious crisis that broke out in 2008.

Late in the evening of November 26, 2008 (a date often described as "India's 9/11"), a team of ten well-trained terrorists attacked Mumbai, India's largest city and financial center. They came ashore on two small inflatable boats and set out on an audacious, ambitious, and precisely planned attack against multiple and predetermined soft targets. These included civilians minding their own business at a train station, two luxury hotels, a café frequented by foreigners, a Jewish cultural center, two hospitals, and a theater. Over the course of a three-day rampage, they wreaked havoc, leaving a trail of destruction and bloodshed. More than 170 people were killed and hundreds more wounded. For sixty hours, the terrorists brought a city of 20,000,000 to a standstill as the world watched in horror. This might have remained yet another case of domestic extremism except for one fact: Indian authorities quickly determined that these attackers had come from neighboring Pakistan.

The suicide gunmen who launched this terrorist attack were all members of Lashkar-e Taiba, a powerful and deadly Pakistani-based jihadist organization. Its followers embraced radical Islam, calling themselves the "Army of the Pure" and

seeing India as a part of what they described as the "Crusader, Zionist, Hindu" alliance. Attacks against Indians and the West served their ideology and their purpose. Observers believed that the organization maintained close ties to al-Qaeda and the Taliban. Authorities knew that, like other terrorist organizations, Lashkar-e Taiba received strong support from elements sympathetic to Islamic militants within the Pakistani Inter-Services Intelligence (ISI) (a point confirmed a few years later when Osama bin Laden was discovered, despite consistent official denials, to be living safely in Pakistan within walking distance of a military base). Moreover, it was known that this violent group had been trained, equipped, and used in the past by Pakistan as an instrument of state-sponsored terrorism in an ongoing proxy war against India, as revealed in the dramatic and brazen 2001 terrorist attack against the Indian Parliament itself.

Visceral outrage in the wake of the Mumbai carnage thus ran at a fever pitch. Tens of thousands of Indian citizens took to the streets, shouting, "Long Live Mother India!" Many wore T-shirts emblazoned with a bloodstain-like design and the words, "Turn Anger Into Action!" Others screamed over and over again: "Death to Pakistan! Death to Pakistan!" Public pressure mounted on Indian officials, and many of them joined in the popular hardline cries for revenge. Indian prime minister Manmohan Singh described Pakistan as "the epicenter of terrorism" and vowed to respond "with all the means at our disposal." The crisis escalated further when the government of Pakistan adamantly denied any involvement at all in the attack. India placed its armed forces on high alert, and Pakistan responded in kind. A security official in Islamabad declared that his country would react to any Indian military mobilization by moving "all troops" from its border with Afghanistan and redeploying them along the frontier with India. Watching all of this at close hand, U.S. ambassador to India David Mulford reported starkly: "There is war fever here. I don't know if the prime minister can hold out." At this stage, India's minister for external affairs Pranab Mukherjee made a personal and threatening telephone call to his counterpart. Pakistani foreign minister Shah Mehmood Qureshi. According to his own account, "I said they were leaving us no choice but to go to war."

It was at this precise point that the extreme dangers of unpredictable escalation—and thus the challenges for crisis management—emerged. The prospect of war between nuclear-armed India and Pakistan, caused by misjudgment or sabotage, presented a terrifying possibility for them, for the region, and for the world. All parties knew perfectly well that militant terrorists could start long and punishing wars between nations, as revealed in the response of the United States to the 9/11 attack. If this crisis exploded similarly into a war, especially if it caused the nuclear threshold to be breached, perhaps by an accidental or unauthorized launch, the consequences would be disastrous. The reality of this began to dawn on the leaders of both sides, especially those in Islamabad who warned against "the blame game and knee-jerk reactions" as they listened to their F-16s flying overhead to counter a possible attack from India and watched the crisis start to careen out of the control of their own already fragile and inexperienced government. One security official announced publicly, "We are expecting war." In growing fear, the prime minister, president, and foreign minister suddenly began contacting their counterparts in other countries, appealing for outside help to assist in managing the crisis.

Among the outsiders, the United States had much at stake in this crisis. It not only wanted to prevent war, but needed Pakistan as a critical ally in its battles against terrorism, especially against al-Qaeda and the Taliban. At the same time the United States needed India to serve as what it described as a major "strategic partner" on a number of fronts. Its leaders knew full well that crisis management would not just happen on its own and would require very specific and deliberate efforts.

Toward this end—and recognizing the relationship between force and statecraft—the United States sent its highest-ranking diplomat, Secretary of State Condoleezza Rice, and its highest-ranking military officer, Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff Admiral Mike Mullen, halfway around the world. They went first to New Delhi and then to Islamabad. The purpose was to use face-to-face meetings to persuade the leaders of both countries to back away from the brink and to ramp down their confrontation in order to avoid war. To do this, they began by offering sympathy for the victims of the Mumbai attacks and then assistance to do whatever they could to help defuse the situation. They urged both sides to adhere to the principles of crisis management by exercising patience and self-restraint, avoiding actions that would trigger unwanted escalation, developing civilian-military strategies appropriate to the situation at hand, and limiting the objectives and the means employed. They also used coercive diplomacy to exert pressure, warning India not to mobilize its forces or to retaliate with an armed attack that surely would lead to war, and simultaneously demanding that Pakistan take serious action against extremists in its own country. When Pakistani prime minister Yusuf Raza Gillani told Rice that the terrorists who attacked Mumbai "had nothing to do with Pakistan," she bluntly responded: "Either you are lying to me or your people are lying to you."

Rice importantly told both sides that U.S. intelligence agencies believed that the terrorist attack on Mumbai had originated from within Pakistan—but not from the Pakistani government. Evidence from highly sophisticated technological means indicated that the attackers had received assistance from rogue elements within the notoriously unreliable security services as well as from the nonstate organization of Lashkar-e Taiba. In other words, the attack had not been state sponsored and the gunmen had not been acting as agents of the government. This confirmed what the leaders in Islamabad had been saying from the beginning. Indeed, they argued that they, too, suffered as victims at the hands of the militant extremists within Pakistan. Pakistani president Asif Ali Zardari pointed out with personal poignancy that his own wife and former prime minister, Benazir Bhutto, had been assassinated only the previous year as a result of a terrorist bomb attack.

Other outside actors became involved as well. The offers of assistance as well as the warnings from the Americans gained increased credibility and potency when they were reinforced by a visit to both India and Pakistan by British prime minister Gordon Brown. In addition, the United Nations Security Council intervened by urging all parties to do whatever they could to avoid war and announcing its willingness to impose sanctions on the leaders of Lashkar-e Taiba and its charitable organization that served as a financial front. In doing so, its members (including China, a long-time ally of Pakistan) sought to limit the ability of known terrorists to raise funds, acquire weapons, and plan or carry out attacks, while at the same

time giving India a way out of the crisis that was compatible with its fundamental interests. Such direct intervention by outsiders certainly assisted in managing the crisis, but in the end it depended on the leaders in India and Pakistan themselves.

In this regard, the decisions to be made in New Delhi were not easy. There would be very heavy costs to be paid if India went to war. Even a limited use of armed force could quickly escalate out of control and strengthen the hands of the anti-Indian extremists. At the same time, there would be grave costs to *not* taking some form of military action. If nothing were done, not only would emotional bloodlust for revenge erupt at home, but Pakistan would know that terrorist attacks launched from its own soil against India could continue with little repercussion.

A different, but extremely serious, problem also existed for Pakistan. One of the central requirements for any crisis manager is that of maintaining top-level civilian control of military institutions and actions. Only in this way can armed force be used as an instrument of policy and can diplomatic-military strategies of force and statecraft be developed and effectively coordinated. Yet, in Islamabad, Zardari—a civilian—headed a country going through a fragile transition to democracy after more than eight years of military rule under a four-star general who possessed the backing of the armed forces. Having been in office less than three months, he was completely untested and now faced the extremely difficult task of avoiding war with India while at the same time keeping Pakistan's powerful military and intelligence services in check. If he cracked down on the jihadists (especially if it was perceived as a result of external pressure from India, the United States, and certain other countries), he risked a serious backlash among those in these services and in the country who already intensely opposed his cooperation with the U.S.-led "global war on terror" and its attacks against Taliban forces and their own people in western Pakistan and Afghanistan. He hung on a precipice. Inflammable instability and violence could explode in an instant. Indeed, the magnitude of difficulty and danger prompted the news magazine *Der Spiegel* to run a headline reading: "Pakistan's President Zardari Attempts the Impossible." It ominously concluded that his efforts were "doomed."

Believing that the costs of failure would be overwhelmingly unacceptable, however, Zardari and other decision makers in both Pakistan and India resisted being pulled into this trap of throwing up their hands in despair and falling prey to notions of impossibility and "inevitability." Instead, they desperately worked to manage the crisis. Despite their seemly unreconcilable differences and intense rivalry, they realized that they now needed each other to work together as partners. Both sides came to realize that the crisis itself was the most dangerous adversary and needed to be resolved before it careened completely out of control. They thus tried to slow down the tempo and avoid moves and counter-moves that might convey a desire to seek a military solution. Indian leaders, for example, chose not to mobilize their armed forces, not to amass them on the border, not to send out its warships, and not to fire artillery into Pakistan—at least for the moment. They wanted to give Pakistan time for an opportunity to respond. In addition—and very importantly—they decided to focus their attention on the immediate and limited issue of the terrorists involved with the Mumbai attack itself, rather than using it as an excuse to take action on the much larger and more volatile problem of Kashmir. For his part, Zardari appealed for everyone "to pause and take a breath." He also

reiterated that he had proposed a nuclear "no first strike" pact with India several days before the carnage in Mumbai, and stood ready to bring it to fruition during this trying time of crisis.

After several agonizing days of trying to balance between domestic and international pressures, Zardari announced that his government would catch and punish anyone involved in the Mumbai attack. He therefore launched a number of highly public arrests of known terrorist leaders. When Indian air force fighter jets violated Pakistani airspace by briefly crossing the border, he deliberately—and significantly—chose to describe the event as only a "technical incursion" and "mistake" rather than an act of war. A government spokesperson in Islamabad reiterated, "We have confirmed it. We contacted the Indian air force and they said the violation was inadvertent." They concluded, in revealing words, "We don't want to escalate the situation." Leaders in New Delhi responded accordingly. Shortly thereafter, India's minister of defense, A. K. Antony, explicitly stated what many wanted to hear: that although relations between the two countries would never be normal until Islamabad took serious action against terrorists within its borders, his country was "not planning any military action" against Pakistan. With this, the immediate Mumbai crisis had been managed.

This successful case went on to encourage several studies evaluating lessons to be learned. It also provided a concrete example of how to practice management when a subsequent crisis between the same rivals broke out. In 2019, a Pakistan-based terrorist group launched an attack in the contentious flashpoint region of Kashmir, killing forty Indian security forces. India responded by sending fighter jets into Pakistani airspace for the first time in nearly a half-century to counter-attack. Pakistan shot down one of the planes and paraded the captured pilot. Both sides then sent several thousand troops to face each other, engaging in artillery barrages across their mutual border. Impassioned crowds gathered in the streets, shouting for blood lust and revenge. The prospect of escalation and war between two nuclear-armed powers stood again at the brink. At this dangerous stage—and with the lessons of the earlier Mumbai crisis in mind—Pakistan's prime minister, Imran Khan, declared that "history tells us that wars are full of miscalculation," announcing his determination to follow the lessons learned by taking deliberate action that would manage the crisis, and asking his counterpart in India to do the same. Despite all the pressures against them, they did so.

ANALYSIS

By exploring these three cases in light of the principles discussed at the beginning of this chapter, we now can understand the nature of crisis management more clearly, see why some efforts succeed and others fail, consider what lessons might be drawn, and have a greater appreciation for the impact of historical context or, more specifically, the way in which the diplomatic revolution has affected crisis management in our own time.

There can be little doubt, for example, that an appropriate political-military strategy for crisis management cannot possibly succeed unless there is skilled, top-level civilian control over military institutions and actions. In this regard, modern policymakers enjoy many technological advantages over their predecessors.

Improvements in communications and transportation allow leaders to exert much more personal control over military forces than ever before. One has only to compare the relative inaccessibility of the Balkans from major capitals at the time of Bismarck with the ability of Rice and Mullen in 2008 to fly to the crisis area in a matter of hours, or the capabilities of the present-day U.S. Department of State's Crisis Management Support team and the Department of Defense's National Military Command Center, which enable policymakers to be in instant contact with their military forces, even though they may be on the other side of the globe.

Having observed the need for civilian control, however, it is also important to acknowledge that the mere existence of civilian leaders is no guarantee that the requisite skills will be present or that successful management will result. The 1914 case certainly confirms this. At the beginning of both the American war in Vietnam and then again in the 2003 invasion of Iraq, strong-willed and hawkish civilians, who thought they knew best, deliberately rejected the more prudent—and accurate—advice provided by professional military commanders.

With regard to the need to slow down the tempo of military actions, crisis managers in the contemporary world are likely to encounter greater difficulties than did statesmen in previous centuries. With events driven at an ever-faster pace by sophisticated developments in communication, transportation, and weapons technology, political leaders are under great pressure to make critical decisions in shorter and shorter periods of time. The crisis surrounding the Congress of Berlin, for example, dragged on for months. The crisis leading up to the outbreak of the First World War was of several weeks in duration and leaders frequently expressed their fears that "time was running out." The critical period in the 2008 Mumbai crisis lasted only about two weeks, and those leaders forced to make decisions understood that if missiles were launched, a single hour of delay could make all the difference in the world. It is extraordinarily difficult to create pauses when the momentum of events is so pressing and when there are those who argue that a military strike is "better now than later."

Moreover, the increasing impact of public opinion and pressure groups on decision making has complicated the management task of slowing down or "freezing" a crisis. Those who met at the Congress of Berlin experienced the impact of some domestic politics and the press on their deliberations, but it was minimal. This is why Disraeli could boast about the delegates issuing a few statements for public consumption, and then going behind closed doors and doing what needed to be done. By 1914, public opinion could easily be whipped up by super-heated nationalists and a sensational press, and this greatly influenced European capitals in the last days before war broke out. In attempting to manage the Mumbai crisis, leaders in India and Pakistan had to contend with public opinion heated to a fever pitch, often feeding on itself through Internet social networking tools such as Twitter and Flickr. In addition, the leaders faced political rivals and extremists seeking to use the crisis for their own agendas who stridently pushed popular hawkish and chauvinistic emotions that portrayed any moderation or compromise as weak and cowardly.

The requirement for coordinating diplomatic and military moves in a crisis also encounters both advantages and disadvantages under the impact of the diplomatic revolution. Successful coordination requires accurate and timely information and

effective communication. In this regard, today's sophisticated technology for collecting and analyzing intelligence, such as satellite detection and electronic intercepts from space and computer-generated imaging and analyses of vast amounts of information, can give contemporary policymakers many advantages in command and control that were completely unknown to their predecessors during times of crises. In the Mumbai crisis, the United States possessed specialized forensic technology that could trace calls and detect the global position and satellite phone systems used by the attackers. But, by the same token, the terrorists themselves had used Global Positioning System (GPS) handsets and high-resolution maps from Google Earth to plan their routes and targets, as well as Voice over Internet Protocol (VoIP) phone service, Blackberries, and Skype to communicate with their Lashkar-e Taiba handlers in Pakistan.

Given the potential scale and level of destructiveness made possible by technology in contemporary warfare, the decisions that shape the capabilities and doctrines of modern military forces do not always take into sufficient account the task of using these same forces as instruments of management during crises. This is the problem created when armed forces are viewed only in terms of "gross military capabilities" to fight large-scale warfare, thereby severely restricting the ability of leaders to find "usable options" and to fine-tune and coordinate military and diplomatic moves. In the case of the First World War, for example, the opposing sides possessed mass armies, weapons produced by an unprecedented arms race, and inflexible war plans that contained no options other than full-scale military combat. Thus, the attempts of Germany and Russia at coercive diplomacy became de facto declarations of war once they ordered mobilization. In the Mumbai crisis, both India and Pakistan came to realize that, although they each possessed enormous military capabilities, none of these could be used as a carefully calibrated instrument to convey limited objectives or means. When confronted with the possibility of a nuclear threat, the only choices appeared to be doing almost nothing or risking total destruction. This challenge will repeatedly confront modern policymakers who struggle with force and statecraft.

Paradoxically, the very destructiveness of modern weaponry, with its capacity to annihilate not only military forces but civilization as well, has strengthened strategic deterrence and the incentives to choose diplomatic-military options that will signal a desire to negotiate rather than to seek military solutions. Here, fear plays a critical role. In today's world of weapons of mass destruction, leaders are acutely aware of the horrors of modern war. For this reason, most rational policymakers are much more eager to explore avenues of compromise rather than employ force and are less likely to indulge in belligerent nationalism or fatalistically believe in the "inevitability" of war, as so many did in 1914. This explains why India and Pakistan invested so much effort to carefully signal each other during the 2008 crisis, for neither one wanted to place the other in a position similar to that of the German Kaiser and thus risk a nuclear exchange that might follow. Nevertheless, any international system—including our own—must struggle with the problem of how to deal with those who do not share this fear and who are willing to recklessly resort to armed force to accomplish their goals.

Further complications arise for crisis management with the substantial increase in the number of individuals and departments that impact a modern

government's foreign policy, as well as the existence of new and powerful nonstate actors. Bismarck's role as a successful "honest broker" was made considerably easier by the fact that he only had to deal with like-minded official representatives of the five Great Powers. It was not nearly as simple in 1914 when, for example, no one knew who spoke for Germany or which branch of government pursued which policy. The contrast becomes even greater when one compares the 2008 crisis in which Singh and Zardari shared few common values, had to contend with their own strong-willed bureaucracies and constituencies, and in the case of Pakistan actually faced dangerous rogue elements within its own military and intelligence services as well as nonstate terrorist organizations subject to no direction other than their own fanaticism.

The emergence of such extremism points to the increase in the ideological nature of many international disputes and crises. This has made it more difficult to exercise self-restraint, carefully establish limited objectives and means, select diplomatic-military options that leave a way out of the crisis, and avoid military moves that give the opponent the impression that large-scale warfare is about to be initiated. The key factor here is "impression," for as recent studies of human crisis behavior reveal, actions are not always perceived as they are actually intended, and this can lead to seriously mistaken images with unintended consequences. This places a particular premium on the ability *to see the situation from the perspective of the adversary* and *to consider how its leaders might view and react to one's own behavior.*

Misperceptions can be a source of serious miscalculations, and these can lead to major errors in policy, missed opportunities, and avoidable catastrophes. The crisis of 1878 centered around classic power politics among participants who shared many common values and a sense of responsibility, and thus could be managed relatively quickly as long as the major actors received reciprocal compensation. By 1914, however, intense nationalism and imperialism had combined forces to add a more complicated dimension to the international situation, contributing heavily to mismanagement. At the time of the Mumbai crisis in 2008, volatile ideology and suicidal extremism created the crisis in the first place. This trend appears likely to continue. Consequently, separating an opponent's fundamental interests from the rhetoric—whether it rings with slogans about "the Axis of Evil," "the Great Satan," "holy war," "crusade," "infidels," "jihad," or even "foreigners"—is one of the truly difficult challenges for those seeking to practice crisis management today.

Beyond the theoretical and operational principles demonstrated by the three specific cases treated above, our analysis of these and many other historical and contemporary cases of crisis management and mismanagement also indicates that not all crises lend themselves equally to manageability. In fact, some crises are peculiarly resistant to management because of the structure and dynamics of the international system, balance-of-power or alliance considerations, domestic pressures on the parties to the dispute, and the unpredictable behavior and decisions of others, or because the interests or ideologies of the two sides are so fundamentally antagonistic that they cannot be sufficiently reconciled. The parties may see few opportunities for constructive engagement or few incentives to avoid war. One side or the other side may reach the conclusion during the crisis that no other alternatives exist to secure its objectives or to avoid an unacceptable outcome, or because

one or the other side decides to embrace more ambitious objectives than it entertained at the outset of the crisis and is willing to accept the risk of war by resorting to armed force for this purpose.

One lesson of history remains clear from all cases: crisis management does not passively happen on its own, but depends on the skill and the capabilities of individual people. Indeed, the entire concept of management itself is significant only as it is interpreted and implemented by men and women within their own particular context of time and place. Incentives and opportunities will not suffice to avoid war if individual leaders lack the intelligence to understand the nature of crisis management and diplomacy or the ability to function under great stress, to exercise self-restraint, to adhere to the operational principles of crisis management and apply them, to see the situation from the perspective of others, or to have some ethical sense of responsibility for the larger international system as a whole. This applies to policymakers on all sides during a crisis, for management requires partnership in the midst of intense rivalry, in which the behavior of one dramatically influences the other in a dynamic interaction. As political scientist Phil Williams observes, success requires "the traditional qualities of statesmanship—wisdom, diplomatic skills, and incisive judgment—[which] can prove decisive, either through their presence or through their absence." When, in the words of Winston Churchill, "the balance quivers," the stakes are high, and leaders stand poised at critical paths diverging before them, the lack of ability, the failure to reflect or empathize, poor judgment, or even one moment of carelessness on the part of a single individual, can easily transform a crisis into an inadvertent war.

SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER EXPLORATION

For a detailed analysis of the principles of crisis management, see Alexander L. George (ed.), *Avoiding War: Problems of Crisis Management* (Boulder, CO, 1991). Other important analyses also can be found in Michael Brecher, *A Century of Crisis and Conflict in the International System* (New York, 2018); Arjen Boin et al., *The Politics of Crisis Management* (Cambridge, UK, 2017 ed.); Uzi Rabi (ed.), *International Intervention in Local Conflicts: Conflict Management and Conflict Resolution Since the Cold War* (London, 2010); Chester Crocker et al. (eds.), *Leashing the Dogs of War* (Washington, D.C., 2007); James Richardson, *Crisis Diplomacy* (Cambridge, UK, 1994); Joseph Bouchard, *Command in Crisis* (New York, 1991); Sean Lynn-Jones et al. (eds.), *Nuclear Diplomacy and Crisis Management* (Cambridge, MA, 1990); Gilbert R. Winham (ed.), *New Issues in International Crisis Management* (Boulder, CO, 1988); Richard Ned Lebow, *Nuclear Crisis Management* (Ithaca, NY, 1987); Scott D. Sagan, "Nuclear Alerts and Crisis Management," *International Security*, 4 (Spring 1985): 99–139; Richard Smoke and William Ury, *Beyond the Hotline* (Cambridge, MA, 1984); Alexander L. George, "Crisis Management: The Interaction of Political and Military Considerations," *Survival*, 26 (September–October 1984): 323–334; Arthur N. Gilbert and Paul Gordon Lauren, "Crisis Management: An Assessment and Critique," *Journal of Conflict Resolution*, 24 (December 1980): 641–664; Paul Gordon Lauren, "Crisis Management: History and Theory," *International History Review*, 1 (October 1979): 542–556; Richard Smoke, *War: Controlling Escalation* (Cambridge, MA, 1977);

Phil Williams, *Crisis Management* (New York, 1976); Ole Holsti, *Crisis, Escalation, War* (London, 1972); and Coral Bell, *The Conventions of Crisis: A Study in Diplomatic Management* (London, 1971).

Discussion of the Congress of Berlin in 1878 can be found in Norman Rich, *Great Power Diplomacy, 1814–1914* (New York, 1992); Great Britain, *British Documents on Foreign Affairs, The Near and Middle East*, Vol. 3, *The Ottoman Empire: Diplomacy of the Powers, 1876*-1878 (Frederick, MD, 1984); Paul Gordon Lauren, "Crisis Prevention in Nineteenth-Century Diplomacy," in Alexander L. George (ed.), *Managing U.S.-Soviet Rivalry* (Boulder, CO, 1983); Edward Crankshaw, *Bismarck* (New York, 1981); Immanuel Geiss, *Der Berliner Kongreß 1878* (Boppard am Rhein, 1978); William L. Langer, *European Alliances and Alignments, 1871–1890* (New York, 1964 ed.); W. N. Medlicott, *The Congress of Berlin and After* (London, 1963 ed.); B. H. Sumner, *Russia and the Balkans, 1870–1880* (Hamden, CT, 1962 ed.).

Probably no crisis has been studied more extensively than that of 1914. Stimulating further reading can be found in David Stevenson, *Cataclysm* (New York, 2005); Richard Ned Lebow, "Contingency, Catalysts, and International System Change," *Political Science Quarterly*, 115 (Winter, 2000–2001): 591–616; James Joll, *The Origins of the First World War* (London, 1992 ed.); Jack Levy, "The Role of Crisis Management in the Outbreak of World War I," in Alexander L. George (ed.), *Avoiding War* (Boulder, CO, 1991); Ole Holsti, "Theories of Crisis Decision Making," and Samuel R. Williamson, Jr., "Theories of Organizational Process and Foreign Policy Outcomes," both in Paul Gordon Lauren (ed.), *Diplomacy: New Approaches in History, Theory, and Policy* (New York, 1979); Paul Kennedy (ed.), *The War Plans of the Great Powers* (Boston, 1979); Barbara Tuchman, *The Guns of August* (New York, 1962); Sydney Fay, *The Origins of the World War* (New York, 1930 ed.); and "London Times Sees War Inevitable," *New York Times*, August 3, 1914.

For the Mumbai crisis, see Polly Nayak and Michael Krepon, "The Unfinished Crisis," Stimson Center Report (Washington, D.C., 2012); Condoleezza Rice, *No Higher Honor* (New York, 2011); B. Raman, *Mumbai 26/11* (New Delhi, 2009); Angel Rabasa et al., "The Lessons of Mumbai," RAND Occasional Paper (Santa Monica, CA, 2009); K. Alan Kronstadt, "Terrorist Attacks in Mumbai, India, and Implications for U.S. Interests," Congressional Research Service Report (Washington, D.C., 2008); and "Pakistan's President Zardari Attempts the Impossible," *Der Spiegel*, December 17, 2008. The drama of the crisis is conveyed in the 2018 film "Hotel Mumbai."

Many fascinating historical cases exist for further exploration of crisis management and mismanagement. These include, among others, the crises of Spain (1822–1823), Belgium (1830), the Near East (1852–1854), Fashoda (1898), Bosnia (1908–1909), Agadir (1911), Ethiopia-Italy (1935–1936), Rhineland (1936), Munich (1938), Iran (1946), Berlin (1948–1949 and 1958), Korea (1950), Suez (1956), Quemoy and Matsu (1958), Congo (1960), the Cuban Missile Crisis (1962), the Middle East (1967), Sino-Soviet border crisis (1969), management during the Arab-Israeli War (1973), the American hostage crisis in Iran (1979–1980), Able Archer (1983), Persian Gulf Crisis (1990–1991), Kosovo (1998–1999), and India–Pakistan (2001–2002, 2019). See also the International Crisis Behavior Project at www.icb.umd.edu/dataviewer.

PART III

Restraints and Reflections

CHAPTER 12

Ethics and Other Restraints on Force and Statecraft

For centuries of time and in a world where competition and violence seemed to be always present, thoughtful and frightened men and women have wrestled with the extremely difficult challenge of how to restrain their worst excesses. They have understood that at times their very survival depended on their ability to control their rivalries and passions and to limit or contain the brutal destruction and loss of human life caused by the use of armed force. It is for this reason that the search to find some kind of restraints often has preoccupied the thoughts of those as divergent as political leaders, diplomats, generals, admirals, strategic theorists, philosophers, theologians, international lawyers, investors, scholars, students, human rights activists, and pacifists, among many others vitally concerned about force and statecraft.

PRACTICAL, STRUCTURAL, AND POLITICAL RESTRAINTS

Diplomacy, it has been said, is "the art of the possible"—not the art of the perfect. This insightful description comes from lessons learned from long and sometimes painful historical experience. It serves to remind us that those responsible for statecraft rarely, if ever, can do exactly what they would like to do. Instead, when facing challenges they must settle for the least harmful of a number of unpleasant alternatives. They do not operate in a vacuum, but instead are confronted with real and serious constraints, or restraints, that limit their freedom of choice and action. This applies to all—even the most powerful, who may be potent but never omnipotent.

Very practical restraints, for example, are presented by physical size, geographical location and terrain, limited information or time to make decisions, arable land and potable water, crops, the condition of the roads, climate, and even the weather. In addition, every state has a finite resource base. Each possesses only a certain amount of territory and strategic assets for its bases or port facilities, only so much population to provide soldiers for its armies or sailors for its navies, and only so many weapons for its arsenals. The amount of funding for military

expenditures (even for those who engage in deficit spending) is ultimately limited by its natural resources, economic strength, industrial capacity, and market forces. Each faces limitations resulting from its political system, the abilities of its leaders, the level of education of its inhabitants, its transportation and communications networks, and the cohesiveness and morale of its people. Some states—like the Great Powers during the classical system of diplomacy or the United States, China, and Russia today—obviously possess more resources than others, but none has an unlimited supply on which it can draw without end.

Restraints also are imposed by the power, capabilities, will, perceptions, cultures, and interests of other states, each fiercely cherishing its independence as well as claiming and jealously guarding its own prerogatives of national sovereignty. The extent to which one country can pursue its objectives, especially when security issues are involved, is based in large part on the relative strength and countermeasures of other countries at any given time. What one state does impinges on others. As Field Marshal Erich von Manstein poignantly observed after Germany's crushing defeat in the Second World War, Hitler was always so confident that the force of his will would be able to overcome any possible obstacles to his own desires that he ignored an awkward, but critical, truth: that enemies possess wills too.

The power and capabilities of others thus place severe restrictions on any state's freedom of action by creating a fear of unacceptable consequences, thereby making it refrain from doing something that it wants to do or making it do something that it otherwise would not choose to do. Indeed, this is precisely the feature that undergirds the strategies of both deterrence and coercive diplomacy, as we saw in Chapters 9 and 10. The traditional balance of power with its approximate equilibrium helped to keep the peace in part because it induced restraint among would-be hegemonic leaders by making them fear that aggression on their part would result in unacceptable costs from a coalition of countervailing forces against them. In addition, there is always the matter of reciprocity, in which taking action against others is to invite them to respond in kind by doing it to you. This is the very origin of "the security dilemma." It therefore is in any state's prudent self-interest to avoid making excessive claims, to recognize that its own desires can never be fully satisfied, to make some level of accommodation with others, and thereby to accept the fact of certain restraints.

Limitations likewise exist as a result of the creation of structures, institutions, or systems based on historical experience and designed specifically to regulate relations among states. During the classical system of diplomacy, as we explored in Chapter 2, the balance of power between the five Great Powers operating as the Concert of Europe placed significant restraints on what even the most powerful states could—and could not—do. Its purpose, in the words of nineteenth-century statesman William Gladstone, was "to neutralize and fetter the selfish aims of each." Those leaders who founded the United Nations, as seen in Chapter 4, sought to create an international organization with a system of collective security that would impose limits on how states behaved toward each other and thereby restrain the use of armed force in the world. In establishing the Organization for Cooperation and Security in Europe, the Arab League, and the African Union, among many other intergovernmental organizations (IGOs), member states all have agreed to provide limits on their behavior. Systems of international law,

treaties, conventions, and agreements do the same. Governments deliberately and willingly create these rules, regulations, mechanisms, and mutual obligations that place restraints on themselves and others because they believe that they can obtain greater benefits from the existence of some measure of order, predictability, and checks on what otherwise would be uncertainty, unilateral action, and unrestrained ambition.

There are other restraints that are not so deliberate or planned. As we saw in Chapter 6 on the evolving international system, there are contemporary actors that are not states at all. In fact, they actually challenge nation-states. These include transnational corporations (TNCs) of business, nongovernmental organizations (NGOs) and other activist groups within civil society, international crime syndicates, and terrorist networks. Each has its own interests and agendas, and each possesses its own form of power to restrain others.

The sheer complexity of international relations itself also imposes serious restraints. At any given point in time, myriad issues and problems compete for attention and resources, and some of these may be inextricably intertwined in complicated ways. Global interdependence, for example, links what happens in one part of the world with other parts, and a conflict in one country may have dangerous consequences for a crisis elsewhere. This explains why the expressions "complex interdependence" and "indivisibility of security" have become so prominent. Violations of human rights in one country may have profound implications for peace and security in neighboring governments, as so clearly revealed by the recent civil war in Syria with its resulting flood of refugees that, in turn, created a drastic migration crisis unleashing severe political disruption throughout Europe and within the European Union. Or, a major commitment of armed forces in one region may limit the ability to deploy them quickly to another area should the need arise.

In all of this, it is essential to remember that capabilities are measured in people as well as things. States, as observed in Chapter 7, do not make and implement decisions in international relations—people do. This is why François de Callières and others who followed spent so much effort stressing the importance of developing professional competence and good judgment by studying history, understanding both the power and the limitations of the instruments at their disposal, and appreciating the restraints affecting force and statecraft. Negotiation, deterrence, coercive diplomacy, and crisis management, as seen in Part II, cannot possibly succeed unless leaders possess the requisite wisdom and ability to make them work.

Practical restraints also are presented by the unknown and the unpredictable. Those men and women who confront the challenges of force and statecraft never fully know all that they need to know. They operate in partial darkness because of the complexities of the world, the uncertainties and sometimes the irrationality of human behavior, contingency, ignorance, the capacity for wishful thinking and self-delusion, perceptions and images that may or may not be consistent with facts, deliberate deception, and the incomplete and often ambiguous nature of intelligence information and analysis. There can be unforeseen and unintended consequences, and sometimes things go wrong even in the best of plans. These are the factors insightfully described by Machiavelli as the "blind chance" of life,

by Bismarck as the "imponderabilia" of diplomacy, and by Clausewitz as the "fog" and "friction" of war.

Domestic structures also create restraints on making and implementing decisions. All large, modern states possesses complex bureaucracies organized to conduct widely diverse tasks and composed of thousands of civil servants. These many individuals rarely, if ever, act in a monolithic way or speak with a unitary voice. Indeed, where they stand on a given issue often depends on where they sit. The vested interests, personalities, perspectives, priorities, cultures, and parochialism of their particular departments, offices, branches of the armed forces, or specific missions heavily influence how they view the world, how they define "the national interest," what positions they take, what policy options they generate, and how they protect themselves in what is described as the infighting of "turf battles" or "bureaucratic politics."

Especially when dealing with the challenging issues of force and statecraft, for example, it is not at all uncommon to see intense disputes and severe competition between "hawks" and "doves" or between military establishments and foreign ministries, and thereby to appreciate, as discussed in Chapter 11, why successful crisis management requires the ability to keep them under control. Bismarck and his successors constantly found themselves caught in fierce contests between civilians in the German Foreign Office and military commanders in the General Staff insisting that they should be a "state within the state." The impassioned, acrimonious, and highly public fights between Secretary of State Colin Powell and Secretary of Defense Donald Rumsfeld similarly manifested themselves over the inspection of suspected weapons of mass destruction purportedly held by Saddam Hussein, whether or not to seek United Nations authorization for military action, the American invasion of Iraq in 2003, and the use of torture. Indeed, one official describes the battles in these words: "State and Defense were at war—don't let anyone tell you different. Within policy circles, it was knee-jerk venom, on both sides."

Such structural and political divisions occur particularly in democratic countries characterized by free elections, the rule of law, constitutions, and checks and balances. The founders of the United States, for example, believed that lessons of history had taught them to be extremely wary of leaders who insisted on keeping the major decision of war and peace entirely in their own hands. They wanted to make war difficult. As George Mason argued at the time, presidents could not be "safely trusted" with the sole power to declare wars, stating that he therefore favored "clogging rather than facilitating war."

For this reason, he and other founders deliberately created a structure of divided government, designed to provide restraints on the use of force. The U.S. Constitution thus entrusts the president with the principal authority and responsibility to conduct the nation's foreign affairs and to serve as commander-in-chief of the armed forces. But, at the same time, it gives to the Senate the power to confirm the appointment of ambassadors and to give advice and consent prior to any international treaty being ratified. In order to keep those under military arms from becoming "the king's men," or the personal tool of the president alone, the Constitution gives to Congress the sole power to appropriate funds for foreign affairs, to raise and support armies, to provide and maintain a navy, to call forth the militia, and to declare war. One scholar simply but insightfully describes this arrangement as "an invitation to struggle."

Other nations struggle with constitutional provisions regarding force and statecraft as well. Germany's Basic Law places serious limits on the chancellor's ability to deploy troops or project armed force on foreign soil. The famous Article 9 of the Japanese Constitution provides even greater restrictions by explicitly stating: "Aspiring to an international peace based on justice and order, the Japanese people forever renounce war as a sovereign right of the nation and the threat or the use of force as a means of settling international disputes." It thus declares that "land, sea, and air forces, as well as other war potential, will never be maintained." Not surprisingly, in the face of changing circumstances and different leaders, these provisions crafted after the Second World War currently are sharply debated and contested.

The extent to which such constitutional provisions actually restrain, of course, is a matter of political will. In fact, James Baker, a former U.S. secretary of state, writes in *The Politics of Diplomacy* that statecraft cannot help but be the continuation of politics and that political restraints inevitably shape the outcome of any policy. Most national leaders, it is important to remember, are themselves politicians who are members of a ruling party normally absorbed with domestic politics. They thus perceive the opportunities and the challenges of international relations through political eyes. In this arena, bitter rivals, opposition parties with partisan agendas, contentious pressure groups, different divisions of government, the media, and determined constituencies at home all can impose powerful limits on policymakers abroad.

Even ideological beliefs can present restraints. Although ideology can instill purpose and mobilize energies, if it is rigidly conceived it can restrict thoughtful discourse, warp rational judgments about actual interests, dismiss other ways of viewing the world, see demons or ascribe motives that do not exist, accentuate fears, and foreclose valuable opportunities, thereby holding leaders hostage. During their arms control negotiations in Reykjavik that could have resulted in monumental changes in eliminating strategic weapons, to illustrate, both Ronald Reagan and Mikhail Gorbachev came to realize that pressure from their respective hardliners at home was strong enough to kill any agreement they might reach.

Domestic politics also impact force and statecraft in other ways. Facing unilateral presidential decisions to commit troops to Korea and Vietnam and to attack Cambodia in the clear absence of any serious consultation or declarations of war, for example, the U.S. Congress determined to pass, over the veto of Richard Nixon, the War Powers Act of 1973. The stated purpose of this legislation, in the words of its authors, was

> to fulfill the intent of the framers of the Constitution . . . and insure that the collective judgment of both the Congress and the President will apply to the introduction of United States Armed Forces into hostilities, or into situations where imminent involvement in hostilities is clearly indicated by the circumstances, and to the continued use of such forces in hostilities or in such situations.

Toward this end, the act requires the president to consult with Congress "in every possible instance" where armed force might be employed abroad, to

provide written notification within forty-eight hours of any military action in a hostile area, and to explain its "estimated scope and duration of the hostilities or involvement." If Congress does not approve of the action through either a declaration of war or specific statutory authorization, the armed forces must be removed within sixty to ninety days. Every president from the time of Gerald Ford to the present has chafed under these imposed restraints, however, and the controversies raised by the War Powers Act are renewed whenever American forces are sent into combat overseas. This could be vividly seen in the decisions to use military force in Panama in 1989, Kuwait and Iraq during the Persian Gulf War in 1991, Haiti in 1994, Bosnia in 1995, Kosovo in 1999, Iraq in 2003, and a variety of other countries as a part of the "global war on terror." When President Obama ordered air attacks in a 2011 NATO-led military mission against Libya without congressional approval, critics accused him of "trashing the law" and "ripping the War Powers Act into little pieces." Although the partisan positions quickly changed sides, exactly the same arguments were made when President Trump ordered air strikes against Bashar al-Assad's regime in Syria in 2018.

In each of these cases, politics determined whether constitutional, legislative, or legal restraints would be imposed on the use of armed force or not. But political will is ever changing and is subject to a wide variety of factors, including the media, vested interests, financial contributors, those with access to power, and election cycles. When Democrats controlled Congress, for example, they passed the 1984 Boland Amendment to prohibit Republican Ronald Reagan from providing military support to the Contra rebels in Nicaragua. When the Republicans gained the majority, they in turn were eager to restrain Democratic Bill Clinton when he thought it necessary to send forces to Bosnia.

One of the most publicized cases of partisan politics occurred in 2015 over the issue of Iranian nuclear intentions and capabilities. In an undisguised attempt to undermine President Obama and to kill the negotiations between the United States, Britain, France, Russia, China, Germany, the European Union, and Iran at a critical stage, House Speaker John Boehner invited Israeli prime minister Benjamin Netanyahu to address a joint session of Congress to express his vehement opposition to any Iranian agreement—over the strong objections of the White House. Not satisfied with this, forty-seven Republican senators then took the unprecedented and controversial step of sending a public letter directly to the leaders in Tehran. Here, they expressed their determination to sabotage the negotiations, explicitly warning that when Obama's term was over, "most of us will remain in office" and that "the next president" could revoke any agreement "with the stroke of a pen, and future Congresses could modify the terms of the agreement at any time." The administration reacted with outrage, denouncing it as "gross interference." Many professionals concluded that it would dangerously undermine the ability of all future presidents to engage in negotiations on behalf of the United States by raising serious doubts that they could ever deliver on their commitments. As such, some critics declared that this highly partisan action amounted to nothing short of "treason."

Especially during a time of the diplomatic revolution, the restraints imposed by partisanship and political will can be affected dramatically by public opinion.

Popular support for a particular course of policy can vary greatly and change quickly. Such erratic behavior creates dangers. As news commentator Walter Lippmann observed in *The Public Philosophy*,

> the unhappy truth is that the prevailing public opinion has been destructively wrong at the critical junctures. The people have imposed a veto on the judgments of informed and responsible officials. They have compelled governments . . . to be too late with too little, or too long with too much, too pacifist in peace and too bellicose in war, too neutralist or appeasing in negotiation or too intransigent. Mass opinion has acquired mounting power in this century. It has shown itself to be a dangerous master of decisions when the stakes are life and death.

Positions that shift so dramatically not only create uncertainty but greatly impact the level of restraints on force and statecraft. When threats are issued, or when military action occurs, for example, there are those who passionately participate in flag-waving rallies and give their leaders utterly unrestrained *carte blanche* to do whatever they want. But, at exactly the same time, there are intense opponents who organize peace protests and work to impose restraints whenever armed force is used. Such contested opinions also can be found among government officials, diplomats, and military personnel themselves, as they struggle to determine what kinds of restraints they are willing—and unwilling—to observe. These individual and collective opinions are influenced by perceived interests, fears, aspirations, and values. Among the latter, perhaps the most complex and enduring challenges are those presented by the values of ethics.

ETHICS AND INTERNATIONAL POLITICS

Living life requires that we make choices among alternatives about what we will—and will not—do. Such choices are unavoidable. For most of us, these decisions are relatively simple ones involving matters of our daily lives. But for those bearing heavy responsibilities for force and statecraft, they can require momentous decisions about peace and war, life and death. Regardless of their scope, however, since these choices have an impact on other people, they involve ethics. This is due to the fact that ethical reasoning centers on *judgments about the relationship between human behavior and the well-being of others made on the basis of normative standards*. These standards, in turn, usually comprise three elements:

1. Limit. The first of these is the essential and distinctive feature of ethical *limit*, or restraint. It maintains that there exists a limitation, or a boundary, drawn around our behavior that provides a restraint on how we should conduct ourselves in relation to other people. Not everything, in other words, is about ourselves alone and not everything is permissible. Certain behavior is acceptable and certain behavior is unacceptable—hence, the moral values of right and wrong, good and bad, legitimate and illegitimate, just and unjust. These limitations are designed to produce collective benefits by mitigating conflict in living life with others.

2. Consequences. There also is a recognition that there are *consequences* of our behavior on the well-being of others. Good intentions are not sufficient, for what we do and do not do affects other people. They may be protected and their value as living human beings affirmed, or they may be harmed or even killed because of

our conduct. Ethics thus prescribe that we take the interests and rights of others beyond ourselves into account.

3. Responsibility. Finally, ethical standards maintain that we bear *responsibility* for our conduct. We have an obligation, or duty, to honor the established limits. Thus, in one way or another, sooner or later, we are held accountable for our actions and our inactions.

These elements apply to all ethical standards, but herein lies a serious challenge. There is not one standard of ethics on which every person can agree. Instead, there are many. This diversity results in part from the fact that what we regard as right or wrong is shaped by a multiplicity of different sources. Parents, teachers and schools, peers, religion, states, society, customs and tradition, institutions, prevailing culture, various groups or organizations, law, philosophy, exemplars whose qualities and behavior we admire, the standards of particular professions, personal experiences, and intuition all play roles in developing normative values that shape our "moral compass" or conscience.

Sometimes these different standards reach agreement at a point of overlapping consensus that reinforces the same or similar ethical values. Many times they do not. The traditions, cultures, norms, loyalties, and perceptions of different countries are complex and can vary greatly. The values promoted by a state can be heavily influenced by a particular leader, or vocal groups, and these can be contested and changed through time within particular historical contexts. Sharp differences occur between a sense of responsibility to broad-based humanity as compared to one's own country, or to the good of the world community as a whole rather than to its separate parts. Religious traditions vary greatly and can produce intense disagreements between progressive and conservative believers about core ethical values. Even within the field of moral philosophy itself, there are different schools of thought, ranging from the ethics of Aristotle grounded on personal character and virtue, to those of Immanuel Kant founded on universal principles, or to the ideas of John Stuart Mill based on utilitarian considerations of the greatest good for the greatest number. There thus are times when these different approaches actually compete with each other in their efforts to nurture, to persuade, or even to impose certain ethical values on others.

In the realm of force and statecraft, the most intense clashes and serious competition between values most often occur between those of religion and those of the state. Faith-based religious values tend to center on beliefs in enduring and universal principles, broad responsibilities, and ways in which these beliefs are faithfully held and expressed in how we live our lives and conduct ourselves toward the well-being of humankind. For this reason—and when at their best—they look at the world and its people and see them in more transcendent terms as they *should be*. State values, on the other hand, normally focus on ascribing moral worth to a particular nation or government, emphasizing responsibilities and loyalty to it, and placing priority on behavior that will best serve its own interests alone. They thus look at the exercise of power over discernable stakes, seeing the world and its people more narrowly and in secular terms as they *are*.

Religions and states consequently can provide quite different—and sometimes fiercely contesting—answers to questions about appropriate limits, whose well-being should benefit from our conduct, and the ultimate point of reference

for our allegiance and responsibilities. The crux of this problem was captured in a single sentence when the leading judge of the Third Reich told an accused man condemned to death, "Herr Graf, there is one thing Christianity and we National Socialists have in common, and only this one: We both demand the whole person."

The existence of such differing values, each seeking devotion, obviously presents a particularly difficult challenge for policy in international politics. The reason is that the formulation and implementation of policy require making choices between various, and often competing, alternatives. Judgments and then choices about alternative ethical values are not exempt. This process becomes even more complicated when one considers that the differences between these normative standards often are severe, that the powerful impact of both religions and states historically has been decidedly mixed, and that some people hold their beliefs about ethics firmly and intensely. All of this helps to explain why so many individuals have wrestled so long and so hard with the challenge of ethical restraints in international politics and why they have reached such extremely different conclusions throughout history and into our own time.

Some observers, for example, have decided that because the distance between the spiritual soul and the secular state is so far apart that it can never be bridged, it is necessary for leaders to cast their lot unequivocally with the state and its emphasis on *raison d'état*, absolute sovereignty, and *Realpolitik*, insisting that ethical values based on religious belief simply have little or no place at all in international politics. Machiavelli reached this conclusion when he wrote in *The Prince* that "the gulf between how one should live and how one does live is so wide that a man who neglects what is actually done for what should be done learns the way to self-destruction." He contended that religious restraints may be applicable to the conduct of individuals as they live their personal lives—but rarely to states whose interests always must take precedence over any moral scruples. When possible, leaders should try to be "good"; but, when necessary, their responsibility to the state requires that they "know how to do evil" and be prepared to behave "contrary to good faith, charity, humanity, and religion." Toward this end, he sought to elevate the interests of one's own country to the status of a supreme ethical norm of its own, declaring in his *Discourses* that by teaching "humility, lowliness, and contempt for worldly objects," Christianity actually posed a danger to the state by making its followers weak. In conducting state policy, he asserted, "no considerations of justice or injustice, humanity or cruelty, nor glory or shame, should be allowed to prevail."

Others carried this argument even further, arguing that in international politics, only "might makes right" and virtually *any means* can be used to secure *any ends* that benefit the state. This explains why Thucydides wrote about the militarily powerful Athenians contemptuously scoffing at the weak appeal of the Melians for what was "fair and right" and why Thomas Hobbes maintained that in a world of vicious struggle, self-imposed moral restraints are either simplistically naïve at best or dangerous at worst. Political scientist Hans Morgenthau emphasized these arguments as well, contending in *Politics Among Nations*:

> a world society and . . . a universal morality do not exist . . . The nation fills the minds and hearts of men everywhere with particular experiences and, derived from them, with particular concepts of political philosophy, particular standards of political morality, and particular goals of political action. Inevitably,

> then, the members of the human race live and act politically, not as members of one world society applying standards of universal ethics, but as members of their respective national societies, guided by their national standards of morality. In politics the nation and not humanity is the ultimate fact.

Statements such as these certainly do not go unchallenged, for there are those who do see humanity and not the nation as the ultimate fact. Many strongly object to the propositions that ethics somehow stop at national borders or that a sharp distinction exists between personal morality of individuals, on the one hand, and collective public or state morality, on the other. Instead, they argue strongly that ethical principles focused on the well-being of people cannot be confined to one exclusive group or nationality, but must serve as wider standards for judging the ends, the means, and the likely consequences of policy affecting others. Nation-states themselves are human constructs, "national interests" are heavily dependent on the broader values upheld by an international system, and the "necessities" of world politics, rather than being beyond the realm of ethical choices and moral judgment, ultimately rest upon them.

As even the self-described "realist" Alexander Hamilton expressed it in 1791, "the established rules of morality and justice are applicable to nations as well as to individuals." Scholar Stanley Hoffman similarly maintains in *Duties Beyond Borders: On the Limits and Possibilities of Ethical International Politics* that ethical choices are inherent in virtually all major decisions of statecraft, for individual people do not cease to be responsible as moral agents just because they act as public officials or wear a military uniform. "We must remember," he writes, "that states are led by human beings whose actions affect human beings within and outside: considerations of good and evil, right or wrong, are therefore both inevitable and legitimate." This opinion is shared by many experienced policymakers as well, including members of the Commission on the Organization of Government for the Conduct of Foreign Policy who concluded: "Virtually all major foreign policy issues contain some ethical component."

But even among those who believe that ethical restraints do and should play a role in international politics, there still are vast differences of opinion as to how this might be accomplished. There have been times in history when individuals have insisted that the values of their religion and the values of their state were not different at all, but rather one and the same. It is not at all difficult to find cases of political or military leaders who have manipulated the language and fervor of religion for their own agendas, or theocratic leaders who have used the secular power of a state to advance their own interests. Their words of explanation may be genuine expressions of sincere personal belief, or they may be nothing more than calculating statements of religiosity, designed to deceive others into thinking that the exercise of power is somehow ethically justified or divinely ordained.

It is difficult to know precisely the motives of Bismarck, the very epitome of *Realpolitik*, for example, when he received his first diplomatic appointment and wrote: "I am God's soldier, and where he sends me there I must go." "I believe that I am obeying God," he said on another occasion, "when I serve my King." Similar statements can be found among those who completely equate Judaism with the state of Israel, or who embrace militant Hindu nationalism in India. With reference to Islam, President Erdoğan of Turkey once declared, "The mosques are our barracks and the believers our soldiers." General William Boykin, former U.S. deputy undersecretary of defense for intelligence, provided further evidence of this pattern when he asserted that since America was "a Christian nation," its terrorist enemies "will only be defeated if we come against them in the name of Jesus." He further declared: "We in the army of God, in the house of God, kingdom of God, have been raised for such a time as this."

Such a deliberate fusing of the values of religion with the values of the state, especially when dealing with force and statecraft, leaves many other observers and practitioners deeply worried. To them, the certitude that the will of God is being fulfilled by the policy of their country can be, and often has been, a dangerous concept that can all too easily lead to moralistic self-righteousness, hubris, and megalomania. They view the simultaneous embrace of two often conflicting normative standards that pull in different directions as too seductively simplistic, too much like trying to square a circle, and too self-serving. As one of Bismarck's critics once bitingly observed, the chancellor conveniently "believes firmly and deeply in a God who has the remarkable faculty of always agreeing with him." They fear that such a mixture all too easily can cloak reprehensible actions with the mantle of virtue, to convince citizens that they can remain true to their religious beliefs while, at exactly the same time, being loyal and patriotic to their state, or to arouse fanaticism without a twinge of self-doubt about battles to defend the "good" and exterminate the "evil." This, they argue, only encourages confrontational and uncompromising crusades to forcibly impose one's own values on others, supports "holy wars" against "heathens" and "heretics" or jihads against "infidels," and intolerant extremism that completely destroys any sense of limit or self-restraint at all.

For these reasons, many have agonized over the question of how they should apply ethics and act when faced with a genuine dilemma or crisis of conscience: when their religious and moral convictions clash with actions in the service of their government that they find to be deeply repugnant. Thus, sincere Buddhists in Myanmar have asked how they can possibly seek things of the spirit or follow the teachings of nonviolence while working on behalf of a state engaged in expelling thousands of Rohingya Muslims and extending its power by military means. Dedicated Muslims similarly have inquired how Islam, which teaches compassion and mercy toward others, can be used to justify the brutality of ISIS or terrorist attacks against innocent civilians. In the same way, there have been times when earnest Christians have questioned how they could faithfully follow the commands of Jesus to "love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you," to "turn the other cheek if someone strikes you," and to honestly acknowledge that "no one can serve two masters . . . you cannot serve God and mammon," and yet at the same time support the deliberate launching of wars of choice, torture, or the use of "shock-and-awe" violence.

The incompatibility of these positions has led some to conclude that they must answer to a "higher law" whereby their responsibilities to their religious faith or conscience must transcend whatever obligations they might have to a human government. They therefore believe that, when necessary, they should reject the values of the state and completely remove themselves from action or policy that might assist its quest for power. They reach a point where they determine that *the ends do*

not justify the means. When faced with this situation in the early sixteenth century, Sir Thomas More, the lord chancellor of England, believed that his religious beliefs did not allow him to accede to the secular commands of Henry VIII, declaring with his last words: "I am the king's good servant, but God's first." Others have resigned from their official positions, including Lord John Morley, who immediately submitted his resignation from the British Cabinet when his country announced that it would go to war in 1914; Cyrus Vance, U.S. deputy secretary of defense, who did the same in protest over the Vietnam War; Robin Cook, British foreign secretary, who resigned in 2003 over his country's participation in the American-led war against Iraq; and American foreign service officer and former Marine captain Matthew Hoh, who resigned in 2009 over the Afghanistan War, in his words, "based not upon how we are pursuing the war, but why and to what end." More recently, and in addition to General James Mattis, several career American ambassadors have resigned. As one of them, John Feely, explained, "I resigned because the traditional core values . . . have been warped and betrayed."

Some individuals caught in this dilemma have become conscientious objectors. As Franz Jägerstätter, who refused to perform military service in the German army, expressed it:

> For what purpose, then, did God endow all men with reason and free will if, despite this, we have to render blind obedience [to the state] . . . ? What purpose is served by the ability to distinguish between good and evil? . . . Now anyone who is able to fight for both kingdoms and stay in good standing in both communities (that is, the community of the saints and the Nazi folk community) and who is able to obey every command of the Third Reich—such a man, in my opinion, would have to be a great magician. I for one cannot do so. And I definitely prefer to relinquish my rights under the Third Reich and thus make sure of deserving the rights granted under the Kingdom of God.

In this case, the consequences of such faith-based ethical restraints presented too great a threat to the state. After writing these words, Jägerstätter was taken to another room and beheaded.

Most people have no desire to suffer this kind of punishment for their beliefs or to take one absolutist position or another in the tension between religious values and those of the state or between individual and group behavior. Instead, they find themselves in real-world situations that impose real consequences, struggling to avoid having to choose between being described as either a secular amoralist or so-called crude political "realist," on the one hand, or a spiritual "idealist" or so-called utopian "perfectionist," on the other. They therefore seek some way to navigate through the thicket of competing demands, interests, and loyalties and the maze of values that confront them in a complicated and imperfect world of the virtues and vices of human nature in which they exercise limited control, trying to reconcile the desirable of what *should* be done with the possible of what *can* be done.

It is for this reason that theologian Reinhold Niebuhr observed in his book *Moral Man and Immoral Society: A Study in Ethics and Politics*: "Politics will, to the end of history, be an area where conscience and power meet, where the ethical and coercive factors of human life will interpenetrate and work out their tentative and uneasy compromises." After reflecting on this thought-provoking statement, historian and diplomat E. H. Carr felt compelled to add: "The compromises, like solutions to other human problems, will remain uneasy and tentative. But it is an essential part of any compromise that both factors [conscience and power] shall be taken into account." He concluded: "It is as fatal in politics to ignore power as it is to ignore morality."

The challenges of actually making these compromises and applying ethics to international politics are often deeply complex and profound. There is not always a simple and comfortable black-or-white distinction, for example, between conscience and power. Conscience, as we have seen, can be pulled in different directions, and general ethical principles do not provide clear-cut rules or policy directives that tell decision makers exactly what they should do. Similarly, and as we shall explore in the Conclusion, it is essential to recognize that power is not confined to military force alone, but is composed of many different elements that also include skillful diplomacy, knowledge, technology, economic strength, reputation, culture, and what is widely described as the "moral force" of ethical values themselves.

These factors are further complicated by the fact that there are a multiplicity of philosophical and religious traditions, that an overzealous commitment to a particular ethical principle may be inappropriate or even dangerous in certain circumstances, and that leaders in a world of complexity and ambiguity where decisions are made with incomplete information can never fully know, despite their intentions, all the consequences of their actions or inactions. All this helps to explain why it is so painfully agonizing for those who possess a strong sense of responsibility and who seek to avoid absolutist extremes and ephemeral abstractions to genuinely attempt to make reasonable ethical judgments about *what ends* and *what means* are justified in *what situations.*

But in this endeavor those concerned with international politics are not completely alone and are not without guidelines to help them find their way through the dilemmas of making ethical choices. Questions about limits, justice, values, principled action, the well-being of others, and responsibilities have been raised by every generation throughout history. As a result of many historical experiences and efforts, a substantial body of consensual, normative standards has been developed to help regulate international behavior by establishing ethical restraints for statecraft in general and, more specifically, ethical restraints for threats and uses of armed force.

ETHICAL RESTRAINTS FOR STATECRAFT

Even the earliest practitioners of statecraft in the world of international politics came to understand that—for reasons of both necessity and conviction—they could avoid anarchy only if they kept their conflicts and competition within bounds by developing certain normative restraints. They came to see that it was in their concrete interest to respect diplomatic immunity, protect foreign embassies and their staffs, honor the promises and treaty obligations, and establish and then follow rules that distinguished between acceptable and unacceptable behavior. They also came to realize that people have principles as well as interests, and that there is more to statecraft than mere calculation.

Thus, as we saw in Chapter 1, the early writings of Archbishop Bernard du Rosier, soldier-diplomat Philippe de Commynes, law professors Francisco de Vitoria and Alberto Gentilli, and theologian Cornelius Jansenius all concluded that effective statecraft can never be effective if governed by secular state self-interest alone. Success, they insisted, ultimately depended on including ethical values as well. After witnessing the horrors of the Thirty Years' War, for example, the jurist and diplomat Hugo Grotius felt compelled to insist that states, like individuals, simply must be restrained by certain rules and laws based on larger moral principles.

Such ideas received considerable reinforcement from many early manuals of statecraft written by seasoned diplomats motivated not by abstractions but by lessons learned from their own personal and hard-earned practical experiences. As we saw in Chapter 1, these included influential and insightful treatises by Jean Hotman, Abram de Wicquefort, Juan Antonio de Vera, and Antoine Pecquet, all emphasizing the critical importance of establishing ethical restraints in the conduct of foreign policy. Callières concluded in his classic work that diplomats must be honest and of good character, practice "plain and fair dealing," be "good Christians" and persons "of peace," and be faithful to their states while recognizing that "such obedience cannot be held to cover any action against the laws of God or of justice."

These principles and general guidelines, among others, served to contribute to a slow but nevertheless progressive evolution of customary international ethical norms designed to provide restraints on the behavior of states with one another. They were handed down from one generation to another and further developed with various degrees of compromise and changes through time. Sometimes they clearly were honored more in the breach than in the observance. But on other occasions, they were taken very seriously, as noted by veteran diplomat J. J. Jusserand in his book *School for Ambassadors*. Many of the successes of the classical system of diplomacy, as we saw in Chapter 2, were the result of self-imposed restraints and rules of accommodation that derived from a common set of diplomatic norms and the fact that those practicing statecraft placed value on their reputation for honoring them.

There have been times when these ethical values moved beyond constraining action and actually helped to empower action, especially in efforts to alleviate suffering by promoting justice, conflict prevention and resolution, human rights, reconciliation, and humanitarian relief. Gladstone, who served four times as British prime minister during the nineteenth century, is particularly well known as an example of a leader with strong religious convictions who believed that he had a larger duty to frame his statecraft in terms of the call from the Sermon on the Mount for compassion, humility, and peacemaking. In *Morality and American Foreign Policy: The Role of Ethics in International Affairs*, political scientist Robert McElroy maintains that such norms often enter the consciences of state decision makers, members of the domestic public, and those comprising global opinion, thereby influencing their perceptions of issues and their actions. For this reason, he demonstrates that it is not hard to find cases when ethical principles based on the broader sense of responsibility to the well-being of humanity appear to have taken precedence over narrowly defined state interests.

One of his most interesting historical cases explores the choice faced by the United States when confronting an event inside the Soviet Union. From the very beginning, Americans viewed Communist Russia as a major threat. They consequently tried to isolate the Soviets from the world and economically cut off all trade in the hope that such actions would seriously weaken them and lead to their eventual collapse. Suddenly, in 1921, the Soviet government faced the very type of threat to its existence that the Americans had desired: the outbreak of massive famine. The situation became so desperate that even Lenin concluded that if no way could be found to feed the peasants, his Communist regime would perish. Yet, within days of an appeal for help, Secretary of Commerce Herbert Hoover, a man of strong Quaker religious beliefs, began to mobilize a massive relief effort to avert starvation in Russia. He, President Warren G. Harding, and members of Congress, according to McElroy's analysis, internalized the international norm that held nations responsible for helping other countries devastated by disaster, regardless of their political orientation. In conscience, they could not sit by and watch tens of millions of Russians starve to death, even if providing famine relief meant thwarting their own political, strategic, and economic interests by stabilizing the detested Soviet regime.

The strength of the perceived need for such international ethical norms and restraints can be seen in the fact that so many of them have emerged precisely at a time when shared values themselves were under serious attack. The rise of highly ideological regimes in Communist Russia, Fascist Italy, and Nazi Germany, with their extraordinary demands in the name of the state, as we saw in Chapter 3, seriously challenged many previously accepted ethical standards from the classical system of diplomacy. The horrors of the Second World War, as explored in Chapter 4, dramatically raised the issue of how the absence of shared values impacts international peace and security. The dangers of Cold War, as discussed in Chapter 5, exacerbated this even further as the superpowers framed their relations in terms of the "running dog lackeys of capitalistic imperialism" versus "Godless Communism" and the "Evil Empire." This trend has continued more recently, as observed in Chapter 6, with the breakdown of the international order, with those who view international relations as nothing short of "the clash of civilizations," and with those Americans who detest certain countries as "the Axis of Evil" or those who hate the United States as "the Great Satan" full of "infidels." The sheer magnitude of all these challenges and contests of values makes the achievements in purposefully creating consensual, international ethical norms all the more remarkable.

In fact, it is precisely the existence of these values and standards that establishes the normative force of the entire concept of legitimacy within any international system in the first place. Actions and the exercise of power are regarded as legitimate only insofar as they are consistent with general agreement on norms, or what is seen as acceptable—and unacceptable, or illegitimate—behavior. In the absence of any higher supremacy over them, states voluntarily create these restraints because they find that it is in their interest to do so. They come to realize that anarchy and the exercise of crude power alone simply cannot provide the kind of authority and legitimacy that they need to have some measure of order in their relations. When they create recognized restraints, they shape expectations

and predictability. In this process, they increase stability and thereby reduce uncertainty, miscalculation due to surprise, and insecurity in international politics.

These standards, of course, are not static but evolve through time based on historical circumstances. This can be seen by the progressive changes in ethical values toward such international issues as the slave trade, basic human rights, social justice, the "Responsibility to Protect," and democracy. Sometimes these norms may be sharply contested, or they may be breached rather than practiced. Nevertheless, with their limits, recognition of consequences, and acknowledgment of responsibility, they serve as a basis on which behavior in statecraft can be judged. Indeed, there are times when states are severely punished with coercive sanctions or humanitarian intervention if it is perceived that they are violating the norms of the system.

Some of the most notable examples of these ethical norms and the restraints that they create can be seen in international law. Indeed, the very rule of law itself, whether in domestic or foreign affairs, creates sets of normative rules specifically designed to restrain arbitrary, abusive, irrational, or destructive behavior. For very practical reasons, states of their own accord agree to accept certain restraints on themselves in the expectation that others will do the same, and that some form of sanction will result against those who deviate in breaking the law.

These legal restraints can take a variety of forms. Sometimes they appear as *jus cogens*, or compelling law, based on what are described as peremptory norms that emerge from evolving political and social attitudes. Today these include generally accepted prohibitions against genocide, crimes against humanity, maritime piracy, slavery, torture, and state-sponsored terrorism. At other times, normative restraints are reflected in *customary international law* derived from custom and practice. Although not always clearly codified, these rules reflect the actual conduct of states acting out of a sense of obligation that the law required them to act in that way. On still other occasions, the norms are precisely identified and written in the corpus of positive *public international law* composed of statutory treaties, conventions, agreements, and judgments of tribunals such as the International Court of Justice.

As parties to these formal instruments, government leaders explicitly consent to accept certain norms, benefits, and responsibilities designed to make their world a less anarchic place by regulating and restraining their relations with one another. These, in turn, provide rules of law and standards of legitimacy against which state behavior is judged. Thousands of provisions of international law, for example, now exist to address issues of diplomatic representation, human rights, world trade, global communication, navigation, intellectual property, outer space, the sea, and the environment, among many other subjects. A few states ignore or disregard these laws, but most make considerable effort to observe them, because they believe that it is their ethical obligation to do so and/or because they realize that it is in their interest to be members of a broader international society and do not want to be, or cannot afford to be, ostracized or excluded from the benefits denied to them if they do not conform to the accepted rules.

Such normative standards and the ambition to advance them are particularly striking in the area of international human rights. Indeed, it is here that ethical considerations are made so explicit, for the consequences of action without limit or

restraint—and of inaction—on the well-being of others become so evident and so shocking. For centuries, the leaders of states understood that they could treat those under their control however they wished, as matters of exclusive domestic jurisdiction, without outside scrutiny, criticism, or intervention. They could engage in all manner of abuse, including discrimination, exploitation, segregation, enslavement, persecution, and even genocide in the knowledge that they could hide safely and with impunity behind the cloak of national sovereignty. Victims in pain thus could not look beyond their own borders for any help or protection. They had nowhere to run and nowhere to hide.

But the lessons of history reveal that as the extent of human suffering increases, so too does the pressure for creating restraints. It is the horrendous consequences of unrestrained abuse that prods thoughtful women and men to shout "Enough!" and be persuaded that certain behavior must be judged as wrong, illegitimate, and simply unacceptable.

This is exactly what happened, for example, once the horrors of the Second World War, the Rape of Nanking, and the Holocaust became widely known and shocked the world. Many concluded, with a particularly revealing choice of words, that these barbarous events had "violated the conscience of humanity" and "outraged the conscience of mankind." In response, as we saw in Chapter 4, the Commission to Study the Organization of Peace insisted in its hard-hitting report, *International Safeguard of Human Rights*, that a critical relationship existed: there could be no security without peace, no peace without justice, and no justice without respect for human rights. Their argument struck a powerful chord. A wide array of leaders responsible for statecraft, activists, NGOs (including those representing many religious faiths), returning veterans, survivors, and citizens thus became convinced that they had an ethical responsibility to do what they could to protect those who suffered from abuse, irrespective of nationality, race, gender, or religion. They thus announced their determination to challenge the heretofore sacrosanct claims of absolute national sovereignty by states and to establish meaningful and viable international human rights norms.

This new attitude manifested itself immediately at the 1945 San Francisco Conference and its resulting landmark United Nations Charter. Here, all member states pledged to hold themselves responsible for promoting and encouraging respect for human rights and fundamental freedoms. The path-breaking and standard-setting 1948 Universal Declaration of Human Rights soon followed, with its language that the enumerated ethical norms applied to "all members of the human family." Through time, the vast majority of governments in the world, along with their peoples and emerging NGOs such as Amnesty International and Human Rights Watch, then worked to create a wide-ranging series of formally recognized declarations of normative values, followed by very specific and binding restraints in human rights treaties. These address a wide range of issues, including genocide, racism, apartheid, civil and political rights, social and economic rights, discrimination against women, the rights of children, the rights of refugees and indigenous peoples, and the prohibition of torture. Together, these treaties, along with their treaty-monitoring mechanisms and special procedures, have placed restraints on state sovereignty. The impact of ethical norms also can be seen in the success of activists who employ what are called "name and shame" campaigns

drawing international attention to and condemnation against those who abuse the rights others. All of these efforts have contributed to the significant process of transforming individual victims of human rights abuses from mere objects of international pity into actual subjects of international law.

Such a significant normative shift according greater value to individual people also can be seen in the development of the concept of "human security." In recent years, a variety of international agreements have recognized that security can no longer be measured narrowly in terms of military threats against the territory and the interests of nation-states alone, but must now include an ethical assessment of the well-being of people—that is, that the security and protection of human beings themselves represents a legitimate dimension, or reference point, for determining the meaning and realization of security. In fact, there is a growing body of opinion that the legitimacy of any government and its claims of sovereignty, at least to some degree, is contingent on fulfilling its responsibilities to honor human rights norms.

This increasing acceptance of "human security" among practitioners of statecraft has led quite naturally to the emergence of the concept of the "indivisibility of security." That is, that *international* security, *national* security, and *individual* security are not mutually exclusive, but rather mutually reinforcing and actually dependent on each other. A significant confirmation of this emerged during the 2005 World Summit. Despite their vast differences of political structure, stages of development, and cultural settings, national leaders unanimously agreed on the "values and principles" of human rights. They affirmed "the universality, indivisibility, interdependence, and interrelatedness of all human rights" and acknowledged their responsibility to enforce international law and provide protection to victims. Eleanor Roosevelt, who served as the American representative on the United Nations Human Rights Commission, described this process of progressively seeing the relationship between security, peace, justice, and human rights as "the measure of mankind's evolving ethical sense."

Some indication of the degree to which these norms have been accepted, embedded, and internalized can be seen in the reaction produced when it is perceived that they have been egregiously violated. Widespread moral outrage ensued, for example, over the cruelty against dissidents in psychiatric wards and the gulag of the Soviet Union, the murder of black activist Stephen Biko and the imprisonment of Nelson Mandela by the white minority regime of South Africa, the brutality of the dictatorships of Augusto Pinochet in Chile and Pol Pot in Cambodia, the 1989 attack against students at Tiananmen Square in China, and the shocking 2018 murder and gruesome dismemberment of journalist Jamal Khashoggi by Saudi Arabia.

These same kinds of ethical values focused on the well-being of others can be seen in the growing international sense of responsibility for the consequences of unrestrained economic competition and the resulting disparity between the rich and the poor in the world. Many thoughtful observers regard this as one of the most serious challenges of our time. They see the enormous gap between affluence and poverty as a glaring case of economic and social injustice whose chronic deprivation not only causes untold suffering, but also serves as a breeding ground for discontent that easily can manifest itself in war and terrorism. In this way, destitution threatens the human person as well as peace and security.

A number of nation-states and NGOs thus have worked to create normative restraints on economic behavior and to coordinate policies that address matters of what is known as distributive justice. The results of their efforts can be found in the United Nations Development Program, World Health Organization, Food and Agricultural Organization, and World Bank and International Monetary Fund as they seek to develop the Norms on the Responsibilities of Transnational Corporations and Other Business Enterprises with Regard to Human Rights and to conduct programs focused on famine and disaster relief, foreign aid, debt and investment policies, health care, working conditions, and development assistance.

Ethics also play an important role in the development of normative restraints to address the sufferings and the dangers that result from environmental degradation. It has become evident that the misuse and overuse of scarce and shared resources creates severe consequences for life throughout the planet. Observers as diverse as military strategists in the Pentagon to activists in Greenpeace increasingly see pollution, soil erosion, deforestation and desertification, water depletion, rising sea levels, and climate change as vital components in the security of the international system, the security of nation-states, and the security of individual humans.

As a consequence, serious questions of ethical responsibility arise. Are we responsible only for the health and well-being of those people within our particular nation, or to others beyond our borders who might suffer as a result of our action or inaction? Are we responsible only to ourselves and those currently alive, or, given the finite nature of many resources, to future generations as well? Do we have any responsibilities to other forms of life?

It is exactly these kinds of challenging questions that have prompted efforts to establish ethical norms that create restraints to protect the well-being of the planet as a whole. The 1992 United Nations Conference on Environment and Development, widely known as the "Earth Summit," brought together more than 25,000 participants, including 172 official governmental delegations and the representatives of 2,400 environmental NGOs. Together they negotiated the Convention on Biological Diversity and the United Nations Framework Convention on Climate Change, which in turn led to the 1997 Kyoto Protocol and the 2016 Paris Climate Accord designed to mitigate greenhouse gas emissions. Although these agreements have garnered widespread international support, certain nations have refused to meaningfully participate. In response, the prime minister of Canada, Paul Martin, publicly called upon them to recognize the need to be responsible and to heed "the conscience of the world."

Not all endeavors to establish ethical restraints for statecraft, of course, have such a broad global perspective or result from international consensus. Sometimes states deliberately impose limits upon themselves about what they are willing and unwilling to do. One of the most striking examples of this occurred when the United States began to seriously investigate the Central Intelligence Agency in the wake of the Watergate scandal. Although fully aware of the necessity of having an effective intelligence service, congressional committees discovered shocking accounts of covert action conducted in the name of national security that entailed destabilization campaigns, the overthrow of democratically elected governments, plots to assassinate foreign leaders, counterinsurgency, and serious violations of

human rights. These revelations prompted widespread public outrage and led Senator Frank Church to describe the CIA as a "rogue elephant out of control." Congress responded by establishing select committees to oversee and restrain operations, while presidents Ford, Carter, and Reagan issued executive orders explicitly prohibiting political assassinations by any agent of the United States under their administrations, declaring that such targeted murder was completely contrary to "basic ethical values."

ETHICAL RESTRAINTS FOR ARMED FORCE

The challenges that exist in creating ethical restraints in life and in statecraft are rendered even more difficult, as they have been for centuries of time, when dealing with armed force. It is here that we most directly confront the implications of our shortcomings as humans and the existence of violence in the world. It is here that military power is given preeminence over all other forms of power. It is here that concepts of loyalty and responsibility are most quickly narrowed and tested. It is here that choices about whether, under what circumstances, and how to use force have the most severe consequences on the well-being of others, including loss, damage, suffering, and death itself. It is here that questions of legitimacy and the meaning of right and wrong arise most passionately and painfully. It also is here that the value we have been taught about doing unto others what we would have them do to us comes into such direct conflict with those values of the state when violence is deliberate and direct orders are given to kill.

As Stanley Hoffman observes, war is where people are most obviously torn between humanity and country—between their conscience as moral beings, whose thoughts and feelings about responsibilities transcend borders, and their loyalties as citizens of a particular nation-state. History demonstrates that wars provide the greatest opportunities for national self-righteousness and hysteria; for political leaders and military commanders to plead "expediency," or "necessity," or "emergency," and to argue that they really had no choice but to respond to the wartime imperatives forced upon them; for critics to be charged as being "enemies of the state"; and for discarding standards, in the words of the *Oxford Manual of the Laws of War*, with "the unchaining of passion and savage instincts." It is therefore essential to appreciate that in these particular matters of force and statecraft, the arguments are intense, the stakes are high, and the consequences are severe.

At one end of the spectrum, for example, are pacifists, who argue that any threat or use of military force at all is intrinsically evil. They challenge the fatalistic argument that war and violent barbarities are somehow inevitable, and seek strength in moral force rather than physical force. They believe in the sanctity of all life, insisting that violence only begets more violence, and that killing—for any reason—is wrong and can never possibly be justified. For this reason, dedicated pacifists unambiguously embrace nonviolence, oppose the possession of weapons as instruments of policy, and reject war itself. This position has a tradition extending over centuries, often finding inspiration from Buddhism, the teachings of Jesus and practices of the early Christian church, Bertha von Suttner's book *Lay Down Your Arms!*, the examples of Mohandas Gandhi and Martin Luther King, Jr., and

the Peace Testimony of the Quakers from 1660, declaring: "We utterly deny all outward wars and strife, and fightings with outward weapons, for any end, or under any pretense whatever; this is our testimony to the whole world."

In sharp contrast to this argument is that of militarists, who celebrate violence, who view war as the necessary biological mechanism of the survival of the fittest, and who glorify the state and its use of armed force with little or no reservation. Like Ares, the ancient Greek god of war and bloodlust who loved battle for its own sake, they see violence as an immutable fact of the human condition. For them, ethical norms that might place restraints on war are either entirely absent, completely redefined, or scornfully dismissed as being too "soft," too "idealistic," or too "utopian" to face the tough jungle of "the real world." In a "war of every man against every man," declared Hobbes, "notions of right or wrong, justice and injustice, have no place." The philosopher G. W. F. Hegel glorified war as a moral good by arguing that it transcends the mediocrity of everyday life, enhances domestic cohesion, promotes discipline and self-sacrifice, creates fear among enemies and respect abroad, and provides the ultimate test for glorifying masculinity and devotion toward states. German historian Heinrich von Treitschke declared peace to be "immoral" while praising "the moral majesty of war" as being "of the divinely appointed order." The Bolshevik leader Leon Trotsky similarly embraced violence, denouncing pacifism as more dangerous than all of the world's explosives combined. As he bluntly explained: "We were never concerned with the Kantian-priestly and vegetarian-Quaker prattle about the 'sacredness of human life.' To make the human life sacred we must destroy the social order . . . and this problem can be solved only by blood and iron."

This idea that wars are ennobling and that the end justifies whatever means are necessary has been echoed by others, including American naval officer and strategist Alfred Thayer Mahan in "The Moral Aspect of War," front-line German soldier Ernest Jünger in *Battle as an Inner Experience*, Adolf Hitler in *Mein Kampf*, and any number of extreme nationalists around the world. More recently, one thinks of those terrorists who not only employ, but actually embrace, brutal and unrestrained violence with beheadings, crucifixions, burning prisoners alive, and deliberately extinguishing the lives of innocent civilians.

But most of those responsible for statecraft throughout history and in our own day, it is probably safe to say, have tried to avoid being pushed into either the pure pacifist or the rabid "anything goes" militarist positions. Instead, they have attempted to navigate their way through conflicting demands and responsibilities, competing ethical values, the pressures of domestic and foreign politics, and the various practical, structural, and political restraints of their own time and place. They have reached the conclusion that armed force has its defensive and peacekeeping as well as aggressive uses, and that when leaders fail to avail themselves of the former, they are likely to find themselves at the mercy of those skilled in the latter. It is better to have arms and not need them, they have reasoned, rather than to need them and not have them.

This has led many of them to keep armed force as a necessary instrument of statecraft, but at the same time recognize its dangers and seek ways to keep it within certain limits. In doing so, they have tended to be nonperfectionist practitioners rather than dogmatic theoreticians or absolutist ideologues, making many

compromises along the way in their choices among all the variations of conscience and power and of what they *should* do and what they *could* do.

The results, as one would expect, thus often appear to be inconsistent and incomplete and to represent a peculiar mixture of self-interest and ethical values. Nevertheless, in their own incremental ways, they all reveal efforts to mitigate some of the enormous costs of unrestrained violence and barbaric bloodletting by creating progressively tighter limits on the threat and use of armed force. These can be seen in a wide variety of normative restraints regarding *if*, *when*, *how*, and under *what circumstances* armed force can be legitimately used as an instrument of policy. The extensive list includes norms addressing the legitimate purposes of war, rules of engagement, acceptable targets, protections for civilians, limitations on the numbers and types of weapons, the use of child soldiers, the treatment of prisoners of war and the wounded, the legal status of neutrality for nonbelligerents in times of war, arms control, restrictions on weapons testing, demilitarized zones, disarmament, and codes of conduct for arms sales.

Some of these ethical norms can be seen in the persistent efforts over time to develop customs, rules, and laws establishing restraints or prohibitions on certain types of weapons seen as distinctly repugnant due to their capacity to cause unacceptable excruciating pain or traumatic suffering. As early as the sixth century BC, for example, the Hindu Laws of Manu prohibited the use of barbed, poisoned, or flaming arrows. Religious leaders of the twelfth century worked to place restrictions on crossbows, which they described as "barbaric" and "unchristian." The Brussels Declaration of 1874 noted the principle that "the laws of war do not recognize in belligerents an unlimited power in the adoption of means of injuring an enemy." In the Hague Convention of 1899, statesmen from all of the major countries in Europe and Asia banned the use of soft-nosed dum-dum bullets, which tore savage wounds in the human body, on the grounds that they were "uncivilized," "inhumane," and "against the laws of humanity." The widely ratified 1925 Geneva Protocol prohibiting asphyxiating or poisonous gases openly declared such weapons to be "justly condemned by the general opinion of the civilized world" and explicitly stated its determination to bind alike "the conscience and the practice of nations."

Values similarly influenced subsequent negotiations, as discussed in Chapter 8, producing a variety of restraints in other arms control agreements. Strong and widespread opinion that viewed chemical and biological weapons as ghastly and ethically "abhorrent" tools of war, for example, compelled President Richard Nixon to reverse course and reject the advice of the Joint Chiefs of Staff by announcing in 1969 that the United States would destroy its stockpiles of biological weapons, formally renounce the first use of all lethal chemical weapons, and begin the process of ratifying the legal restraints of the Geneva Protocol. Ethical values similarly have driven many of the efforts to create the prohibitions in the Biological Weapons Convention, the Chemical Weapons Convention, the Land Mine Treaty, and the Nuclear Non-Proliferation Treaty, which remains the most widely observed arms control treaty in history.

Ethical norms also play a role in how threats of armed force are judged. Because of its defensive nature designed to prevent aggression, as seen in Chapter 9, deterrence usually does not produce ethical problems as serious as those of other strategies. The one notable exception, of course, is the threat of nuclear annihilation. Some critics

of nuclear deterrence argue that because it threatens to do what is morally reprehensible (namely, to inflict staggering mass destruction), it cannot possibly be justified. Others contend that such catastrophic damage can be threatened as long as it is never actually carried out in the event that deterrence fails. Coercive diplomacy in its offensive variant, which seeks to extend control through intimidation and fear, as explored in Chapter 10, also raises significant ethical questions that challenge internationally established norms. This explains exactly why the texts of the United Nations Charter and the Helsinki Final Act provide explicit restraints on coercive threats of force.

But history reveals that armed force all too frequently moves beyond the *possibility* of violence in threats to the *actuality* of violence and death in warfare. Since it is in war that the greatest harm is inflicted, it is in war that the greatest ethical challenges arise. From the time of the ancients to the present, and in virtually all cultures for which we have written records, there have been individuals who have been deeply concerned about this aspect of force and statecraft. They have argued that because war is a human activity that involves human choices about actually killing other people, it cannot possibly escape moral argument and judgment. They thus have given much thought to creating ethical standards for judging the legitimacy of recourse to violence: whether wars might be both permitted and restrained in when and how they are fought. In this process, they have sought to find some measure of moderation and restraint, avoiding the two extremes of believing either that *nothing* is justified in war—or that *everything* is. The rich and abundant principles, conventions, and tacit and explicit rules resulting from their efforts over a long period of time are collectively and broadly known as the just war tradition (JWT).

Whether the use of armed force is ethically justified or not, according to the theory of just war, depends upon compliance with particular restraints in both ends and means and is composed of three parts. The first of these is *jus ad bellum*, or **justice of war**. This is designed for those making choices of whether to go to war or not. The norms have included the following general criteria or principles:

1. Just Cause. The most widely accepted ethical justification for going to war is the necessity of defending against an actual armed attack. The fundamental importance of this traditional principle explains why, as we saw in Chapter 4, it was adopted so quickly and stated so explicitly by those who drafted and signed the United Nations Charter authorizing war in cases of self-defense.

2. Right Intention or Purpose. A war also can be considered just if it seeks to provide defense or protection from grievous harm for others if they are attacked. It is for this reason that the United Nations Charter gives to the Security Council the responsibility for authorizing the use of collective armed force if necessary to respond to "any threat to the peace, breach of the peace, or act of aggression." The intention or purpose must be "to maintain or restore international peace and security." This clearly stated objective is designed to establish that wars waged, as they sometimes have been in history, over insult, hatred of the enemy, lust for power, malicious revenge, love of violence, desire for sheer destruction, political or religious fanaticism in the forms of ideological crusades or "holy wars," aggrandizement, or conquest thus do not qualify, nor do preventive wars based not on imminent threats but on conjecture.

Even if these first two criteria about cause and intent are satisfied, however, it is not sufficient for a war to be considered just unless other requirements are met as well.

3. Legitimate Authority. The use of force is ethically permissible only when it is sanctioned by a legitimate, responsible, and duly constituted political or civil authority. Violence initiated by roving bands of dissidents, local warlords, terrorist cells, or private individuals therefore is not justified.

4. Public Declaration. There must be a formal, public declaration of war. This is designed not only to open to debate the judgment of whether the injury received warrants a violent resort to arms, but also to prohibit surprise attacks and thereby provide the opportunity for the offending state to change course and offer redress in lieu of war.

5. Proportionality with Limited Political Objectives. A war is ethically warranted only if its objectives are limited to a specific political end and if the good toward which the war is aimed is proportional to the original offense and to the destruction that the war is likely to cause. This principle is designed to prevent wars of annihilation and unbounded ambition. As such, it also makes the important point that the ethical component of *consequences* must be taken into consideration in addition to *intentions*.

6. Reasonable Chance of Success. Given the destruction, pain, and death that it will cause, the use of force in war is ethically justified only if it is likely that it will succeed in achieving the limited objectives for which it is fought. This pragmatic and prudent condition, like the one that precedes it, is interested in consequences and seeks to prevent futile causes, grandiose plans, or completely heedless actions by leaders who would lash out in blind fury recklessly steering a nation into suicidal war, or into what Clausewitz called "something pointless and devoid of sense."

7. Last Resort. Even if these several conditions can be met, however, a war still cannot be considered just unless every possibility of resolving the conflict first by reasonable nonviolent measures short of war has been exhausted. These include such diplomatic efforts as crisis management, negotiation, arbitration, mediation, peaceful settlement of disputes, or persuasion through economic coercion and sanctions. If these do not succeed, and if there is no indication that future attempts will fare any better, it amounts to a confession that conventional diplomacy has failed, and that war has become, in fact, the "last resort" or the "final arbiter."

The second component of the just war tradition is that of *jus in bello*, or **justice in war**. This element is designed for those engaged in actually fighting war. It is also the one that has attracted the most serious attention, in part because this is where the offenses are most easily seen. Indeed, it serves as the basis of the entire corpus of international humanitarian law (IHL), also known as the law of war or the law of armed conflict, created to restrain or limit the extent of human suffering caused during warfare. It emerged out of the dangerous excesses from historical experience in which leaders claimed that "no rules" applied to them because their end justified any means necessary for victory. The famous military Lieber Code of 1863 in the United States strongly reacted to this argument by stating precisely and directly: "Men who take up arms against one another in public war do not cease on this account to be moral beings, responsible to one another and to God."

In order to thus avoid fighting unjustly, two principal criteria have been designed to restrain the actual conduct and savagery of war:

1. Noncombatant Immunity. It may seem extraordinary that the objective of protecting lives and human rights would be taken so seriously when extreme violence and deliberate killing are such integral features of warfare. Nevertheless, even in the midst of war, brutality can be restrained by distinguishing legitimate from illegitimate targets of intentional attack. In this regard, the use of armed force can be justified only if it is directed against an adversary's political leadership and military forces actively engaged in hostilities. Every effort must be made, consequently, to avoid demonizing an entire population by protecting those not participating in the fighting.

This is accomplished by making a critical distinction between *combatants* and *noncombatants*. In the first instance, such a differentiation is made by recognizing the existence of civilians who are not engaged in fighting and the necessity of protecting them. When it is not made (as when innocent civilians are deliberately targeted) or when it cannot be made (as when using weapons of mass destruction, which by their very nature are indiscriminate), the military action is considered unjustified. By the same token, the unrestrained slaughter of populations, violence and sieges against civilian targets, rape as an instrument of war, seizing of hostages, and the forced conscription of child soldiers thus are ethically impermissible. In fact, it is the widespread revulsion against any violations in these cases that has led to specific international norms and explicit treaties addressing genocide, war crimes, and crimes against humanity.

The second dimension involves making a distinction between combatants actually engaged in combat and those who are no longer actively fighting. These include those who are wounded orcaptured, as well as those who have surrendered and become prisoners of war. According to the Geneva Conventions, signed by almost every nation in the world, such persons are entitled to food, medical attention, and just treatment, including prohibitions against cruel punishment, enslavement, and torture.

2. Proportionality with Limited Military Means. In order to establish how much force is justified, the means used in the prosecution of a war must be proportionate to the ends for which the war is being fought. Leaders must refrain from wanton destruction by avoiding an excessive use of force in overkill that will inflict more loss of life and more damage than is necessary or congruent with what is actually at stake. Military actions, in other words, must use only the minimum level of force necessary to achieve the limited objectives of the war.

In recent years, and based on lessons from historical experience, a number of theorists and practitioners alike have proposed adding a third category to the theory of just war called *jus post bellum*, or **justice after war**. This is designed for those who are victorious in war. If ethical responsibilities are applied to the beginning and the middle of wars, they argue, then why not to the end? Here, attention is focused on normative restraints addressing conditions of surrender, war termination, treatment of prisoners and defeated civilian populations, and—of particular importance—postwar peacemaking itself. Since ethics deal with the relationship between behavior and the well-being of others, then do victors have any ethical obligation to those among the vanquished? The issue here is whether there should

be retributive justice or restorative justice. Should the victors exploit their opportunity to "even the score," demand "an eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth," seize whatever spoils of war they can get, impose suffering on those who made them suffer, and unleash vengeance to "repay the wrong," as occurred at the Paris Peace Conference? Or, given the fact that the more punitive the settlement the more insistent will the the demand to overturn it, should they seek some measure of limited retribution, postwar rehabilitation, restorative reconstruction, and reconciliation in order to assist defeated former enemies in reestablishing themselves as cooperating partners in the international community to establish a more durable peace, as the victors did at the Congress of Vienna and with the treatment of West Germany and Japan after the Second World War?

It is important to acknowledge that these normative values of the just war tradition are often fiercely debated and do not come without controversies, competing interpretations, ethical ambiguities, and serious difficulties. In fact, they can be cynically abused and self-righteously evoked, are not always capable of precise measurement, and are fraught with theoretical, practical, and political challenges when being applied within specific contexts. Who decides, for example, what is a genuine "right intention," the "legitimate authority," orwhat is truly "the last resort" in a given situation? Or, given the fact that modern weapons of mass destruction could annihilate masses of any state's population at an instant, can one engage in anticipatory or even preventive self-defense instead of waiting until actually attacked? Or, under exactly what circumstances is it justified to use force against another state in the name of humanitarian intervention to protect victims of human rights abuses? Or, what norms should apply when fighting in "new warfare" not against other states but rather against nonstate adversaries such as terrorists, insurgents, or warlords with completely different values who have no compulsion about violating the prohibitions against surprise attacks and killing innocent civilians?

Despite such challenges, however, these norms have an impact on force and statecraft by creating ever-tighter limits on the use of armed force. They are not used so much as arguments to "justify" violent acts when it is so easy to consider oneself wronged, or to provide a basis to condemn the acts of others, but rather to provide a guide or framework for analysis and principled standards for serious internalized reflection and restraint on oneself when making choices about war.

It is for these reasons that they are given such prominence in the Report of the United Nations High Level Panel on Threats, Challenges, and Change entitled *A More Secure World: Our Shared Responsibility*, which discusses criteria for the legitimate use of force, and why they now are regularly taught at most military and naval academies, including West Point and Annapolis. They serve as the basis for the legal restraints imposed by the U.S. Uniform Code of Military Justice, standards for the "Responsibility to Protect," the embedding of judge advocates within military command structures, formal international "laws of war" and "rules of engagement" (ROEs), and the expansion in the number and scope of international courts and tribunals to enforce limitations on the use of violence. The systematic delineation of the norms of armed conflict in the Geneva Conventions and their more recent protocols have been incorporated into U.S. law by the War Crimes and Criminal Procedure Act of 1996. These require taking responsibility for the

humane treatment of prisoners of war, protecting civilians, and caring for the sick and the wounded, explicitly doing so in the name of "the laws of humanity and the dictates of the public conscience."

This point has been reinforced most recently and poignantly by a special study commissioned by the former chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff entitled *Lessons Encountered: Learning from the Long War* designed to explore what lessons can be learned from America's wars in Afghanistan and Iraq. With unvarnished candor, it discusses at length the critical importance of respecting and following domestic and international law governing the use of force and the conduct of military operations. The study specifically addresses issues of justice of war, including just cause, legitimate authority, limited objectives, and the proportionality of harm inflicted relative to the good toward which the wars are aimed. It also treats issues of justice in war, including the humane treatment and detention of prisoners of war, prohibitions against torture, proportionality to avoid the excessive use of force, and the sharp distinction that must be drawn between combatants and noncombatants, stating unequivocally that "civilians may not be targeted." "If the United States is seen as violating these norms," the report continues, "it damages US standing and undercuts the legitimacy of our policy." One of the major lessons to be learned, the study concludes, is that whenever issues about the use of armed force in statecraft occur, it is imperative that there be "a firm moral-ethical component," thereby advising all senior military officers explicitly and directly: "maintain your moral compass."

Moreover, the extent to which these consensual norms and ethical restraints have been widely accepted is evident by the opprobrium or sense of moral outrage elicited when it is perceived that flagrant violations occur. That is, certain acts—regardless of the justice of the cause, the interests of the state, the claims of military exigency, or the confusion of battle—are seen as going beyond the limits of what is ethically acceptable. One can see this by the widespread condemnation of repugnant atrocities of the My Lai massacre in Vietnam, Saddam Hussein's use of chemical weapons against the Kurds, "ethnic cleansing" in Bosnia and Croatia under orders from Slobodan Milosevic, attacks by terrorists who prey on women and children, the bloody assaults by Muammar Gaddafi in Libya and Bashir al-Assad in Syria against their own people, and the overwhelming brutality of ISIS jihadists when beheading or setting victims on fire.

Such outrage generated by the violation of ethical norms in war also can be seen by the nearly universal condemnation of the United States when using "extraordinary rendition" of "enemy combatants" to clandestine "black sites" to engage in "enhanced interrogation" outside the rule of law. The release of graphic photographs of abuse and torture at the naval base of Guantanamo Bay in Cuba and at Abu Ghraib prison in Iraq, and then the news of soldiers in Afghanistan killing civilians and desecrating their bodies made the reaction even worse. In fact, they prompted Justice Sandra Day O'Connor to invoke the principle of *jus in bello* by pointedly writing in *Hamdi v. Rumsfeld*: "a state of war is not a blank check for the President."

These ethical norms and their broader sense of limits and responsibilities on occasion become so powerful that they influence the consciences of military leaders themselves to the extent that they actually refuse to obey direct orders from

their state. German field marshal Erwin Rommel, for example, chose to burn rather than follow Hitler's written command that all Allied soldiers not be taken as prisoners of war, but be "slaughtered to the last man." One thinks of the Israeli intelligence officers in Unit 8200, soldiers, elite commandos, and fighter pilots who have joined the "Courage to Refuse" and "Breaking the Silence" movements in order to bear witness to their values by speaking out and refusing to participate in military missions against Palestinians living in the West Bank and Gaza. "In the past we fought for a just cause," they declared, "[but today] we have reached the boundary of oppressing other people." Moreover, they argue, attacks in these occupied territories must be regarded as "illegal and immoral" because they inflict death upon civilians.

It is exactly these kinds of ethical judgments and normative values that have motivated so many statesmen and citizens in recent years to work toward the development of international criminal law. They have believed that the lessons of history are sufficiently convincing when it comes to atrocities perpetrated in war by unrestrained and unscrupulous leaders who are allowed to hide with impunity behind the shield of national sovereignty. For this reason they have worked to establish a standard and rule of law that holds those who violate widely accepted ethical norms personally responsible for their actions.

Decisions rendered at the International Military Tribunal at Nuremberg and at the International Military Tribunal for the Far East in Tokyo following the Second World War, and the subsequent articulation of the widely acclaimed "Nuremberg Principles," established an important precedent in this regard. They declared that "just following orders" would no longer serve as a sufficient or legitimate defense for ethically reprehensible actions that violated what the prosecution described as "the moral sense of mankind." These principles have been explicitly incorporated into the manuals for the U.S. army, navy, and air force, making clear that members of the armed forces have not only a duty to obey all legal orders—but a duty to disobey all illegal orders. They also were cited by United Nations Security Council when it created criminal tribunals for the former Yugoslavia in 1993 and for Rwanda in 1994. A further indication of the widespread acceptance of these normative standards for armed force can be seen in the fact that 122 states have become parties to the Treaty of Rome creating the first permanent and independent International Criminal Tribunal to try those accused of war crimes, crimes against humanity, and genocide. These particular atrocities, revealingly stated in the preamble to the text, "deeply shock the conscience of mankind."

This search for limits and prohibitions against crossing unacceptable thresholds emerges with particular starkness with the element of technology. One of the reasons that modern weapons of mass destruction generate so much debate about ethical issues is the fact that they have lost their traditional capacity to remain limited instruments of policy by other means. Their horrifying capabilities starkly violate the restraints of protecting innocents and proportionality. Nuclear, biological, and chemical weapons simply cannot be controlled, cannot discriminate between combatants and noncombatants, and cannot maintain any rational relationship between massive annihilation and limited political objectives. Thus, concludes scholar Michael Walzer in his book *Just and Unjust Wars*: "Nuclear weapons explode the theory of just war. They are the first of mankind's technological

innovations that are simply not encompassable within the familiar moral world." It is for this reason that there are those today who work so diligently to go beyond the familiar in order to establish new norms for precisely these kinds of weapons.

The existence of the many ethical restraints that we have discussed, as well as those currently being developed, of course, most certainly provides no guarantee that they will be consistently honored or that decision makers will give them conscientious attention and adequate weight when making choices about force and statecraft. Historical experience indicates that fierce rivalries and violence are never easy to restrain, and international relations do not always lend themselves to simple moral verdicts. Adversaries do exist, agreements can be violated, self-imposed restraints can be exploited, and some leaders have a very poorly developed sense of conscience or moral responsibility. Wars continue to be fought, ethical quandaries among competing values persist, complexities and ambiguities remain, and perhaps more questions about ethics are raised than are answered.

Nevertheless, the very fact that such standards have been created—and continue to be developed—in the face of these enormous challenges bears remarkable testimony to the long-standing and enduring human desire to find limits that might restrain destructive competition and brutal violence. There are times, as we have seen, when they possess a power of their own and provide genuine restraints, as analyzed most recently by anthropologist Richard Wrangham in *The Goodness Paradox: The Strange Relationship Between Virtue and Violence in Human Evolution*, by cognitive psychologist Steven Pinker in *The Better Angels of Our Nature: Why Violence Has Declined*, and by political scientist Joshua Goldstein in *Winning the War on War: The Decline of Armed Conflict Worldwide*. Yet, even when they do not, their very existence provides valuable reminders of how leaders should act. They remind us of the legitimacy and of the necessity of asking serious questions about ends, means, and consequences of policy in the world and give us a basis of judgment that can serve as a safeguard against the tendency to engage in all-too-easy rationalizations, narrow definitions of interests and security, hypocrisy, or moral self-deception. In this regard, and as we shall see in the Conclusion that follows, there are reasons to believe that ethical restraints on force and statecraft—particularly in our own age of weapons of mass destruction and terrorism—may become even more important in the future than they ever have been in the past.

SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER EXPLORATION

The fascinating, but challenging, matter of ethics in statecraft is discussed in Joseph S. Nye, Jr., *Do Morals Matter?* (New York, 2020); Mark Amstutz, *International Ethics* (Lanham, MD, 2018 ed.); Robert W. McElroy, *Morality and American Foreign Policy* (Princeton, 2016 ed.); Cathal Nolan (ed.), *Ethics and Statecraft* (Westport, CT, 2015 ed.); Gordon Graham, *Ethics and International Relations* (Oxford, 2008 ed.); Douglas Johnston (ed.), *Faith-Based Diplomacy* (New York, 2003); the special issue of *Orbis*, 42 (Spring 1998) on "Faith and Statecraft"; and Stanley Hoffmann, *Duties Beyond Borders* (Syracuse, NY, 1981). Recent scholarship appears in the journal *Ethics and International Affairs* and on the Carnegie Council on Ethics and International Affairs' website at www.cceia.org.

Some earlier studies still remain highly relevant to contemporary problems, including Hans Morgenthau, *Politics Among Nations* (New York, 1978 ed.); Hedley Bull, *The Anarchical Society* (London, 1977); E. H. Carr, *The Twenty Years' Crisis* (New York, 1964 ed.); Arnold Wolfers, "Statesmanship and Moral Choice," in his *Discord and Collaboration* (Baltimore, 1962); Reinhold Niebuhr, *Moral Man and Immoral Society* (New York, 1932); and Niccolò Machiavelli, *The Prince* and *Discourses*, in various editions.

For particular aspects of ethics and statecraft, see the Human Development Reports at www.undp.org; the journal *Human Rights Quarterly*; Paul Gordon Lauren, *The Evolution of International Human Rights* (Philadelphia, 2011 ed.); Lyn Boyd-Judson, *Strategic Moral Diplomacy* (Sterling, VA, 2011); Andrew Hurrell, *On Global Order* (New York, 2008); Ian Clark, *International Legitimacy and World Society* (New York, 2007); Thomas Frank, "The Power of Legitimacy and the Legitimacy of Power," *American Journal of International Law*, 100 (January, 2006): 88–106; United Nations High Level Panel on Threats, Challenges, and Change, *A More Secure World* (New York, 2004); Paul Gordon Lauren (ed.), *The China Hands' Legacy: Ethics and Diplomacy* (Boulder, CO, 1987); Paul Gordon Lauren, "Ethics and Intelligence," in Al Maurer et al. (eds.), *Intelligence* (Boulder, CO, 1985); Alexander L. George, "Domestic Constraints on Regime Change in U.S. Foreign Policy," in Ole Holsti (ed.), *Change in the International System* (Boulder, CO, 1980); and Gordon A. Craig, *From Bismarck to Adenauer* (New York, 1965 ed.).

Ethical restraints in war are treated in Ralph Janik, *International Law and the Use of Force* (New York, 2019); Christine Gray, *International Law and the Use of Force* (New York, 2018 ed.); Marc Weller (ed.), *The Oxford Handbook on the Use of Force in International Law* (Oxford, 2017 ed.); J. Martin Rochester, *The New Warfare: Rethinking Rules for an Unruly World* (New York, 2016); Richard Hooker, Jr. and Joseph Collins (eds.), *Lessons Encountered: Learning from the Long War* (Washington, D.C., 2015); Steven Lee, *Ethics and War* (Cambridge, UK, 2012); Karl Marlantes, *What It Is Like to Go to War* (New York, 2011); David Perry, *Partly Cloudy: Ethics in War, Espionage, Covert Action, and Interrogation* (Lanham, MD, 2009); the influential Michael Walzer, *Just and Unjust Wars* (New York, 2006 ed.); Larry May, Eric Rovie, and Steve Viner, *The Morality of War* (Upper Saddle River, NJ, 2006); Arthur Holmes (ed.), *War and Christian Ethics* (Grand Rapids, MI, 2005 ed.); the thought-provoking Jean Bethke Elshtain, *Just War Against Terror* (New York, 2004); Paul Christopher, *The Ethics of War and Peace* (Upper Saddle River, NJ, 2004 ed.); Paul Gordon Lauren, "From Impunity to Accountability," in Ramesh Thakur and Peter Malcontent (eds.), *From Sovereign Impunity to International Accountability* (Tokyo, 2004); Ward Thomas, *The Ethics of Destruction: Norms and Force in International Relations* (Ithaca, NY, 2001); Terry Nardin (ed.), *The Ethics of War and Peace* (Princeton, 1998 ed.); Joseph S. Nye, Jr., *Nuclear Ethics* (New York, 1986); and Gordon Zahn, *In Solitary Witness* (New York, 1965). See also "Laws of War" at the Avalon Project at www.avalon.law.yale.edu; and the American Society for International Law at www.asil.org.

Those exploring historical cases that demonstrate some of the challenges of ethical restraints in force and statecraft will find much in Lieber's Code of Military Conduct (1863), efforts to create the International Committee of the Red Cross and humanitarian law (1864), the Declaration of St. Petersburg (1868), the

Brussels Declaration (1874), the foreign policies of William Gladstone (1868–1894), the "Martens Clause" (1899), Woodrow Wilson (1913–1921), the "Nuremberg Principles" (1946), Jimmy Carter (1977–1981), Nelson Mandela (1994–1999), U Thant as United Nations Secretary-General (1961–1971), and the negotiations creating the International Criminal Court (1994-1998). Some of the ethical dilemmas of humanitarian intervention can be seen in the United Nations–sanctioned military action in Somalia (1992–1995) and the NATO campaigns against Serbia on behalf of Kosovo (1999) and against Libya (2011). Those interested in competing moral claims in war will find intense arguments surrounding the Allied bombing of Dresden (1945), America's decisions to drop nuclear bombs on Hiroshima and Nagasaki (1945) and to engage in the Vietnam War (1961–1973), the Israeli-Palestinian Gaza wars (2008–2009, 2012, and 2014), and how to pursue the "global war on terror" (2001 – present).

Conclusion

Reflections on Force and Statecraft and the Challenges of Our Time

Those responsible for the momentous decisions of statecraft, as discussed throughout this book, have struggled from the very beginning with finding ways to survive. In a world where war and violence are always present or possible, they have learned that peace and security are always at great risk and that the challenges facing them can be agonizingly difficult. There are times when efforts to deal with international conflicts and competition by peaceful means of rational persuasion succeed—and times when they do not. Sometimes armed force appears to be the only language that certain leaders seem to understand. In these circumstances, force becomes a necessary instrument of policy. But even then, there are times when threats or uses of violence have been not only ineffective but actually counterproductive by seriously aggravating rivalries and even triggering wars that might otherwise have been avoided.

The challenges of these dilemmas are visually portrayed with remarkable insight in the allegorical statue *Diplomacy*. It is well to look again at this perceptive visual image, appearing on the cover of this book, and now to consider its meaning more fully. The figure possesses an obvious depth of dignity and strength. Her facial expression and body posture reveal that she is somber, reflective, and deep in thought. She seems to have an unusual understanding of the magnitude and the weight of the decisions she must make. Her right arm is uncovered and in her hand she holds an olive branch of peace, poised over treatises of thought and human reason, documents of law, treaties signed in partnership with others, and books on ethical precepts. At exactly the same time, her left arm is draped with her garment and her hand is clasped around the hilt of a sword, to be threatened or used should armed force become necessary. She appears to appreciate not only the fact that each of these instruments possesses *power*—but that each possesses *limitations* as well. As she weighs the appropriate balance between these different means or tools of influence within the larger international balance between partnership and rivalry in the circumstances, she also seems to know that she will be scrutinized for whatever decision she reaches. Her seriousness conveys her understanding that the possession of significant power comes with significant responsibilities. To make it all the more poignant, she appears to be pregnant, and thus acutely aware that her

choices on force and statecraft will have consequences—perhaps spelling the difference between life and death—not only for the immediate well-being of others, but for future generations as well.

The perceptiveness of this image, of course, comes from the fact that it portrays real life. Her challenges are ours. Throughout history, policymakers caught between necessity and danger have found themselves compelled to make decisions about that olive branch and that sword. Most have come to the conclusion that the decision was not a simplistic choice between one or the other, but rather a much more complicated one of how these elements should be combined and used together in appropriate measure. Toward this end, they have experimented over time in partnership in creating a wide variety of diplomatic means and international systems to keep their rivalries within certain bounds and to devise ways of restraining armed force. Their experiences, their successes, and their failures provide not only ways to understand the past, but instructive lessons as to what we might expect in the diplomatic challenges of force and statecraft that confront us in our own time and in the future.

Leaders throughout history, for example, have been forced to learn—sometimes through painful personal experience—that diplomacy is indeed the art of the possible, not the perfect. The desirable must be brought into line with the feasible, and sometimes this is severely limited. What is possible, or attainable, is dependent on the particular conditions of the time, or historical context. That is, the skills and personalities of individual people, the relative power and interests of other states, the structure of the international system, the level of technology, attitudes toward partnership and rivalry, and prevailing ethical norms, among other factors at any given point in time, play absolutely critical roles in determining what can and cannot be done. This is one of the reasons why it is so important for those interested in and/or responsible for foreign affairs to carefully study history in such a way as to learn about continuities and changes and to develop the ability to analyze the role of people, process, possibilities, patterns, perspective, and proportion. There are valuable lessons to be gained thereby—some of which may be remarkably applicable to a situation or case that arises, and some of which may not, depending on the context.

This context-dependent feature of the lessons of history also applies to theories or conceptual models of statecraft. Theoretical principles generally are developed in order to explain and understand those behavioral characteristics demonstrating patterns, or continuities, that appear to be valid across cases. The delineation of these principles for such important subjects as negotiation, deterrence, coercive diplomacy, crisis management, and ethical restraints thus provides extremely useful tools of analysis and diagnosis. In fact, at times these may offer considerable assistance, insights, and policy-relevant guidance to decision makers. On other occasions, the usefulness of these principles may be less so. They cannot simply be taken off a shelf and superimposed upon each and every circumstance and somehow assumed to be policy. As we saw in our discussions of structured, focused comparisons, each case study possesses both similarities to and differences from the others. The task is to develop the skills necessaryfor critical thinking to make discerning judgments about continuity and change and to appreciate that the degree of relevance for theory in any given case is once again dependent on context.

In this regard, there is no broad or sweeping context more important to the challenges of our time than the diplomatic revolution. As we explored in some detail, around the turn of the previous century, certain forces began to transform features of the classical system of diplomacy. Through time, these became even more pronounced, creating some changes that made statecraft easier and others that made it infinitely more complicated. These dynamics continue to this day and, for this reason, will greatly shape the challenges ahead.

One of these changes emerged with the number and nature of actors within the international system. At one time, only five states, known as the Great Powers of Europe, roughly equal in strength and arranged in a balance of power, made and enforced the decisions for all the rest. As a result of the upheaval of two world wars, the process of decolonization, and the breakup of the Soviet Union, that number increased tremendously. Today, there are nearly 200 nation-states, each with its own interests and perspectives, each claiming the prerogatives of national sovereignty, and each demanding to participate in international affairs. These are not at all equal. They vary greatly in size, strength, and influence, ranging from the smallest of countries to the United States and China with global reaches.

But the number of nation-states alone does not tell the whole story. During the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries there were no structural mechanisms designed to manage diplomatic relations, and during the nineteenth century the Concert of Europe existed with a mere five members. But today nation-states belong to a vast array of intergovernmental organizations, alliances, and associations that also play roles as actors in their own right in international relations. Every state, for example, is a member of the United Nations and its specialized agencies. Most hold membership in the World Trade Organization and are parties to the monitoring bodies created by human rights treaties. Many participate in elaborate alliance systems stretching from the North Atlantic to Latin America and Southeast Asia. A total of fifty-seven are members of the Organization for Security and Cooperation in Europe, the largest security-centered association in the world. Some participate in regional groups like the European Union, the Organization of American States, the Arab League, the Shanghai Cooperation Organization, the African Union, or partnerships like the G-7 and G-20. The collective interests of the members of these various organizations enable them to leverage their power in partnership, with the result that the whole often becomes greater than the mere sum of its parts.

At the same time, challenges continue to be presented by the expansion in the number of nonstate actors. Following the Treaty of Westphalia in 1648, the only actors recognized within the international arena were nation-states. They alone possessed sufficient power to threaten the security of the others. This is no longer the case. Indeed, there are many actors today who are not states at all but who actually disdain them, are capable of challenging claims of absolute national sovereignty, and have the ability to create an enormous impact on global affairs. There are transnational corporations and international crime syndicates, for example, that possess far greater financial resources than many national governments and are able to make their power felt in economics and in politics. Virtually thousands of nongovernmental organizations (NGOs) with worldwide objectives continue to expand in numbers, size, and influence, particularly in the areas of international human rights and environmental protection. Added to these are a growing number

of mercenaries and largely unregulatedprivatized military and security companies (PMSCs) that provide training, logistics, intelligence, and even combat support in war zones under contract to the highest bidder. Along with arms dealers, they reveal a convergence of interest between those who make money and those who make war. Moreover, there are the particularly dangerous, transnational nonstate actors of terrorist networks, like ISIS and al-Qaeda and their affiliates, capable of causing great damage, inflicting pain, sowing fear, and thereby seriously challenging even the most powerful of nation-states.

The impact of these nonstate actors and this diffusion of power in more hands on international relations is also a reflection of yet another feature of the diplomatic revolution: the growing role of domestic political pressures and public opinion. Diplomacy in the time of the classical system was regarded as the exclusive domain of government officials and professional diplomats. According to their defenders, they acted in privacy and with discretion for flexibility that would advance their national interest. According to their critics, they acted in secrecy to promote their own self-interests or hide decisions that might lead their countries into armed conflict. The tension between these two positions reached an explosion point during the First World War with popular cries for "democratic control" and a more open "New Diplomacy." It continues with even greater force in our own day, especially with the expansion of well-organized pressure groups, transnational civil society, and democratic governments, as well as the technological means of influence available to them. This certainly challenges those responsible for statecraft to be ever mindful of opinion and explains why so much attention is now devoted to what is called "eDiplomacy," "cultural diplomacy," and "public diplomacy." Its impact is felt in the use of armed force as well, for as General Wesley Clark writes about the Kosovo campaign in *Waging Modern War*:

> The weight of public opinion was doing to us what the Serb air defense system had failed to do: limit our strikes. The impact of this hasn't been lost on military or political leaders . . . [F]or sustained operations, public support will be essential. This, in turn, can only be gained by accepting the restraints of public opinion and sensibilities on future operations.

Other challenges are presented by changes in the geographical extent and scope of international relations itself. The focus of attention throughout the classical system of diplomacy was on the continent of Europe, and statesmen could enjoy the relative simplicity of a small number of culturally homogeneous actors. But powerful historical forces have transformed this Eurocentric system into something different, bringing North America, Asia, the Middle East, Latin America, Africa, and the Pacific increasingly into global affairs and into a complex and heterogeneous system of truly global scale. One of the challenges of our time, therefore, is the necessity of developing an understanding of the resulting diversity of cultures, political and social systems, perspectives, and voices in the world today.

Such a process of expansion and extension has been accompanied by growing interaction and integration, or by what is described as "complex interdependence" and "globalization." The world is becoming increasingly interconnected, and what affects the people of one state affects those of another over many issues and at a variety of levels. Virtually no country can remain uninvolved or untouched and, in

this age of mutual vulnerability and the "indivisibility of security," any search for the security of one's own country alone is a strategy sure to fail.

This explains why there is such a growing realization that states *need* each other's help in solving shared problems. Self-interests thus are becoming more connected with collective interests. The results bring not only benefits, but also serious challenges—to the human security of individual people, the security of nation-states, and the security of the international system as a whole.

In a recent and fascinating report entitled *Worldwide Threat Assessment of the U.S. Intelligence Community*, Director of National Intelligence Daniel Coats presents striking evidence of the diverse array of challenges that now confront us in our interdependent, contemporary world. Under the broad heading of "Global Threats," he describes the persistence of adversaries and strategic competitors, the proliferation of weapons of mass destruction, space-based weapons, cyberattacks, terrorist networks taking advantage of failed or collapsed states and civil wars, and the rise of violent ethno-supremacists and ultranationalist extremists. He continues by analyzing the shared global threats posed by trade wars, high debt levels, economic vulnerabilities and disparities in wealth, transnational organized crime, and the technologies of 5G wireless networks and of artificial intelligence systems that imitate aspects of human cognition. He also observes the threats presented by competition that "is increasingly about values"—a subject to which we will return shortly.

But his analysis does not stop there. Director Coats goes on to discuss a special category of global threats that he and professional intelligence officers describe as those that threaten "Human Security." Here he treats human rights abuses, prolonged humanitarian crises and political upheavals that create the swelling flood of refugees, deadly infectious diseases such as Ebola, resource depletion, and environmental degradation. It is here that he also presents the challenges of climate change as a clear and present security threat, reinforcing earlier assessments from the Central Intelligence Agency's Center on Climate Change and National Security and the report from the Pentagon declaring, "Climate change will affect the Department of Defense's ability to defend the Nation and poses immediate risks to U.S. national security." He points out that higher temperatures, extreme weather, droughts, floods, wildfires, melting ice, and sea level rise are intensifying. These act as threat multipliers that increase the risks of damaging communication, energy, and transportation infrastructures; place low-lying military and naval bases at risk; exacerbate water and food insecurity and the competition for ever-scarcer resources; and inflict distress that will cause political instability, social unrest, economic poverty, human displacement, starvation, and loss of life.

When confronting precisely the shared nature of this extraordinary range of global threats, Kofi Annan observed,

> Depending upon wealth, geography, and power we perceive different threats as the most pressing. But the truth is that we cannot afford to choose. Collective security today depends on accepting that the threats which each region of the world perceives as most urgent are in fact equally so for all. In our globalized world, the threats we face are interconnected . . . [and] whatever threatens one threatens all.

The wisdom of these insights became painfully evident when the coronavirus known as COVID-19 unleashed a global pandemic in 2020. Starting simply with "Patient Zero" in Wuhan, China, this highly contagious disease spread with the ferocity of uncontrolled wildfire. As with the influenza called the Spanish Flu of 1918–1919 that infected an estimated one-third of the world's population, people quickly realized that their borders could not protect them from dangers originating in far-away lands, or from a virus impervious to the political claims of national sovereignty or the physical power of military force. Victims ranged without discrimination from the famous and well-connected to the marginalized and homeless in Asia, Europe, the United States and Canada, the Middle East, Central and South America, the Pacific region, and then Africa. Coronavirus struck those in democracies as well as autocracies and theocracies. It caused massive infections, hospitalizations, and deaths, exhausting available medical supplies and overwhelming health care systems. As the pandemic escalated, it led to the collapse of international financial markets, economic recession, unemployment, dislocations in the distribution of food, and diminished trust in many institutions and leaders. In attempts to contain the spread of the virus, sweeping lockdowns and quarantines were imposed on specific individuals, groups, entire populations, businesses, factories, airports and seaports, schools, and universities, disrupting and destroying anticipated routines. The cumulative unpredictability in daily life as well as international affairs heightened a widespread sense of vulnerability, creating stress and a fear of broader insecurity on a truly globe-spanning scale.

In order to find collective ways to address these threats and challenges, with their potential for catastrophic consequences, it is necessary first to understand their nature. It is essential in this regard—especially in a book with the title of *Force and Statecraft*—to recognize that some of these threats clearly involve the possibility of war and military might, and others quite frankly do not. The security agenda is increasingly being broadened and extended and defined in multiple ways. Moreover, power itself cannot be reduced to a single, simplistic, or one-dimensional element. There can be little question that the "hard power" of armed force is one of these and will continue to be, as it has been throughout history, as long as there are those willing to stop at nothing, including war, to get what they want. But it is not the only measuring rod or expression of power. Economic strength, industrial capacity, control of strategic positions, natural resources, size of territory and population, and technological sophistication are others.

Power, by definition, is the ability to influence the behavior of others in order to achieve desired outcomes. It is a means, not an end in itself. These means are not confined exclusively to military and material capabilities that are easily observed and numerically measured. They also can be found in the "soft power" that attracts and builds in partnership rather than coerces or imposes in rivalry. This is power that *inspires* rather than *intimidates*. It is not some simplistic "feel good" or "nice thing to do," but rather statecraft at a highly sophisticated and nuanced level that focuses on interests as much as hard options, but recognizes the fact that power comes in different forms. These can be found in the attractiveness of political ideas and institutions, purpose, knowledge and the quality of education and medical care, language and culture, development assistance, music and sports, sense of responsibility, prestige and reputation within the international community, conformity

to the standards of legitimacy, respect shown to the opinions and interests of other nations, commitment to justice and the rule of law, keeping one's word and honoring one's promises, respect for freedom and human rights, and what is called the "moral force" or authority of ethical values. In fact, a measure of the actual power of these elements can be seen in the successes of many NGOs and by the extraordinary efforts exerted by some governments to silence and suppress them.

Given this extraordinary range, some of the ever-widening and global problems ahead simply do not lend themselves to the utility of crude armed force as the sole or even primary instrument of policy at all. Stated more directly: not all of the diplomatic challenges of our time are military problems; not all solutions, therefore, will be military solutions. Even Machiavelli, a hardened observer widely known for his brutal assessments of conflict and struggle in the world, acknowledged this fact. There are some objectives in statecraft, he stated in *Discourses*, that "neither arms nor the accouterments of war" can ever achieve, where certain instruments and actions can make "a much greater impression than an act of ferocity and violence."

It is always instructive to consider the judgments of those with great personal experience and historical knowledge in their fields. Sir Charles Webster provides a case in point. He began as a professor of history and then went on to serve the British government as a soldier, intelligence officer, military specialist, advisor, and diplomat through and beyond two world wars. He served on the General Staff of the War Office; in the Foreign Office; and on the official delegations to many of the efforts we have discussed, including the Paris Peace Conference, the San Francisco Conference, and the preparatory commission for the United Nations, focusing on the Security Council and political-military affairs. After a long and distinguished career, he reflected exactly on this issue of the nature and meaning of power. "In the long run," he concluded, those involved with force and statecraft must recognize that "power is a moral as well as a physical entity." James Baker, former U.S. secretary of state, elaborates on exactly this point by observing,

> Power comes in many forms economic and military might, group expectations and pressure, and most lastly, through ideas. And an American political diplomat should always remember that power divorced from the purposes valued by our democracy will ultimately prove empty.

A leading four-star American general, when confronting the fact that the most powerful military force in history could not achieve its goals by armed combat alone, also recently concluded: "We will never realize our objectives unless we wisely utilize our 'soft power' as well."

These challenges certainly will continue to be impacted by technology. So many of the changes in the diplomatic revolution, as we have seen, are the result of modern technological transformations that decrease distances, shorten time, and expand opportunities for international communication and interaction. Advances in transportation alone enable a person from one part of the world unprecedented mobility and speed to reach almost any other location within hours. They also enable political leaders to meet face to face with their counterparts or to completely bypass resident ambassadors and professional diplomats if they so desire.

At the same time, highly sophisticated satellites in orbit around the planet, unmanned reconnaissance drones, hyper-spectral sensors, computers and the

World Wide Web, fiber optics, nanosensors, wireless environments, smartphones, cameras, social networking sites, and file exchange and video sharing sites such as YouTube have created not only a "digital revolution" but an "information revolution" whose volume and velocity are simply staggering. This technology provides new instruments of statecraft that enable policymakers to collect, analyze, and use intelligence as never before. It also provides the capacity to treaty-monitoring bodies and NGOs to share information, images, and sounds that give voice to the voiceless by exposing flagrant human rights abusers in the act: to know almost immediately when a terrified girl in Pakistan is gang raped, when a dissident in China is jailed for speaking out on behalf of freedom of conscience, where government forces in Sudan seek to hide the bodies of hundreds of victims in mass graves, or when Turkish troops launch armed attacks against innocent Kurd civilians.

But there is significant irony here. The technological tools that make us more powerful at the same make us more vulnerable. The same tools in other hands with other purposes enable authoritarian governments to capture big data and algorithms from Twitter accounts, Facebook pages, and Google searches and then use them for social and political control of their populations. Moreover, our increased reliance on electronic devices places us at great risk to malware, spyware, hacking, and cyberattacks designed to disinform, disrupt, divide, and even destroy computer systems that control much of our economy, government, military capabilities, and personal lives.

The impact of technology is particularly evident when one examines the wide-ranging revolution in military affairs (RMA). It is the tiny microchip that makes possible today's sophisticated C^5ISR of command, control, communications, computers, combat systems, intelligence, surveillance, and reconnaissance. The ability to gather and process information and to use geospatial technology to identify precise locations and very specific targets, increase situational awareness (SA), and conduct operations with what is called "network-centric warfare" (NCW) that connects all assets on a given battlefield has never been greater in all of history. As one U.S. Air Force general recently boasted, with reference to the capabilities of a new-generation surveillance drone capable of transmitting live images to soldiers on the ground or to analysts tracking movements thousands of miles away: "We can see everything."

While these technological developments present both opportunities and challenges, the most serious ones for force and statecraft are nowhere more evident than in modern weapons themselves. During the classical system of diplomacy, the capabilities of the tools of warfare were extremely limited. Statesmen viewed war as controllable and, therefore, usable. It was serious enough that leaders might try to prevent it, but mild enough to enable them to invoke the threat or resort to force when necessary. This is why they considered force to be a legitimate and useful instrument of foreign policy—or, in the words of Clausewitz, "policy by other means."

But it is no longer as simple as this. At Waterloo in 1815 an infantryman could fire two or three times a minute, looking into the eyes of an enemy standing only a few yards away. It is estimated that in Napoleon's time it took a ton of lead to inflict a single casualty. At the Somme in 1916 the machine gun fired six hundred rounds a minute. The "Battle of the Drawing Boards" during the Second World War and then the closer melding of scientific discovery with weaponry during the Cold War accelerated this process even further. The capabilities of today's weapons from the RMA

on the ground, at sea, in the air, and from space against adversaries continents away are almost unbelievable. One analyst writes about the transformation in these words:

> Ever since soldiers have been shooting at each other, from slingshots to howitzers, most shots have missed. In the next war, most shots—at least those against important targets—will hit . . . Anything that moves, fires, is made of iron, emits light, sound, heat, or electronic radiation, uses electricity, or can be accurately plotted on a map, can be "seen" and then hit by sensors and weapons to which darkness means nothing.

In some ways, technological advances actually are making armed force more usable. Hypersonic missiles traveling several times faster than the speed of sound, for example, can penetrate any defensive system. Precision-guided munitions (PGMs), Stealth aircraft whose profiles and materials render them virtually invisible to radar, the Global Positioning System (GPS), satellite links, and unmanned aerial vehicles (UAVs) or drones relying on gigabytes of information make it possible to hit very specific targets with unprecedented accuracy in real time. One result of this development is the possibility of significant reduction in the amount of collateral damage and loss of life by combatants and by innocent civilians trapped in war zones.

Despite the obvious and tremendous advantage in sparing lives, however, there is growing concern that such precision weapons—and the ability to deliver some of them electronically in comfort by means of a joy stick at a computer console thousands of miles away from the danger of battlefields—may appear to lower the real practical and political costs of war and lead to an exaggerated overconfidence in glamorized high-tech armed force. In this way, the military option may become more tempting for policymakers to select, thereby blinding them to the need for realistic caution and use of armed force only as a "last resort," the possibilities of diplomacy and persuasion, the vulnerability to debilitating cyberattacks, or the dangers of overextension in asymmetrical wars against ill-equipped but nevertheless determined terrorists or insurgents fighting in unconventional ways.

Even more challenging is the fact that certain kinds of weapons technology fulfill the ultimate irony and tragedy of the "the fate of Nemesis" in which man was punished by fulfilling his wishes too completely. If there are dangers in having too little power, there also are dangers in having too much. Weapons exist today whose destructive capabilities cannot be controlled, cannot be confined in time or space, and cannot even distinguish between friend or foe. As such, they bear little or no proportion to rational objectives of policy. This feature, by its very nature, revolutionizes the calculus of the relationship between ends and means in statecraft.

Armed force remains, as it has been throughout history, and for better or worse, an absolutely necessary instrument of policy in a world in which threats and adversaries exist, especially when other efforts prove to be inadequate or unsuccessful. It can be threatened and used by individual nation-states, by coalitions, by regional alliances, or by the international community acting with United Nations authorization to address threats to peace. As we have seen, it can increase credibility in defensive deterrence and coercive diplomacy designed to protect peace and security or enhance negotiation and crisis management. It can be used to defend vital interests, to repel invaders, to protect allies and others under attack from aggressors, and to provide collective security in such a way as to maintain the

international system. It can be employed to establish stability, to police cease-fire and truce agreements in peacekeeping missions, and to furnish particular means for practical peacemaking and for preventive diplomacy. Moreover, armed force can be utilized to support normative values, to enforce the rule of law, and to shield the otherwise weak from oppression and abuse by the strong.

But armed force, as experience and the lessons of history demonstrate, is best used to check certain kinds of threats rather than to solve fundamental problems, for it entails some of the most serious challenges in all of statecraft. It is the most expensive and the most dangerous instrument of policy containing an inherent tension between the logic of war as a political act for limited objectives and the "logic of the instrument" of war itself, which stresses the use of force to destroy or render impotent an enemy's forces. As we have seen, the very existence of military force threatens others, creating "the security dilemma" in which states seeking to enhance their own security jeopardize the security of others, pushing them to respond in a spiral of escalatory countermeasures. This greatly increases tensions and the risks of escalation in any crisis.

Armed force also can be treacherously seductive for those leaders who mistakenly believe that military might alone will enable them to act as they wish and get what they want in the world and, therefore, that they somehow can substitute force for diplomacy. It can endanger delicate negotiations or crisis management. It can seriously threaten the existence of the international system when used offensively to coerce or intimidate opponents, to inflict pain and death, to launch wars of aggression, to conquer or exterminate, to overthrow legitimate governments, or to engage in terrorism against innocent civilians. Armed force cannot always be controlled and can create violent reactions, "blowback," and unintended consequences that may confound original expectations. In addition, a focus on having the biggest hammer has the tendency to make all problems look like a nail, even when they are not. Armedforce often can be inappropriate, ineffective, and even dangerously counterproductive. For all of these reasons, decisions about whether, how, and under what circumstances military power is used can be the most fateful that any leader can possibly make.

This explains why so many of those who have practiced statecraft in the past have reached the conclusion that power comes in different forms and that armed force must be seen as *one* among *several* instruments of policy. The hands of the statue *Diplomacy* simultaneously hold multifaceted tools for exactly this reason. The major challenge—as it always has been—is to avoid the idea that one instrument can somehow stand completely alone or that there is a simplistic, dichotomous, either/or choice between "hard power" and "soft power." To do this, those responsible for statecraft instead must exercise "smart power" by intelligently and prudently knowing how to use all of the available assets and resources, how to harness and coordinate them in combination, how to appreciate their strengths as well as their limitations, how to mobilize them as means to fit feasible and sustainable objectives, and how to keep them in appropriate proportion as particular circumstances require.

It is when there is an overreliance on only a single instrument and the balance gets out of proportion that thoughtful policymakers become deeply worried. This is what lies behind President (and former five-star general and Supreme Allied Commander) Dwight Eisenhower's admonishment about "overgrown military establishments" and a "military-industrial complex" with a vested interest in armed

force capable of distorting the requirements of policy. More recently, former secretary of defense (and former CIA director) Robert Gates publicly declared that America's military costs are untenable and decried the Pentagon's "culture of endless money." The United States currently spends more than the military budgets of the next highest seven countries combined, accounting for nearly 40 percent of the total world's military expenditures. To see these expenses in a somewhat different perspective, Gates joined with former secretary of state Condoleezza Rice in pointing out that the United States spends more money for musicians in its military marching bands than it does for diplomats in its foreign service.

Other leaders with vast experience in force and statecraft have made the same point about balance and proportion. When the White House recently proposed giving massive budgetary increases for the Department of Defense while at the same time making drastic cuts for the Department of State, more than 120 former generals and admirals collectively condemned the proposal. They warned that today's challenges require skilled diplomats and "all tools to succeed" in the modern security environment. Moreover, they noted that the lessons of history teach that it is diplomacy—not the military—that provides the first line of defense.

Policymakers can expect to be confronted with these challenges and the difficult choices that they entail in the future as they have in the past, but with the full knowledge that the dangers become even more acute when some of those tools include weapons of mass destruction. Technology and scientific discoveries have vastly increased the capacity to kill millions of people with relative ease, suddenness, and terrifying efficiency. Indeed, we now possess enough destructive power to extinguish life as we know it from the face of the earth. There would be no victor in any meaningful sense of the word, for "victory" would be indistinguishable from "defeat."

This fact raises profound questions about the utterly disproportionate relationship between ends and means and whether any conceivable political objective can possibly justify their use. To make matters worse, even weak and economically collapsed states and nonstate actors like terrorists can acquire relatively inexpensive chemical, biological, and radiological weapons. More resources are required to procure nuclear capabilities, yet they are still within reach of even impoverished and starving countries like North Korea. Moreover, not all of these weapons require sophisticated missiles for delivery. Some may be easily concealed and taken to targets with deadly accuracy by airplanes, cars, boats, or backpacks, thereby penetrating the defenses of even the strongest of states. The immense perils posed by these weapons of mass destruction, including their accidental or unauthorized use, of course, are not limited to their use by terrorists or rogue states—but by all who possess them.

Some measure of the magnitude of these dangers can be seen in the fear that they generate even among those who actually stockpiled and prepared to use them. Intensely fearful that the world is currently hanging on a precipitous "tipping point" of possible disaster, for example, former secretary of state George Shultz, former secretary of defense William Perry, former secretary of state and national security advisor Henry Kissinger, former senator Sam Nunn (who chaired the Senate Armed Services Committee), former secretary of state and chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff Colin Powell, all of whom describe themselves as conservative realists, and over two-thirds of all living former secretaries of state and defense and national security advisors are heavily involved in a nonpartisan campaign known as the Nuclear Security Project. Its purpose is to galvanize support for action on practical and urgent steps designed

to confront the comfort of denial and face reality about nuclear weapons. In addition, numerous former European leaders, including those who held positions as prime ministers, foreign ministers, defense ministers, generals, and admirals, have signed formal and highly public statements calling upon current leaders to change course by "creating the conditions for a world without nuclear weapons."

These men and women with vast personal experience in force and statecraft have come to appreciate the insight of Jonathan Schell in his thought-provoking book *The Fate of the Earth*:

> As scientists and technicians we live in the nuclear world, in which whether we choose to acknowledge the fact or not, we possess the instruments of violence that make it possible for us to extinguish ourselves as a species. But as citizens and statesmen we go on living in a pre-nuclear world, as though extinction were not possible and sovereign nations could still employ the instruments of violence as instruments of policy . . . In effect, we try to make do with a Newtonian politics in an Einsteinian world. The combination is the source of our immediate peril.

This statement is not just an observation about the magnitude of existing weapons capabilities and the potential for cataclysmic and suicidal war; it is a vital reminder of the critical importance of attitudes and values.

There is much to consider here. Technologies are tools, and the ways in which they are used and the purposes for which they are employed are determined by people. As technology steadily minimizes many physical barriers and practical constraints, such as distance and time, it thereby makes those limits that we are willing to place on ourselves all the more essential. As a consequence, we need to give the challenge of accepting self-imposed restraints particularly careful consideration.

The relative simplicity and manageability of the classical system of diplomacy at times seem far removed from many of the complexities of our own day. Some of its elements, of course, are gone forever: five European powers alone making decisions for everyone else, sovereign nation-states as the only actors in foreign affairs, minimal influence of domestic opinion or economic interests, and limited technological capabilities. But it is worthwhile to remember that one of the most important features that enabled the classical system to be successful did not reside in things, but in ideas and values. That is, statesmen of that time realized that no nation, however powerful, possibly could protect itself by relying on its own resources alone. They understood that their own long-term self-interests would be best served when defined in terms of larger collective security and the common interests of the system as a whole. They thus came to recognize the necessity of working together to develop shared normative values and to accept certain self-imposed restraints.

Those responsible for force and statecraft during the classical system realized that they had to find some way to avoid complete anarchy by regulating the level of their rivalry before it destroyed them. Competition, they came to understand, could not be allowed to become fatal to the competitors. One conflict after another, the catastrophic revolutionary and Napoleonic wars, and the possibility of still other unregulated military confrontations convinced them of the necessity of reaching agreement on shared values. Painful experience and the lessons of history taught them that no international system can possibly survive unless there is some measure of consensus by the major participants on fundamental goals and objectives, basic rules of accommodation, and ethical norms of conduct with limits

on what is acceptable and unacceptable behavior. For this reason, they agreed to accept certain self-imposed restraints upon themselves. They recognized the legitimacy of the system, their mutual coexistence in a balance of power, the use of limited means in the pursuit of limited ends, the validity of existing treaties, and their shared responsibility to cooperate in the collective defense of these norms and to work as diplomatic partners, rather than only rivals, to maintain the system itself.

The acceptance of such norms and self-imposed restraints by the participants in any international system is, of course, a matter of political will. This will can change through time, depending again on context. One thinks, for example, of the emergence of system-wide normative values in the wake of the warfare and anarchy of the eighteenth century, the support for the norm of self-determination in the process of decolonization following the Second World War, or the willingness of most states to impose restraints or rules upon themselves in order to protect the value of human rights and hold those who abuse them responsible for their actions. It is the presence—or absence—of these shared normative values that tells us much about the successes—or failures—of the classical system, the interwar years, the efforts of the United Nations, the Cold War, and the evolving international system of today. This explains why one of the annual meetings of the World Economic Forum focused on the theme of "Shared Norms for the New Reality."

The significance of shared values and self-imposed restraints in statecraft is nowhere more evident than in the threat and use of force. Leaders at the time of the classical system of diplomacy realized that armed force could be regarded as a legitimate instrument of policy as long as limited means were utilized for limited political ends. The technology of the time certainly restrained the capabilities of the means, but it was values that helped to restrain the objectives and determined *jus ad bellum*, or the justice of war, and *jus in bello*, or the justice in war. This is an essential point to bear in mind, especially in today's world seeking to establish *jus post bellum*, or justice after war in such places as Iraq and Afghanistan, to confront radical extremism in the form of terrorism and rabid xenophobia, and to come face to face with the reality of weapons of mass destruction in the hands of those unwilling to abide by established international norms or to accept self-imposed restraints.

It is precisely for these reasons that the organizers of the World Summit—the largest gathering of national leaders ever assembled in history—devoted so much attention to the challenge of trying to build what they called "a new consensus" on norms that could provide restraints for the future. Indeed, the very first agenda item for the conference as a whole was entitled "Values and Principles." Time and time again, the participants stressed that the degree to which they could achieve peace and security would be a function of their ability to find "common ground," to recognize that what binds them together is much more important than what separates them, and to reach agreement on "objective interests" and "shared values" concerning "moral imperatives" as well as "objective interests." In this regard, they came to realize that normative values not only can restrain certain behavior, but also can encourage, empower, and legitimize other kinds of action designed to maintain peace and security. They declared that these features applied to all aspects of statecraft, but particularly and most poignantly to armed force.

Here, they immediately found themselves struggling with the challenge of the wide disparity in attitudes toward normative restraints involving nuclear weapons. Under the terms of the landmark Nuclear Non-Proliferation Treaty, a remarkable 190 nations have agreed to impose upon themselves a total renunciation of these weapons of mass destruction, even as a means of deterrence. Of these, four once possessed such weapons but voluntarily decided to give them up. Together, these nations strongly encourage others to accept similar restraints. Nevertheless, under the same treaty, five nuclear powers (the United States, Britain, France, Russia, and China) promised to "pursue negotiations in good faith" leading to "general and complete disarmament," but none of them has been seriously willing to do so. Israel, India, Pakistan, and North Korea refuse to be bound by the treaty at all. These problems are compounded by the fact that more than forty countries currently possess the means to make fuel for peaceful nuclear power, and this can be modified to make material for nuclear weapons. It is not technology, but political will based on attitudes and values that keeps them from doing so. In sharp contrast, recently discovered attempts to smuggle highly enriched uranium across international borders indicate that terrorists actively are seeking to acquire precisely these kinds of weapons as well.

Those assembled at the World Summit also faced one of the most difficult of all challenges: namely, the urgency of developing normative guidelines for when, under whose authority, and how armed force should be legitimately used in the world today. This centuries-old and persistent problem was raised anew after the end of the Cold War over the issue of using force for humanitarian intervention in Somalia, Bosnia, and Kosovo. But it virtually exploded with the advent of global terrorism and counterterrorism. Terrorists before and after 9/11 argued that they followed their own set of values and thus did not have to observe the normal rules of war. Some of those fighting against them argued exactly the same way. American leaders at the time insisted that in an age of terrorism they no longer needed to follow the United Nations Charter's norms governing the use of force or the criteria of the just war tradition, that the restraints of the Geneva Convention were "quaint" and no longer needed to be honored, that "no rules" applied in this struggle, that they could use torture and assassination, that they were free to launch a preventive war against Iraq if they chose. As President George W. Bush himself said: "I don't care what the international lawyers say, we are going to kick some ass." One easily can imagine the same attitude being expressed by Vladimir Putin when attacking Ukraine and annexing the Crimea, Xi Jinping when seizing control of islands in the South China Sea, or Recep Tayyip Erdoğan when sending his troops smashing across the border with his recent invasion of northern Syria.

These cases serve as vivid reminders that the worth of institutions, treaties, and norms in force and statecraft is significantly diminished if not backed by a sense of responsibility to honor commitments and the capacity and willingness to enforce them. Whenever any state or nonstate actor refuses to accept established restraints and the rule of law in treaties to which it is a party, for example, claiming that it unilaterally can define if and when force should be used, irrespective of the norms or interests of the system as a whole, others will feel free to make exactly the same claim for themselves. A recipe is thereby created for international unpredictability and disorder rather than international order.

This brings us back to the historically long-standing—and always present—issue of values. As we explored in Chapter 6 on the evolving international system, we are at a moment in history when normative values are under particular challenge. Democratic values are openly under attack by a competing set of values promoted by the strong authoritarian and increasingly assertive governments of China and

Russia, among others. But even within Western democracies themselves, heretofore acceptable norms are being contested in a divided United States, a divided Europe, a divided European Union, and a divided NATO. The same can be seen in polarizing protests and riots in major cities in the Middle East, Africa, Asia, and Latin America. Even speeches given by heads of state before the United Nations reveal growing differences between those who embrace rival nationalism and sovereignty on the one hand and those who support international partnerships on the other.

When these kinds of difficult issues and sharp differences of opinion arise about values, it is important to understand that they have occurred before. At times in history they have been resolved peacefully through accommodation. At other times they have resulted in violence and catastrophic world wars that cost the lives of millions of people. It is for this reason that those with serious expertise and experience in force and statecraft refer so frequently to what they describe as the "lessons of history." Over and over again, former presidents, prime ministers, secretaries general, secretaries of state and defense, national security advisors, ambassadors, generals, intelligence analysts, and scholars writing in memoirs, books, essays, and commentaries stress the necessity of drawing on the past as a guide for the future. As a lengthy, painstaking, and thoughtful analysis commissioned by the former chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff entitled *Lessons Encountered: Learning from the Long War* concludes directly: there is no substitute for the study of history, and its lessons can be ignored only at one's peril.

As we have explored throughout this book, we live in the context of the dynamics of a diplomatic revolution that has produced any number of dramatic transformations in the world, some of which present serious challenges of a new order of magnitude. At the same time, we have seen that many of the challenges are not completely new: that continuities still coexist with changes; that human nature stays much the same; that the debate between partnership and rivalry continues; that the central dilemmas surrounding the necessities and the dangers of armed force remain; and that although weakened, states are still the most dominant actors in international affairs. We also have seen that despite all the transformations and challenges, diplomacy has proven to be adaptable, resilient, and necessary in finding ways to regulate competition and resolve disputes.

It may be, therefore, that many of the diplomatic challenges of our time are enduring and similar to the diplomatic challenges of previous times. To make discriminating judgments about what has changed and what is new in these vital matters, it is essential to draw on the impact of people, process, possibilities, patterns, perspective, and sense of proportion in the past while at the same time seeking guidance from the principles of negotiation, deterrence, coercive diplomacy, crisis management, and ethical restraints. In doing so to find workable solutions to the challenges for peace and security ahead, there may be much to be gained from the lessons of history and the insights of theory as found in the study of force and statecraft.

SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER EXPLORATION

The challenges ahead can be monitored more closely today than at any other time in history. Breaking news can be followed on those websites with international capabilities, such as the British Broadcasting Corporation at www.bbc.co.uk/news; CNN at www.cnn.com; *Le Monde* at www.lemonde.fr; *New York Times* at www.nytimes.com; Reuters at www.reuters.com; *Die Zeit* at www.zeit.de; Al Jazeera at www.aljazeera.com; and UN News at http://news.un.org. Discussions, analyses, opinion, as well as reviews of newly published books appear in journals such as *Diplomacy and Statecraft*, *Ethics and International Affairs*, *Foreign Affairs*, *Foreign Policy*, *The Hague Journal of Diplomacy*, *Human Rights Quarterly*, *International Affairs*, *International Conciliation*, *International Organization*, *International Security*, *International Studies Quarterly*, *Journal of International Affairs*, *The National Interest*, *Orbis*, *Review of International Studies*, *World Affairs*, and *World Politics*, among others.

In addition, all major nation-states and regional and international organizations now use technology and the Internet to maintain active websites as a means of presenting their positions on contemporary challenges of force and statecraft. Among these, see the African Union at https://au.int; the British Foreign Office at www.fco.gov.uk; the Chinese Foreign Ministry at www.fmprc.gov.cn; the European Union at http://europa.eu.int; the French Foreign Ministry at www.diplomatie.gouv.fr; the German Foreign Ministry at www.auswaertiges-amt.de; the Japanese Foreign Ministry at www.mofa.go.jp; NATO at www.nato.int; the Organization of American States at www.oas.org; the Organization for Security and Cooperation in Europe at www.osce.org; the Russian Foreign Ministry at www.mid.ru; the United Nations at www.un.org; and those of the U.S. government, including the Central Intelligence Agency at www.cia.gov, Department of Defense at www.defense.gov, Department of Homeland Security at www.dhs.gov, Department of State at www.state.gov, Office of the Director of National Intelligence at www.odni.gov, and the White House at www.whitehouse.gov.

Thoughtful reflections and projections can be found in the annual reports of the Munich Security Conference at https://securityconference.org, the National Intelligence Council, *Global Trends* at www.dni.gov, and the World Economic Forum at www.weforum.org. See also the Office of the Director of National Intelligence, *Worldwide Threat Assessment of the U.S. Intelligence Community* (Washington, D.C., 2019); Robert Kagan, "The Strongmen Strike Back," *Washington Post*, March 14, 2019; documentation for the 2005 World Summit at www.un.org; Secretary-General Kofi Annan's report entitled *In Larger Freedom: Towards Development, Security, and Human Rights for All* (New York, 2005); and the report from the High Level Panel on Threats, Challenges, and Change under the title of *A More Secure World: Our Shared Responsibility* (New York, 2004).

See also the Nuclear Tipping Point at www.nti.org; Soft Power 30 at https://softpower30.com; and the discussions in Andrew Bacevich, *The Age of Illusions* (New York, 2020); Fred Kaplan, *The Bomb* (New York, 2020); Larry Diamond, *Ill Winds* (New York, 2019); Richard Haass, *A World in Disarray* (New York, 2017); Dan Caldwell and Robert Williams Jr., *Seeking Security in an Insecure World* (Lanham, MD, 2016 ed.); Paul Gordon Lauren, *The Evolution of International Human Rights* (Philadelphia, 2011 ed.); Ian Clark, *Legitimacy in International Society* (New York, 2005); Joseph Nye, Jr., *Soft Power* (Boulder, CO, 2005); the still thought-provoking Jonathan Schell, *The Fate of the Earth* (New York, 1982); and Robert Heinl, Jr., "A Look at Future Wars," *Christian Science Monitor*, July 31, 1977; and the other references that appear at the end of Chapter 6.

Credits

Photo 1.1 François de Callières, *On the Manner of Negotiating with Princes* (British Library Board)
Photo 3.1 Photo by Instituto Nazionale Luce/Alinari via Getty Images
Photo 4.1 UN Photo
Photo 5.1 Photo by Keystone, MPI/Getty Images
Photo 6.1a Image © 2019 Maxar Technologies
Photo 6.1b Image © 2019 Maxar Technologies
Photo 8.1 North Korean Central News Agency Photo
Photo 11.1 Photo by Cecil Stoughton/Time Life Pictures Getty Images

Index

A
ability. *See* capabilities
Abu Ghraib prison, 289
Acheson, Dean, 81, 94
adaptability, xvi, 31, 34, 80, 82, 86, 88, 115, 147, 198, 212, 244, 308
Adolphus, Gustavus (Sweden), 9
Afghanistan, 85, 87, 107–11, 125, 126, 128, 129, 133, 137, 236, 252, 254, 274, 289, 306
Africa, 35, 46, 52, 83, 89, 97, 102, 108, 130, 131, 141, 143, 144, 146, 221, 297, 299, 308. *See also specific countries and names of African leaders*
African Union, 123, 264, 296
Afro-Asian Peoples' Solidarity Organization, 124
Age of Reason, 14, 17
aggression, xiv, 8, 14, 18, 26, 50, 63–66, 71, 72, 76–78, 86, 95–98, 137, 140, 147, 161, 162, 176, 193–95, 198–203, 208–11, 216, 218, 264, 284–85, 303
Agreed Framework (1994), 181, 182, 186–89
Agreement on the Prevention of Nuclear War (1973), 106
Ahmadinejad, Mahmoud, 227, 228
Aidid, Mohamed Farrah, 236
AIDS/HIV, 122
Aix-la-Chapelle, Congress of (1818), 28
Albania, 47, 117, 129, 177
Albright, Madeleine, 132, 205
Alexander I (Russia), 26, 27, 175, 200, 209
Algeciras Conference (1906), 28, 37
Algeria, 87, 129, 137
Al Jazeera, 121
al-Qaeda, 125–28, 131, 133, 252, 253, 297
Al-Shabaab, 131
Alves, Maximiano, xv
American Israel Public Affairs Committee, 235
Amnesty International, 124, 279
anarchy, xiv, xv, 8, 10, 19, 38, 50, 70, 88, 100, 117, 118, 131, 134, 275–78, 305, 306
Andrassy, Julius, 245
Anglo-Russian Agreement (1907), 36
Anglo-Soviet Trade Agreement (1921), 61
Angola, 87, 108, 109
Annan, Kofi, 123, 126, 134, 158, 298
Anne (Great Britain), 15
Anti-Ballistic Missile (ABM) Treaty (1972), 105, 133
Antony, A. K., 255
apartheid, 82, 84, 85, 279
appeasement, 21, 59, 62, 64–66, 70, 107, 162, 173, 200, 201, 209, 211
Arab-Israeli War (1973), 106, 210, 260
Arab League, 123, 130, 136, 137, 216, 264, 296
Arab Organization for Human Rights, 124
Arab Spring (2011), 137
Arafat, Yasser, 87–88
arbitration, 4, 37, 40, 50, 76, 286
Argentina, 162
Aristotle, 270
armaments. *See* weapons
armed force. *See* force
Armenia, 116, 129
arms control, 77, 101, 103–5, 108, 110, 132, 133, 139, 170, 192, 229, 267, 284. *See also restraints, on weapons; specific names of agreements and treaties*
arms embargoes, 77, 85, 117, 147, 228
arms races, 29, 36, 91, 98, 104, 105, 108, 110, 112, 115, 139, 169, 170, 180, 208, 215, 247, 251, 257

arms sales, 106, 109, 122, 204–6, 215, 284
Arms Trade Treaty (2014), 122, 139
Arouet, François Marie (Voltaire), 17
Art, Robert, 195, 236
Asia, 3, 5, 42, 46, 49, 51, 52, 62, 80, 83, 89, 94, 95, 97, 102, 104, 105, 111, 130–32, 136, 138, 143, 146, 162, 180, 181, 186, 188, 201, 205–7, 221–24, 284, 297, 299, 308. *See also specific countries and names of Asian leaders*
Asian Coalition of Human Rights Organizations, 124
al-Assad, Bashar, 137, 144, 216, 268, 289
Association of Southeast Asian Nations (ASEAN), 123
Atlantic Charter (1941), 70
Australia, 46, 52, 97
Australia, New Zealand, U. S. Alliance (ANZUS) (1951), 97
Austria. *See also specific names of Austrian leaders*
  in eighteenth century, 14, 17–19, 21
  in nineteenth century, 22, 25, 26, 28, 30–33, 37, 38, 174–76, 198, 199, 245, 247
  in seventeenth century, 8, 13
  in twentieth century, 36, 42, 46–48, 59, 66, 178, 247–50
Austrian Succession, War of (1740–1748), 18
Austro-Italian War (1859), 31
Austro-Prussian War (1866), 31
authoritarianism, 109, 138, 143, 149, 301, 307–8
Authorization to Use Military Force resolution (2001), 126, 130
Axis of Evil, 126, 181, 227, 258, 277
Azerbaijan, 93, 129

B

Bahrain, 129
Baker, James, 115, 216, 267, 300
balance of power (concept of), xiv–xvi, 13, 35, 39, 88, 116, 147, 148, 156, 258, 264
balance of power (European)
  appreciation for, 13
  in eighteenth century, 15, 21
  in nineteenth century, 26–34, 36, 38, 40, 100, 148, 175, 176, 186, 194, 199, 200, 209, 244, 264, 296, 306
  in twentieth century, 48–49, 100, 105, 112
balance of power (international), 48–50, 74, 100, 105, 108, 112, 116, 146
"balance of terror," 100, 115, 213. *See also* "Massive Retaliation" policy; "Mutual Assured Destruction"; nuclear blackmail
Baldwin, Stanley, 54
Balkans region, 29, 32, 33, 37, 117, 244, 245, 248, 251, 256. *See also specific countries*
Ban Ki Moon, 122
Barbaro, Ermolao, 6
bargaining, 158, 170–71, 194–96, 202, 208, 212, 217–20, 222, 224, 233. *See also* coercive diplomacy; deterrence; negotiation
Basic Principles of Relations Agreement (1973), 106
Bay of Pigs invasion (1961), 101
Belarus, 129
Belgian Crisis (1830), 27, 260
Belgium, 29, 47, 52, 58, 250–51
Belt and Road Initiative (China), 143
benefits, 3, 9, 40, 51, 55, 81, 84, 105, 107, 117, 141, 147, 154, 165, 170–81, 187, 194–99, 208, 213, 222, 231, 234, 243–44, 265, 269–71, 278, 298. *See also* common interests; incentives; national interest; partnership
Bentham, Jeremy, 20
Berlin, 28, 33, 37, 42, 66, 100, 104, 201, 249, 250
Berlin, Conference of (1884–1885), 28, 34
Berlin, Congress of (1878), 28, 34, 244–47, 256, 258
Berlin, Treaty of (1878), 247
Berlin Blockade (1948–1949), 84, 94, 100, 163, 215, 241, 260
Berlin Crisis (1958), 100, 101
Berlin Crisis (1961), 100, 101, 169, 215
Berlin Wall, 111
Best Alternative to a Negotiated Agreement (BATNA), 172, 186. *See also* negotiation
Bethmann-Hollweg, Theobald von, 250
Bhutto, Benazir, 253
Biko, Stephen, 280
bin Laden, Osama, 109, 125, 126, 128, 133, 236, 252
bin Salam, Mohammed, 145
biological weapons, 118, 122, 133, 284, 290, 304. *See also* weapons of mass destruction
Biological Weapons Convention (1972), 133, 284
Bismarck, Otto von, 31–33, 35–38, 160, 196, 215, 266, 272, 273
  as crisis manager or "honest broker," 32, 245–47, 256, 258
Blair, Tony, 135
Bodin, Jean, 7
Boehner, John, 268
Boko Haram, 131
Boland Amendment (1984), 268
Bolshevik Revolution (1917), 60, 91, 283
Bolton, John, 134, 185, 230, 234

Bosnia, 34, 37, 116, 117, 123, 129, 133, 238, 247, 260, 268, 289, 307
Bourbon dynasty, 14, 176, 210
Boutros-Ghali, Boutros, 115–16
Boykin, William, 273
Brandenburg, 8, 11–12, 18. *See also* Prussia
Brandt, Willy, 104
Bratianu, Ioan, 49
Brazil, 136
"Breaking the Silence" movement, 290
"Brexit," 145
Brezhnev, Leonid, 103–6, 108–9, 178, 179
Briand, Aristide, 54
Britain. *See* Great Britain
British Broadcasting Corporation (BBC), 121, 135
Brodie, Bernard, 194
Brown, Gordon, 253
Brussels, Conference of (1889–1890), 28
Brussels Declaration (1874), 284, 293
Buddhism, 84, 273, 282
buffer zones, 26, 32, 85, 176
Bulgaria, 47, 111, 129, 246, 247
Bulgarian Crisis (1886–1887), 33
Bülow, Bernhard von, 35, 59
Burckhardt, Jacob, 153
bureaucracy, 9, 11–12, 14, 17, 107, 231, 258, 266
Burma (Myanmar), 84, 206, 273
Bush, George H. W., 86, 116, 131–32, 162, 165, 216
Bush, George W., 89, 126, 127, 130, 133–34, 163, 181, 205, 230, 307
Bush Doctrine, 127
Byzantium, 5

C

Cable Network News (CNN), 121, 309
Caldwell, Dan, 122
Callières, François de, 15–17, 41, 155, 157, 158, 169, 173, 185, 209, 217, 265, 276
Cambodia, 105, 109, 267, 280
Cambon, Paul, 249
Canada, 46, 52, 95, 132, 177, 281, 299
capabilities, xvi, 9, 17, 26, 101, 119, 121, 127, 138, 154, 173, 180, 183, 191, 194, 196, 199, 204–7, 210, 211, 217–23, 226–30, 242, 244, 256–59, 264, 265, 268, 290, 299–306. *See also* credibility; power
Caribbean. *See* Latin America and Caribbean
Carr, E. H., 275
Carter, Jimmy, 108, 204, 282, 293
Castlereagh, Robert Stewart, 25–27, 38, 175, 187, 189, 198, 210–11
Castro, Fidel, 101, 108, 226, 242
Cavour, Camillo di, 31
Central African Republic, 129
Central Intelligence Agency (CIA), 99, 107, 189, 231, 281, 282, 298, 304. *See also* intelligence
Central Treaty Organization (CENTO), 97
Ceylon. *See* Sri Lanka
Chad, 129
challenges, xv, xvi, 6–7, 9, 17, 19, 20, 24–27, 31–35, 38, 45–53, 62, 66, 70–75, 80–88, 97–103, 109–12, 116–27, 130–34, 137–39, 145–49, 153–66, 173–80, 185, 189, 190, 194–97, 203–13, 225, 226, 231, 232, 235, 241, 252, 257, 258, 263–72, 275–82, 285, 288, 291, 294–308
Chamberlain, Austen, 53, 64
Chamberlain, Neville, 56, 59, 62, 64–65, 200–202, 209–10
change and continuity, xvi, 8, 18, 19, 26, 31–37, 39–42, 45, 50, 52, 55, 59, 63, 65, 66, 80, 83, 87, 93, 100, 103, 105, 110–12, 115, 122, 128, 133, 136, 138, 148, 154, 157–66, 172, 173, 178–89, 194, 201, 205, 207, 212, 213, 218, 221–28, 230–36, 241, 242, 249, 250, 267–70, 276, 278, 286, 295–97, 300, 305, 306, 308
Charles VI (Austria), 17
Charles XII (Sweden), 14
Charter 77, 180
Chaumont, Treaty of (1814), 22, 198. *See also* Paris, First Peace of
Chechnya (Russia), 118, 129
chemical weapons, 109, 118, 122, 284, 289, 290, 304. *See also* weapons of mass destruction
Cheney, Richard, 134, 182
Chen Shui-bian, 205
Chiang Kai-shek, 95, 203, 204
Chicherin, Georgii, 61
Chile, 106, 109, 123, 280
China. *See also* Republic of China; *specific names of Chinese leaders*
  ancient, 5, 217
  in evolving international system, 121, 124, 127, 136–38, 141, 143, 146, 182, 203–7, 209–13, 229, 231, 233, 251, 253, 264, 268, 280, 296, 299, 301, 307
  inter-war years (1919-1939), 52, 201
  in nineteenth century, 38, 222–23
  post-Second World War and Cold War, 73, 76, 81–83, 91, 95, 96, 104, 105, 107, 204, 215
  United Nations membership for, 82

"China Hands," 94
China Lobby, 204
Chirac, Jacques, 134
choices, 13, 76, 103, 154–61, 165, 166, 218, 234, 252, 257, 263, 269–77, 282–85, 288, 291, 295, 303, 304
Christianity, 3, 7, 29, 271, 273, 276, 282. *See also* Jesus
Church, Frank, 282
Churchill, Winston, 48, 54, 65, 80, 93, 113, 200, 211, 259
Ciano, Galeazzo, 62
city-states
  diplomacy in, 3–7, 193
  Greek, 4, 217
  Italian, 5–7, 13
civilian-military relations, 20, 30, 225, 243, 246, 247, 249, 250, 253–56, 266. *See also* ends and means, relation of; force, as instrument of statecraft
civilians (noncombatants), xiii, xiv, 11, 20, 30, 31, 46, 62, 63, 69, 74, 85, 117, 122, 125, 128, 133, 136, 137, 139, 144, 181, 182, 225, 243–56, 266, 273, 283, 284, 287–90, 301–3
civil war. *See* intrastate war
Clark, Wesley, 297
clash of civilizations, 277
class, 41, 53, 54, 58, 110
classical system of diplomacy, xvi, 24–42, 46, 52, 100, 148, 157, 189–90, 217, 241, 264, 276, 277, 296, 297, 301, 305–6. *See also* diplomacy, traditional; international systems
Claude, Inis, 51
Clausewitz, Carl von, 29–30, 92–93, 95, 118, 155–57, 242, 250, 266, 286, 301
Clemenceau, Georges, 48, 49
climate change, 122, 125, 136, 138, 144, 149, 281, 298
Clinton, Bill, 117, 132–33, 162, 180, 189, 205, 268
Clinton, Hillary, 136
Coats, Daniel, 298
coercive diplomacy, 72, 77, 85, 86, 102, 106, 116, 120, 126, 154, 158, 159, 165, 171, 180, 182, 216–37, 264, 265, 285, 295, 302, 308. *See also* persuasion
  analysis of, 231–37
  crisis management in relation to, 219–21, 225, 237, 239, 246, 253, 257, 302
  dangers of, 217, 219, 221, 224–25, 231, 232, 236, 257, 303
  deterrence in relation to, 218–21, 231, 236
  negotiation in relation to, 182, 219, 229, 232, 302
  principles of, 217–21
coercive diplomacy, historical case studies of
  American "gunboat diplomacy" (1852–1854), 221–24, 232–36
  contemporary coercion against Iran, 226–36
  Cuban Missile Crisis (1962), 224–26, 232–36
cognitive psychology, 161, 209, 232
Colby, Bainbridge, 61
Cold War, 81, 83, 89, 127, 170, 193, 194, 217, 235, 301, 306. *See also specific leaders and events during Cold War*
  course of, 100–110, 177, 204, 210, 213, 224, 277
  and *détente*, 104–10, 177, 178, 204
  end of, 110–13, 115, 117, 131, 141, 180, 307
  global division of, 96
  origins and escalation of, 80, 91–95, 97–99, 112
collective security, xiv, 13, 26, 38, 39, 50, 51, 70, 72, 73, 76–77, 79–80, 86, 88, 116, 134, 147, 149, 176, 187, 198–202, 209, 212, 264, 298, 302–3, 305
colonial empires. *See* decolonization; imperialism
combatants, 29, 46, 51, 69, 287, 289, 290, 302
Comintern, 60–62
command and control, 118, 213, 241, 243, 257, 301
Commission to Study the Organization of Peace, 71, 279
commitment, 10, 19, 27, 37, 40, 59, 72, 76, 98, 103–4, 107, 126, 138–40, 145, 186, 195–99, 202–11, 226, 265, 267, 268, 275, 300, 307. *See also* honor; intention; motivation; resolve (determination); will
common interests, xvi, 6, 20, 26, 36, 40, 49, 75–78, 88, 99, 107, 147, 169, 171, 176, 178, 186, 187, 199, 205, 232, 245, 305. *See also* benefits; collective security; partnership; shared goals and objectives
communication, xvi, 3–5, 21, 37, 40–42, 45, 53, 55–57, 60, 77, 84, 95, 103, 118, 119, 121, 125, 133, 170, 189–90, 196–99, 202, 209–10, 212, 219, 220, 225, 228, 235, 237–43, 246, 250, 256, 257, 264, 278, 298, 300, 301
Communism, 46, 60, 61, 80, 81, 91, 93–96, 98, 100, 101, 103–7, 109, 111–12, 118, 141, 177, 179, 180, 193, 202–5, 209, 211, 226, 277
Commynes, Philippe de, 6, 276
compensation, 21, 25, 38, 49, 60, 175, 186, 212, 247, 258. *See also* benefits

competition, xiv, xv, 4, 6, 8, 13–22, 24, 29, 32–36, 39–40, 49, 57, 76, 100, 104, 106, 110, 120, 131, 148, 149, 170, 176, 186, 231, 245, 247, 263, 265, 266, 270, 275, 280, 291, 294, 298, 305, 308. *See also* rivalry
"complex interdependence," 122, 147, 148, 189, 265, 297
compliance, 178–80, 216–28, 231, 233–34, 285
Comprehensive Nuclear Test Ban Treaty (1996), 122, 133
compromise, 25, 27, 48, 50, 74, 75, 79, 80, 160–62, 172–73, 176, 197, 208, 228, 248, 256, 257, 275, 276, 284. *See also* negotiation; settlement range
Concert of Europe, 27–29, 40, 75, 176, 199, 200, 211, 245, 264, 296
concessions, 59, 93, 120, 161, 171, 178, 179, 183, 185, 186, 190, 220, 223–24, 226, 234, 246. *See also* compromise; incentives; negotiation; settlement range
Conference on Security and Cooperation in Europe (CSCE) (1973–1975), 108, 112, 177–80, 186–90, 285
conflict resolution, xiii, xv, 5, 13, 22, 63, 76, 86, 101, 170, 171, 173, 186, 190, 221, 232, 240, 241, 276, 286. *See also* crisis management; negotiation; peaceful settlement of disputes
  arbitration, 4, 37, 40, 50, 76, 286
  mediation, 29, 76, 86, 250, 286
Confucius, xiv
Congo, 82, 85, 101, 123
congress system, 25, 28, 29, 30, 34, 199, 209. *See also* Concert of Europe; *specific names of congresses and conferences*
conscience, 65, 140, 179, 270, 273–84, 289–91, 301. *See also* ethics
conscription, 21, 29, 46, 201, 287
consensus, 25, 27, 30–31, 39–41, 46, 48, 51, 60, 78, 81, 88, 100, 145, 148, 178, 188, 190, 198, 216, 270, 281, 305, 306. *See also* shared goals and objectives
consequences, xiv, 6, 21, 35, 36, 51, 58, 65, 71, 83, 84, 91, 101, 127, 137, 154, 156, 161, 171, 182, 184, 194, 195, 199, 208, 213, 218, 222, 223, 230, 233, 235–39, 245, 249–52, 258, 264, 265, 269–75, 278–82, 286, 291, 295, 299, 303, 305
conservatism, 30, 33, 35, 270, 304
Constantine the Great (Roman emperor), 5
Constantinople, conferences of (1876–1877, 1881, 1886, 1888), 28
Containment policy, 95, 101, 146
context. *See* historical context
continuity. *See* change and continuity
control. *See* command and control
Convention for the Pacific Settlement of International Disputes (1907), 37
Cook, Robin, 274
coronavirus (COVID-19), 122, 299
cost-benefit analyses (utility calculation), 20, 42, 51, 57, 91, 100, 103, 127–28, 155, 165, 175–76, 194–99, 208–9, 213, 217, 219, 223, 231, 233, 237, 245, 247, 254, 264, 302. *See also* opportunities; rationality; risk
"Courage to Refuse" movement, 290
covert action, 33, 91, 99, 101, 106, 109, 115, 145, 229, 281. *See also* intelligence
Crammond, Edgar, 57
credibility, 66, 97, 127, 139, 143, 181, 194, 196–207, 210–11, 216, 219–21, 224, 226, 230, 233–35, 253, 302. *See also* capabilities; will
Creel, George, 47
crime syndicates, 122, 124, 149, 265, 296, 298
Crimea, 89, 129, 144
Crimean War (1854–1856), 31, 33, 37
crimes against humanity, 90, 123, 278, 287. *See also* humanity; International Criminal Court; international criminal law; just war tradition
crises, xiv, 15, 30, 32–34, 37, 39, 42, 59, 62, 76, 80, 84–85, 88, 89, 94, 100–103, 122, 132, 134, 144, 161, 163, 169, 180, 197, 205, 209, 220, 239–59, 265, 303. *See also* crisis management; crisis mismanagement; crisis prevention; *specific crises*
crisis management, 27, 31, 34, 40, 50, 84–86, 101, 147, 158, 159, 165, 174, 239–59, 265, 266, 286, 295, 302, 303, 308. *See also* conflict resolution
  analysis of, 255–59
  coercive diplomacy in relation to, 219–21, 225, 237, 239, 246, 253, 257, 302
  and Cuban Missile Crisis, 84–85, 102, 225–26, 239–42
  deterrence in relation to, 197, 208, 239, 249, 257, 302
  negotiation in relation to, 239, 243, 245–51, 257
  principles of, 220, 240–44, 250, 253, 258, 259
crisis management, historical case studies of
  Congress of Berlin (1878), 245–47, 256, 258
  Mumbai terrorist attacks (2008), 251–58
  outbreak of First World War (1914), 163, 247–51, 256–58
Crisis Management Initiative, 240
crisis mismanagement, 110
  outbreak of First World War (1914), 163, 247–51, 256–58

crisis prevention, 29, 34, 40, 81, 100, 101, 239, 249, 253. *See also* preventive diplomacy
Croatia, 116, 117, 129, 289
Cronin, Patrick, 236
Cuba, 84–85, 87, 100–103, 108, 127, 137, 163, 224–26, 289
Cuban Missile Crisis (1962), 84–85, 101–3, 163, 169
  coercive diplomacy in, 224–26, 232–36
  crisis management in, 84–85, 102, 225–26, 239–42, 260
Cuéllar, Javier Pérez de, 87
"cultural diplomacy," 94, 297
cultural heterogeneity, 46, 52, 53, 83, 86, 190, 297
cultural homogeneity, 41, 46, 52, 83, 190, 241, 297. *See also* classical system of diplomacy
Cultural Revolution (1966–1976), 104
cultural weapons, 94
culture, xiii, xv, 12, 41, 52, 141, 145, 158, 161, 189, 208, 212, 219, 264, 266, 270, 275, 280, 285, 297, 299, 304
cyberattacks, 121, 122, 144–46, 229, 298, 301, 302
Cyprus, 85, 87, 129, 247
Czechoslovakia, 46, 47, 52, 56, 59, 66, 94, 104, 107, 111, 116, 117, 177, 180, 200, 202, 238

D

Daesh. *See* Islamic State in Iraq and Syria
Danish War (1864), 31
Darfur (Sudan), 129
Darwinism, 8, 32
Declaration of St. Petersburg (1868), 292
Declaration of the United Nations (1942), 70
decolonization, 75, 82–83, 102, 296, 306
demands, xiii, 8, 29, 50, 54, 65, 69, 75, 86, 155, 161, 171, 172, 175, 185, 186, 217–27, 230–36, 248, 249, 274, 277, 283. *See also* bargaining; coercive diplomacy; negotiation
demilitarization, 34, 40, 176, 185, 284
democracy, 13, 27, 40, 46, 50, 54, 58, 60, 73, 84, 85, 93, 94, 106, 109, 112, 116, 117, 133, 138, 144, 145, 205, 227, 254, 266, 278, 281, 297, 299, 300, 307–8. *See also specific names of democratic countries*
Democratic Republic of the Congo, 123
Demosthenes, 4
Denmark, 14, 47
détente, 104–10, 177, 178, 204
deterrence, xiv, 26, 32, 35, 38, 50, 52, 57, 66, 72, 77, 85, 97, 100, 106, 108, 154, 158, 159, 163, 165, 171, 176, 193–213, 264, 265, 284–85, 295, 302, 308
  analysis of, 195–97, 207–13
  coercive diplomacy in relation to, 218–21, 231, 236
  crisis management in relation to, 197, 208, 239, 249, 257, 302
  dangers of, 97, 208, 212
  dual, 207, 209
  extended, 197, 204
  negotiation in relation to, 208, 212, 302
  nuclear, 108, 182, 193, 196, 204, 210, 285, 307
  principles of, 195–97
  strategic, 197
  and terrorism, 126, 213
deterrence, historical case studies of
  British and French efforts to deter Hitler (1939), 163, 200–203, 209–11
  collective security post-1815, 198–200, 209–12
  contemporary American deterrence over Taiwan, 203–7, 209–12
development
  and decolonization, 82–83
  of diplomatic skills for statecraft, 3–6, 12, 15–17, 24, 27, 29, 49, 70, 155, 157, 160, 164, 241, 253, 280, 295, 297
  economic, 32, 62, 70–71, 83, 86, 97, 136, 147–49, 264, 280–81, 299
  of human security, 280
  of legal concepts, 5, 10, 20, 29, 40, 78, 83, 85, 281, 284, 290, 305, 307
  of propaganda, 46–47, 53, 56, 60–63, 91, 94, 95
  technological, 31, 160, 194, 256, 301
  of theory, 9, 11, 40, 156, 164–66, 194, 241
  in war, 40, 42, 46–47, 50, 74, 92,108, 118
  of weapons, 92, 97, 109, 118, 136, 144, 146, 169, 180, 185, 194, 207, 226–30, 256, 302
diagnosis, 157, 159, 163–66, 173, 295
dialogue des sourds,60, 63, 67
digital revolution, 119, 301. *See also* Internet
diplomacy, xv, xvi, 32, 35–38, 40, 45, 46, 50, 52–63, 65–67, 72, 76, 84, 95, 100–105, 108, 110, 117–20, 136, 154–61, 165, 166, 169–70, 193, 194, 198–99, 211–12, 242, 247–49, 259, 266, 275, 302–4, 308. *See also* negotiation; statecraft
  as "the art of the possible," 79, 161, 172, 263, 295
  classical, *See* classical system of diplomacy
  coercive, *See* coercive diplomacy
  "cultural diplomacy," 94, 297
  defined, 170
  "economic diplomacy, 57–59, 71, 93–94, 120, 143, *See also* economics
  eDiplomacy, 120, 297"
  "gunboat diplomacy," 221–24, 232–36
  history and evolution of, 3–22, 101, 170
  language of, 40, 52
  "media diplomacy," 84, 119–20
  negotiation in relation to, 170, 182, 190
  "New Diplomacy," 48, 50, 189, 297
  "open diplomacy," 55, 84, 189
  origins of term, 4
  "people-to-people diplomacy," 83
  preventive, 86, 147, 303
  "public diplomacy,"54–57, 94, 119–20, 125, 135, 189, 297, *See also* public opinion
  "secret diplomacy," 54
  traditional, 32, 41, 42, 45, 47, 60, 62, 103, 104, 157, 188, *See also* classical system of diplomacy
  of violence, 171
Diplomacy (statue), xv, 115, 294–95, 303
diplomatic archives, 6, 17
diplomatic immunity, 4, 5, 275
diplomatic revolution, 45–67, 69, 91, 158, 188–89, 212, 235–36, 244, 255–57, 268–69, 296–302, 308
  complexity of, xvi, 50, 53, 89, 116, 122, 188, 189, 235, 297
  cultural heterogeneity of, 46, 52, 83, 190, 297
  domestic political forces in, 45, 48–50, 55, 72, 91, 94, 110, 189, 235, 256, 297
  economics in, xvi, 45, 57–59, 120, 212, 296
  geographical scope expanded in, 45, 52, 78, 116, 296, 297
  new types of actors in, xvi, 45, 52, 188–89, 213, 235, 296–97, *See also* nonstate actors
  number of actors expanded in, 45, 52, 83, 116, 188, 235, 296–97
  origins of, 45–67
  pace of events in, xvi, 53, 116, 189, 256, *See also* time
  professional diplomats rejected in, 45, 48, 55, 60–63, 94, 138, 297, 300
  public opinion in, 48, 53–57, 81, 84, 94, 119, 189, 212, 235, 256, 268–69, 297, *See also* propaganda
  self-imposed restraints rejected in, 45, 49, 60, 190
  technology in, xvi, 45, 53, 55, 56, 118–20, 189, 212–13, 235–36, 256–57, 298, 300–302
  traditional norms rejected in, xvi, 45, 48, 49, 60, 62, 63, 101, 135, 189–90, *See also* ideology
diplomats. *See also* people; *specific names of diplomats*
  amateurs, 16, 48, 58, 62, 138–40
  personal qualities needed by, 6, 12, 15–16, 157, 246, 276
  professional skill requirements for, 5–6, 9, 12, 15–17, 29, 34, 41, 57–58, 82, 119–20, 136, 155, 157, 160, 173–74, 187, 217, 220–21, 242, 244, 246, 256, 259, 265, 276, 295
  seized as Iranian hostages, 108, 109, 227, 260
  rejection in diplomatic revolution, 45, 48, 55, 60–63, 94, 138, 297, 300
  technology's impact on, 41–42,53, 55, 97–98, 101, 118–19, 121, 300–302, 305, *See also* technology
disarmament, 55, 61, 65, 78, 108, 185, 284, 307. *See also specific names of agreements and conferences*
Disraeli, Benjamin, 245, 256
Djibouti, 130, 141
Dobrynin, Anatoly, 226
domestic jurisdiction. *See* national sovereignty
domino theory, 103
"Drawing Boards, Battle of" (1939–1945), 301
drones (unmanned aerial vehicles), 118, 128, 137, 144, 300–302
drugs, illicit, 124
Dual Alliance (1879), 33
dual deterrence, 207, 209
Dulles, John Foster, 193

E

Earth Summit (1992), 281
Eastern Europe, 52, 59, 66, 80, 92, 93, 97, 100, 104, 110, 111, 118, 144, 177, 179, 187, 202, 208, 209. *See also specific countries and names of European leaders*
East Germany, 104, 111, 112, 117, 177, 241
Ebola, 122, 298
"economic diplomacy," 57–59, 71, 93–94, 120, 143
economics. *See also* finance; International Monetary Fund; international trade; transnational corporations; World Bank; World Trade Organization
  and deterrence, 205
  and diplomatic revolution, xvi, 45, 57–59, 120, 212, 296
  economic development, 32, 62, 71, 97, 147, 264
  and globalization, 121, 124
  as incentives, 91, 106, 177, 182, 187, 212, 221, 229, 234

economics (*continued*)
as instrument of statecraft, xv, 57–59, 106, 112, 120, 136, 143, 212, 296, *See also* "economic diplomacy"
and international competition, 57, 120, 149, 247, 265, 280
minimal role under classical system, 29, 40, 212, 305
promotion of economic interests under the diplomatic revolution, xvi, 45, 57–59, 120
as punishment or elements of coercive diplomacy (embargoes, sanctions, reparations), 50, 58, 73, 85, 108, 116, 117, 120, 144, 147, 184, 212, 216, 220, 227–31, 234, 277, 286, *See also* weapons, economic and financial
security in relation to, 70, 84, 97, 104, 117, 120, 178, 179, 187
Eden, Anthony, 65, 162
eDiplomacy, 120, 297
Egypt, 5, 47, 82, 106, 115, 128–30, 135, 137, 162, 238
Eisenhower, Dwight, 95, 98–100, 204, 215, 303–4
El Baradei, Mohamed, 236
electromagnetic pulse (EMP) weapons, 118
El Salvador, 109
ends and means, relation of, 9, 12, 17, 29, 30, 103, 156, 162, 242, 243, 271–75, 285, 287, 291, 302, 304, 306. *See also* ethics; force, as instrument of statecraft; just war tradition; objectives, limited
England. *See also* Great Britain; *specific names of English leaders*
in eighteenth century, 14, 18
in seventeenth century, 8, 13
in sixteenth century, 274
in twentieth century, 52, 59
Enlightenment, 14, 17
Entente Cordiale (1907), 36
environment, 83, 122, 132, 133, 149, 178, 189, 278, 281, 296, 298. *See also* climate change
equilibrium. *See* balance of power (concept of)
Erdoğan, Recep Tayyip, 145, 272–73, 307
Eritrea, 129, 130
escalation, xiv, 4, 31, 34, 81, 89, 93–95, 99, 100, 103–8, 116, 126, 136, 137, 163, 174, 176, 180–83, 197, 203, 204, 208, 216–20, 225–28, 231–34, 239–49, 251–55, 299, 303
Estonia, 46, 47, 112, 116
ethics, xv, 7, 14, 46, 63, 139, 154, 157, 158, 208, 269–91, 294, 295, 308. *See also* normative values
for armed force, 10, 97, 282–91, *See also* just war tradition
elements of, 269–70
in foreign policy, 9, 10, 41, 97, 99, 269–82, 295
and human rights, 176
and international politics, 12, 18–20, 176, 259, 269–75, 300, 305
and moral force, 275, 282, 300
Ethiopia, 53, 62, 109, 129, 130, 260
Europe, 5, 7–9, 12–22, 24–42, 45–53, 57, 78, 80, 82, 83, 94, 95, 97, 100, 105, 108–10, 117, 130–32, 137, 143, 145, 146, 174–80, 188, 198, 199, 200, 211, 226, 231, 235, 244–51, 256, 264, 265, 284, 296, 297, 299, 305, 308. *See also specific countries and names of European leaders*
European Union (EU), 117–18, 123, 130, 138, 145, 216, 228, 229, 235, 265, 268, 296, 308
"Evil Empire," Soviet Union as, 109, 277
extended deterrence, 197, 204
extension agreements, 173

F
Facebook, 121, 301
failed states, 89, 122, 208, 298
Falklands War (1982), 162
Farrell, Thomas, 93
Fascism, 60, 62, 95, 277
Fay, Sydney, 248
fear, xv, 6, 9–13, 20, 27–31, 34–37, 53–56, 61, 64, 65, 72–73, 94, 97–104, 107, 124–27, 135, 137, 143–47, 155, 169, 176, 180, 183, 184, 188, 190, 193–95, 199, 202–4, 210, 213, 218–23, 226, 227, 232–36, 244, 248–49, 252, 256, 257, 264, 267, 269, 273, 283, 285, 297, 299, 304
Federation of American Scientists, 235
Feely, John, 274
Félice, Fortuné Barthélemy de, 20, 174
Fillmore, Millard, 221, 222
finance. *See also* economics
financial crisis, 57, 137, 299, *See also* Great Depression
as instrument of statecraft, 10, 35, 58, 99, 120, 126, 136, 216, 228, 253, 296, *See also* weapons; economic and financial
Finland, 26, 46, 47, 176–78, 202
First World War (1914–1918), xiv, 30, 45–55, 57, 62, 63, 69, 70, 71, 74, 157, 163, 211, 238, 247–51, 256, 257, 297
Fischer, Joschka, 134
Fisher, Roger, 172
Five Power Treaty (1922), 51
Flickr, 256

force, 4, 29, 30, 31, 34, 36, 61, 69, 70, 72, 76–77, 97, 107, 110, 121, 123, 127, 128, 130–35, 137, 176–79, 188–90, 193–96, 198–205, 216–24, 241–44, 249, 254–59, 264–69, 275, 282–91, 294–97, 299–308. *See also* naval forces; power
dangers of, xiv, 8, 38, 75, 98–99, 102, 110, 158, 162, 165, 170, 174, 208, 210, 212, 217, 219, 225, 239, 243, 248, 254, 257, 263, 282, 294, 295, 303, 308, *See also* weapons of mass destruction
as envisioned under United Nations Charter, 74–80, 227
ethical challenges of, 10, 97, 282–91, 300, *See also* restraints
fundamental dilemma of, xiv, 75, 165, 243, 294, 303, 308, *See also* "the security dilemma"
as instrument of statecraft, xiv, xv, 13, 29–30, 39, 40, 46, 85, 98, 134, 157, 165, 174, 193–94, 212, 216, 221, 225, 242, 244, 246, 252, 254, 257, 282–91, 294, 300–306, *See also* coercive diplomacy; deterrence; force and statecraft; "hard power;" peacekeeping forces; "Responsibility to Protect"
moral, 275, 282, 300
necessity of, xiv–xvi, 7, 9, 11, 13, 19, 22, 40, 51, 72, 75, 77, 85, 103, 158, 162, 176, 198, 224, 228, 245, 269, 282, 283, 294, 295, 302, 308
threats of, *See* threats of armed force
use of, *See* use of armed force
force and statecraft, xv, xvi, 4, 6–7, 11, 12, 15, 17, 19–20, 24, 30, 40, 42, 45, 49–51, 53, 54, 58, 63–64, 69, 72–80, 85–86, 89, 91, 92, 97, 107, 117–19, 122, 124, 126, 131–33, 136–39, 141, 149, 153, 155–59, 163, 164, 166, 174, 176, 178, 185, 188, 190, 194, 198, 209, 211, 213, 231, 234, 236, 240–43, 253, 254, 257, 263, 265–70, 273, 282, 285, 288, 291, 295, 299–301, 304–5, 307, 308. *See also* force; statecraft
Ford, Gerald, 108, 268, 282
Ford Foundation, 124
Foreign Affairs (journal), 53, 86, 105, 191, 203
Four Policemen, 73, 81
Four Power Treaty (1922), 51
France. *See also specific names of French leaders*
in eighteenth century, 14–15, 17, 18, 21
in evolving international system, 125–26, 128, 133, 134, 137, 146, 229, 268, 307
inter-war years (1919–1939), 47–49, 51, 52, 54, 58–60, 62, 63, 65, 66, 72, 163, 200–203, 209–11, 238
in nineteenth century, 21–22, 25, 26, 28–33, 35–38, 174–76, 196, 198, 199, 209–11, 215, 238, 244–46
post-Second World War and Cold War, 76, 81–84, 92
pre-First World War, 247, 249–50
in seventeenth century, 8, 9, 12–13
and United Nations, 76, 82–84, 127
François-Poncet, André, 63
Franco-Prussian War (1870–1871), 31, 249
Franco-Soviet Pact (1935), 62
Franz Ferdinand (Austria), 247
Frederick II (the Great, Prussia), 17–19, 26, 155, 158
Frederick William (the Great Elector, Brandenburg), 11–12
Frederick William I (Prussia), 17
Frederick William III (Prussia), 26, 175
French and Indian War (1754–1763), 18
French Revolution, 21, 29
Frum, David, 134

G
Gaddafi, Muammar, 136, 216, 289
Gallucci, Robert, 181, 187
Gandhi, Mohandas, 282
Gates, Robert, 136, 182, 304
Gates Foundation, 124
gender, 41, 53, 81, 83, 84, 132, 279, 289
Geneva Conventions, 34, 122, 287, 288, 307
Geneva Disarmament Conference (1932), 55, 61
Geneva Protocol (1925), 284
Genoa Conference (1922), 54, 61
genocide, xiv, 70, 71, 74, 84, 89, 117, 123, 132, 133, 278, 279, 287, 290
Gentili, Alberico, 6
George I (England), 155
Georgia, 116, 129, 130, 144
Germany. *See also* East Germany; West Germany; *specific names of German leaders*
in evolving international system, 116, 117, 127, 132, 134, 146, 229, 267, 268
inter-war years (1919–1939), 46–48, 51, 52, 54, 56, 58–60, 62–66, 70, 72, 200–203, 210, 211, 277
in nineteenth century, 31–33, 35–38, 196, 245–47, 266
post-Second World War and Cold War, 70, 71, 92, 93, 97, 110, 112, 177, 264, 288
pre-First World War, 30, 33, 35–37, 247–51, 257, 258
Gillani, Yusuf Raza, 253
Gladstone, William, 264, 276, 293

globalization, xvi, 121, 125, 132, 147, 148, 297, 298. *See also* international trade; transnational corporations
Global Positioning System (GPS), 257, 302
global warming. *See* climate change
"global war on terror,"125–28, 130–31, 254, 268, 293, *See also* terrorism
Goldstein, Joshua, 291
Google Earth, 119, 257
Gorbachev, Mikhail, 86, 88, 110–13, 132, 267
Gorchakov, Alexander, 245
Grand Alliance, 14, 80
Great Britain. *See also specific names of British leaders*
  in eighteenth century, 15, 18
  in evolving international system, 128, 133, 135, 137, 145, 146, 228, 253, 268, 274, 307
  inter-war years (1919–1939), 48, 51–54, 56, 58–60, 66, 72, 163, 200–203, 209–11, 220, 238
  in nineteenth century, 22, 26–31, 33, 35–38, 175, 176, 198, 199, 209, 210, 215, 223, 238, 245–47
  post-Second World War and Cold War, 73, 76, 80–84, 92, 162, 169
  pre-First World War, 247–49, 251, 274
  and United Nations, 76, 82–84
Great Depression (1930s), 58, 62, 70
Great Northern War (1700–1721), 14
Great Powers. *See also* Austria; China; France; Germany; Great Britain; Prussia; Russia; Soviet Union; United States
  characteristics of, 8, 21, 37–42
  in eighteenth century, 13–22
  in nineteenth century, 25–42, 100, 174–76, 187, 188, 199–201, 209, 210, 212, 238, 244, 258, 264, 296, *See also* balance of power (European); classical system of diplomacy
  in seventeenth century, 7–13, 120
  in twentieth century, 46, 52, 72–73, 95, 125, 177
  in the United Nations, 74–75, 78–83, 85, 87, 88, 101, 107, 127
"Great Satan," U.S. as, 125, 227, 258, 277
Greece
  ancient, xiii, 3, 4, 97, 154, 193–94, 217, 271, *See also* Melian dialogue; Thucydides
  modern, 29, 34, 47, 80, 81, 87, 93, 95, 129, 201, 238
Greenpeace, 124, 281
Grenada, 109
Grey, Edward, 248
Gromyko, Andrei, 110
Grotius, Hugo, 10, 155, 276
Group of Eight (G-8), 136
Group of Twenty (G-20), 123, 136, 148, 296
Guantanamo Bay (Cuba), 137, 289
Guatemala, 109
"gunboat diplomacy,"221–24, 232–36. *See also* naval forces
Gustavus Adolphus IV (Sweden), 9

H

Haass, Richard, 149, 309
Habsburg dynasty, 8, 14
Hague Conferences (1899, 1907), 28, 36–37, 192
Hague Convention (1899), 284
Haiti, 52, 109, 133, 236, 238, 268
Hamas, 130
Hamilton, Alexander, 272
Hamilton, Keith, 27
Hammarskjöld, Dag, 82, 84, 85, 87, 88
Hampson, Fen Osler, 188
Hardenberg, Karl von, 175
Harding, Warren G., 277
"hard power," 299, 303. *See also* force; naval forces; power
Hart, Michael, 188
Havel, Václav, 180
health, 87, 120, 169, 189, 281, 299, *See also* coronavirus
Heatley, D. P., 157
Hegel, G. W. F., 283
hegemony, 13, 38, 39, 46, 59, 97, 120, 135, 199
Helsinki Final Act (1975). *See* Conference on Security and Cooperation in Europe
Henry VIII (England), 274
Herzegovina, 34, 116, 247
Hezbollah, 130, 137
hierarchy, xvi, 38, 75, 78, 79, 87. *See also* Great Powers; international systems, composition of; structure; superpowers
Hinduism, 3, 52, 251, 272, 284
Hiroshima, 80, 98, 293
historical analogies, 153, 159, 161–64
historical case studies, 160–66, 174–90, 198–207, 209–13, 219, 221–31, 241–55, 259, 277, 295
historical context, 29, 79, 95, 107, 127, 128, 154, 156–66, 173, 181, 193–94, 197, 207, 212, 221, 225, 234–37, 243, 244, 247, 249, 251, 255, 259, 270, 278, 288, 295–96, 306, 308
historical experience, xiv, xv, 4, 7, 10, 15–20, 24–26, 29–32, 42, 49, 53–54, 62–66, 69–74, 89, 92–93, 97–99, 103, 105, 106, 140, 153–65, 171, 175, 181, 199, 208, 209, 222, 225, 232, 239, 241, 244, 246, 255, 263, 264, 271–72, 275, 282, 286, 287, 291, 295, 300, 303–5, 308. *See also* historical case studies

history
  as a discipline and subject, 7, 9, 15, 17, 20, 21, 24, 30, 35–36, 40, 62, 95, 105, 153–56, 160–64, 222, 239, 245, 248, 250, 265, 274–75, 282, 295, 300, 308
  landmarks and points of comparison, 35, 49, 61, 69–70, 77, 82–83, 85, 91, 94, 98, 102, 105, 108, 116, 126, 128, 134, 186, 239, 280, 285, 301–2
  lessons of, *See* lessons of history
  scope of, xvi, 24, 41, 87, 89, 91, 97–98, 100, 112–13, 126, 155, 162–64, 169, 193, 221, 224, 232, 239, 269, 272, 274–75, 282, 295
  use of, 153–66, *See also* lessons of history
Hitler, Adolf, 56, 58, 59, 62–67, 162, 200–203, 209–12, 220, 238, 264, 283, 290
HIV/AIDS, 122
Hobbes, Thomas, 11, 13, 194, 195, 217, 271, 283
Hoffman, Stanley, 272, 282
Hoh, Matthew, 274
Holborn, Hajo, 24
Holmes, Oliver Wendell, Jr., 94
Holocaust, 70, 117, 279
Holy Alliance (1815), 200
Holy Roman Empire, 8, 9
"holy wars," 258, 273, 285. *See also* jihad
Homer, xiii, 3
Honduras, 49
honor, 5, 15, 31, 40, 50, 56, 61, 65, 80, 87, 99, 101, 106, 139, 158, 181, 189, 197, 202, 223, 230, 231, 236, 270, 275, 276, 280, 291, 300, 307. *See also* commitment; reputation; responsibility; treaties, respect for
Hoover, Herbert, 55, 277
Hopmann, P. Terrence, 169
Hotman, Jean, 276
Hötzendorf, Conrad von, 250
Howard, Michael, 17
humanitarian aid, 85, 86, 276, 277
humanitarian intervention, 77, 117, 123, 132–33, 278, 288, 293, 307. *See also* "Responsibility to Protect"
humanity, 97, 103, 123, 126, 176, 270–72, 276, 278, 279, 282, 284, 287–90
human rights, xiv, xvi, 14, 29, 34, 49–51, 63, 65, 70, 71, 75, 76, 78, 84, 108, 109, 112, 115, 117, 122–25, 132, 133, 137, 138, 141, 143, 145, 147, 149, 158, 178–80, 186–89, 216, 244, 247, 263, 276, 278–82, 296, 298, 300, 301, 306
  ethics in relation to, 176, 276, 278–82
  in just war tradition, 287, 288
  peace, security, and justice in relation to, 50–51, 71, 83, 84, 86, 112, 115, 123, 136, 179, 265, 279, 280, *See also* security, "human," "indivisibility" of
  Universal Declaration of Human Rights, 84, 179, 279
Human Rights Watch, 124, 180, 279
Humboldt, Wilhelm von, 25, 174
Hungary, 46, 47, 100, 107, 111, 116, 117, 129, 163, 177, 245
Hussein, Saddam, 86, 116–17, 127, 130, 132, 133, 147, 162, 215, 216, 227, 238, 266, 289

I

ideology, 30, 40, 41, 54, 60–62, 78, 83, 91, 94, 95, 112, 138, 161, 190, 252, 258, 267. *See also specific ideologies*
Ignatiev, Nicholas, 244, 246
Iklé, Fred, 171
illicit drugs, 124
imperialism, 5, 11, 18, 32, 38, 92, 95, 97, 104, 110, 135, 209, 247, 258, 277. *See also* decolonization
impunity, 78, 279, 290. *See also* national sovereignty
incentives, 105, 107, 148–49, 173–74, 211–12, 220, 222, 223, 226, 229, 234, 235, 246, 249, 257–59. *See also* benefits; commont interests; partnership
India, 3, 5, 18, 49, 52, 81, 85, 128, 129, 136, 215, 231, 245, 251–57, 260, 272, 307. *See also specific names of Indian leaders*
Indonesia, 80, 128
inducements. *See* incentives
Industrial Revolution, 32, 40, 42. *See also* technology
inevitability, xv, 64, 103, 143, 170, 243, 249, 254, 257, 267, 272, 282
information revolution, 119, 301. *See also* digital revolution
innovation agreements, 173
instruments of statecraft, xiv, xv, 13, 29–30, 39, 40, 46, 58, 78, 85, 95, 98, 99, 106, 112, 119–20, 126, 134, 136, 143, 146–47, 157, 165, 174, 193–94, 211–12, 216, 221, 225, 228, 242, 244, 246, 252–54, 257, 275, 278, 282–91, 294, 296, 300–306. *See also* culture; diplomacy; economics; finance; force; force and statecraft; intelligence; international law; international organizations; naval forces; power; propaganda; rule of law; technology; values; war; weapons
  "hard power," 299, 303

instruments of statecraft (*continued*)
moral force, 275, 282, 300
"soft power," 299, 300, 303
intelligence, 15, 57, 99, 111, 118, 119, 126, 130, 138, 139, 144, 163, 180, 189, 224, 226, 230–32, 235–36, 252–54, 257–59, 265, 273, 281–82, 290, 297, 298, 300, 301, 308. *See also* Central Intelligence Agency; covert action
intention, 9, 17, 65, 73, 78, 82, 97, 108, 132, 154, 180–82, 199, 203, 209, 211, 225, 239, 243, 268, 269, 275, 285–88. *See also* commitment; motivation; resolve (determination); will
interest groups, xvi, 188. *See also* diplomatic revolution, domestic political forces in; nongovernmental organizations; nonstate actors; public opinion; transnational corporations
Intermediate-Range Nuclear Forces (INF) Treaty (1987), 111, 139
International Atomic Energy Agency (IAEA), 122, 148, 180–82, 227–30
International Commission on Intervention and State Sovereignty, 123
International Committee of the Red Cross, 34, 124, 292
International Convention Against Torture (1984), 125. *See also* torture
International Convention on the Prohibition of Chemical Weapons (1993), 122, 284
International Convention on the Rights of the Child, 122–23
International Convention to Ban Land Mines (1997), 125, 188, 284
International Court of Justice (ICJ), 75, 138, 278
International Criminal Court (ICC), 123, 132, 133, 173, 188, 293
international criminal law, xvi, 133, 147, 290
International Crisis Group, 240
International Helsinki Federation for Human Rights, 180
international humanitarian law, 34, 40, 286–87, 292. *See also* Geneva Conventions; Geneva Protocol
international human rights law, xvi, 122–23, 280, 296
International Labor Organization, 123
international law, xiv, 5, 9, 10, 29, 31, 40, 50, 61, 70, 78, 84, 86, 145, 178, 187, 251, 264, 278, 280, 289. *See also* normative values; restraints, legal; rule of law; *specific names of treaties*
criminal, xvi, 133, 147, 290
humanitarian, 34, 40, 286–87
human rights, xvi, 122–23, 280, 296
International Military Tribunal at Nuremberg, 290
International Military Tribunal for the Far East, 290
International Monetary Fund (IMF), 71, 123, 136, 148, 281
international order, xiv, xv, 48, 60, 66, 69, 75, 79–80, 133, 140, 141, 145, 146, 240, 277, 307. *See also* international systems; peace; peace and security; predictability
international organizations, 13, 20, 39, 49–50, 71, 72, 74, 81, 86, 121, 139, 148, 189, 264. *See also specific names of organizations*
international politics and relations (in general), xvi, 11, 38, 39, 41, 45, 46, 48, 50, 52, 53, 58, 60, 61, 64, 76, 86, 91, 94, 110, 112–13, 120–21, 124, 131, 145–46, 156, 157, 163, 170, 178, 198, 208, 235, 265, 267, 269–78, 291, 296–97
international systems, 13, 15, 20, 22, 30, 81, 107, 156, 158, 164, 174–76, 186, 189, 198–200, 210, 211, 218, 235, 244, 245, 247, 251, 257–59, 264–65, 272, 277, 281. *See also* system building; system maintenance
central dilemmas of, 80, 131
classical, *See* classical system of diplomacy
composition of, 38, 82–83
evolving, 89, 107, 112, 115–49, 212, 294–308
interdependence in, 122, 170, *See also* common interests; partnership
normative values in, *See* legitimacy; normative values; shared values
number of actors in, xvi, 38, 45, 52, 78, 83, 116, 118, 188, 235, 296–97
people in, *See* diplomats; people; policy makers
requirements for viability of, 25–27, 31, 51, 76, 91, 106, 115, 174, 305–6
rules in, *See* rule of law; rules; rules of accommodation
shared goals and objectives in, *See* shared goals and objectives
structure of, *See* structure
types of actors in, xvi, 11, 38, 42, 45, 52, 116, 118, 120–21, 188–89, 213, 235, 296–97, *See also* nation-states; nonstate actors
United Nations, *See* United Nations
international trade, xvi, 8, 29, 32, 35, 57–59, 61, 71, 105, 120, 121, 123, 132, 139, 145,

173, 176, 179, 188, 206, 212, 221, 222, 227, 229, 231, 233, 234, 278, 298. *See also* globalization; World Trade Organization
Internet, xvi, 119, 121, 125, 130, 256, 257, 301
intrastate (civil) war, 13, 89, 93, 105, 108, 109, 117, 133, 137, 144, 145, 215, 265, 298
inviolability of borders, 87, 178, 186
Iran, 47, 80, 85, 87, 93, 108, 109, 121, 126, 129, 130, 135–38, 145, 146, 180, 181, 185, 215, 260. *See also specific names of Iranian leaders*
nuclear enrichment program, 226–36, 268
Iran-Contra scandal, 109
Iran Hostage Crisis (1979–1980), 108, 227
Iran–Iraq War (1980–1988), 227
Iraq, 46, 47, 84–87, 116–17, 126, 127, 129–31, 133, 137, 181, 185, 215, 216, 229, 238, 268, 289, 306
Iraq War (2003–2011), 89, 127–28, 134, 136, 137, 159, 256, 266, 268, 274, 307
Iron Curtain, 80, 93, 111, 113, 117, 178, 180
Islam, 108, 109, 117, 125, 126, 128, 130, 135, 137, 163, 215, 227, 251–52, 272–73
Islamic State in Iraq and Syria (ISIS), 130–31, 137, 273, 289, 297
isolationism, 31, 49, 55, 58, 70, 72, 73, 132
Israel, 82, 88, 106, 125, 129, 130, 137, 138, 145, 210, 215, 227, 229, 230, 268, 272, 290, 293, 307. *See also* Arab-Israeli War
Italian-Ethiopian War (1935–1936), 62
Italy. *See also specific names of Italian leaders*
early Italian peninsula, 5–7, 13, 21, 154, 155
inter-war years (1919–1939), 47, 48, 52, 60, 62, 201, 260, 277
in nineteenth century, 26, 31–33, 38, 176, 244–45, 247
pre-First World War, 32, 33, 36, 238, 247

J

Jägerstätter, Franz, 274
Jansenius, Cornelius, 10, 276
Japan. *See also specific names of Japanese leaders*
in evolving international system, 138, 180–82, 184, 206, 207, 231, 267
inter-war years (1919–1939), 46, 49, 51, 52, 60, 62–63, 72, 201, 238
in nineteenth century and "opening" of Japan, 38, 221–24, 232–36
post Second World War and Cold War, 92, 97, 104, 288
in twentieth century, 42, 92, 97, 104,163, 197, 251
Jefferson, Thomas, 41–42
Jervis, Robert, 164
Jessup, Philip, 84
Jesus, xiii, 10, 273, 282. *See also* Christianity
jihad, 137, 251, 254, 258, 273, 289
"jingoism," 32, 245
Johnson, Lyndon, 103
Joint Chiefs of Staff. *See* United States, Joint Chiefs of Staff
Joint Comprehensive Plan of Action (JCPOA) (2015), 138, 192, 229–30
Jones, Bruce, 147
Jordan, 47, 129
Judaism, 52, 82, 251, 272
Jünger, Ernest, 283
Jusserand, J. J., 156, 276
justice, 63, 70, 71, 75, 83, 126, 178, 267, 271, 272, 275, 276, 278–81, 283, 288, 300, 306. *See also* International Court of Justice; just war tradition
just war tradition (JWT), 10, 20, 40, 77, 135, 285–91, 307
justice after war *(jus post bellum)*,287–88, 306
justice in war *(jus in bello)*,6, 286–87, 289, 306
justice of war *(jus ad bellum)*,6, 285–86, 306
peace, security, and human rights in relation to, 50–51, 71, 83, 84, 86, 112, 115, 123, 136, 179, 265, 279, 280

K

Kanagawa, Treaty of (1854), 223
Kang Sok Ju, 181, 187
Kant, Immanuel, 14, 20, 270, 283
Karadžic, Radovan, 123
Kashmir, 129, 251, 254, 255
Kautilya, 3, 154
Kazakhstan, 116, 129
Kekkonen, Urho, 177
Kellogg-Briand Pact (1928), 56
Kelly, John, 139
Kennedy, John F., 87, 101–3, 163, 204, 224–26, 232–36, 239, 242
Kennedy, Paul, 35–36, 147
Kennedy, Robert, 226, 232, 235
Kenya, 130
Kerry, John, 136, 137, 229
Keynes, John Maynard, 58
Khamenei, Ali, 145, 229
Khan, Imran, 255
Khashoggi, Jamal, 280
Khong, Yuen, 162
Khrushchev, Nikita, 101–3, 196, 224–26, 232–36, 239, 243–44
Kim Il Sung, 180
Kim Jong Il, 180, 182

Kim Jong Un, 182–85, 187–89
King, Martin Luther, Jr., 282
Kissinger, Henry, 26, 97–98, 105, 106, 116, 156, 161, 178, 189, 204, 304
Knorr, Klaus, 156
Kohl, Helmut, 110
Korean War (1950–1953), 82, 86, 87, 95, 104, 180, 197, 203, 215, 260, 267, *See also* United Nations, force and statecraft under
Kosovo, 129, 133, 162, 216, 238, 260, 268, 293, 297, 307
Kremenyuk, Victor, 173
Kurds, 215
Kuwait, 86, 116–17, 129, 147, 216, 268
Kyoto Accord (1997), 132, 133, 281
Kyrgyzstan, 129

L
La Bruyère, Jean de, 12
Laibach, Conference of (1821), 28
Langer, William, 245
Langhorne, Richard, 27
language, xiv, 5, 7, 12, 16, 34, 40, 41, 52, 76, 78, 83, 130, 155, 190, 201, 223, 227, 272, 279, 294, 299
Laos, 101, 238
Lashkar-e Taiba, 131, 251–53, 257
last resort, 21, 127, 147, 286, 288, 302
Latin America and Caribbean, 42, 52, 83, 97, 107, 143, 146, 176, 221, 234, 235, 296, 297, 308. *See also specific countries and names of Latin American leaders*
Latvia, 46, 47, 112, 116
law. *See* international law; rule of law
laws of war, 10, 20, 155, 282, 284, 286–88
League of Nations
  formation of, 49–50
  membership and withdrawals, 52–53, 62, 63, 65, 66, 72, 200
  United Nations compared to, 77
  U.S. refusal to join, 50, 51, 72, 201
  weaknesses of, 49, 51, 70, 71–72
Lebanon, 84, 85, 109, 129, 130, 137
legitimacy, xv, xvi, 25–27, 29–31, 39–41, 46, 56, 71, 74, 77, 78, 107, 124, 134, 149, 156, 175, 179, 186, 188, 194, 200, 213, 230, 235, 242, 269, 272, 277–80, 282, 284–91, 300, 301, 303, 306, 307. *See also* normative values
Lenin, V. I., 60, 61, 91, 277
lessons of history, xiv, 6, 7, 16, 26, 32, 48, 53, 58, 69–75, 80, 101, 103, 113, 115, 136, 139, 148, 149, 153–66, 174, 185, 186, 190, 194, 202, 207, 212, 222, 230, 237, 239, 241, 255, 259, 263, 266, 276, 279, 287, 289, 290, 295, 303–5, 308, *See also* history, use of
liberalism, 27, 30, 60, 112, 200, 209
Liberia, 49, 52
Libya, 47, 127–30, 136, 137, 180, 216, 238, 268, 289, 293
Lie, Trygve, 82
Lieber Code (1863), 286, 292
Liechtenstein, 116
Limited Test Ban Treaty (1963), 103, 169–70, 192
limits. *See* restraints
Lippmann, Walter, 269
Lithuania, 8, 46, 47, 112, 116
Litvinov, Maxim, 61
Lloyd George, David, 48, 54, 55, 58
Locarno Conference (1925), 52, 55, 64
Locke, John, 13
Lodge, Henry Cabot, 51
London, conferences of (1827, 1830–1831, 1838–1839, 1840–1841, 1850–1852, 1864, 1867, 1871, 1912–1913), 28, 192
Louis XIV (France), 12–15, 17
Lubanga, Thomas Dyilo, 123
Luxembourg, 47

M
MacArthur, Douglas, 86, 180, 203
Macedonia, 129
Machiavelli, Niccolò
  on ethics, 7, 271
  on force, 7, 194, 217
  on history, 7, 154–55, 157, 265–66
  on statecraft, 300
Macron, Emmanuel, 146
Madrid, conferences of (1823, 1880), 28
Maginot Line, 52
Mahan, Alfred Thayer, 283
Mali, 129
Malik, Jacob, 84
Malta, 176
Manchuria, 62
Mandela, Nelson, 280, 293
Manstein, Erich von, 264
Mao Zedong, 81, 95, 104, 105, 203
Markwica, Robin, 232
Marshall, Charles Burton, 41
Marshall, George C., 93
Marshall Islands, 116
Marshall Plan, 93–94
Martens, Carl von, 40, 293
Martens, Georg Friedrich von, 20
Martin, Paul, 281
Mason, George, 266

"Massive Retaliation" policy, 98, 193, 197
Mattis, James, 139, 140, 274
Maurice of Nassau, 9
May, Ernest, 161–62
Ma Ying-jeou, 205
Mazarin, Jules, 10
McCain, John, 228–29
McCarthyism, 81, 94
McElroy, Robert, 276–77
McNamara, Robert, 158, 239
Médecins sans frontières, 124
"media diplomacy," 84, 119–20
mediation, 29, 76, 86, 250, 286
Meinecke, Friedrich, 20
Melian dialogue, xiii, 154, 217, 271
Merkel, Angela, 146
Metternich, Clemens von, 25–27, 30, 32, 45, 158, 174–75, 187, 198, 199, 210–11
Mexico, 132, 138, 139, 221, 223
Micronesia, 116
Middle East, 35, 46, 52, 54, 83, 89, 93, 97, 102, 106, 117, 128, 130, 131, 137, 143–46, 216, 231, 260, 297, 299, 308. *See also specific countries and names of Middle Eastern leaders*
militarism, 60, 97, 283
military power. *See* force; "hard power"; naval forces; weapons
Mill, John Stuart, 270
Milley, Mark, 184
Milosevic, Slobodan, 117, 123, 133, 162, 216, 289
ministries for foreign affairs. *See also* diplomacy; diplomats
  changing characteristics of, 53–58, 62, 119–20, 189, *See also* diplomatic revolution
  creation of, 9–10, 14, 17, 42
misperception. *See* perception and misperception
Moldova, 129
Molotov, V. M., 61, 92
Moltke, Helmuth von, 249–50
Mongolia, 206
Monroe Doctrine, 215
Montenegro, 34
Moon Jae-in, 184
moral force, 275, 282, 300. *See also* ethics; power, different elements of
More, Thomas, 274
Morgan, Patrick, 208
Morgenthau, Hans, 108, 271–72
Morley, John, 274
Morocco, 37, 87
Mosaddez, Mohammad, 227
Moscow Helsinki Group, 179
motivation, 15, 34, 125, 184, 195–98, 204, 206, 211, 213, 216, 218–20, 226, 228, 231–34, 236, 242, 276, 290. *See also* commitment; intention; resolve (determination); will
Mukherjee, Pranab, 252
Mulford, David, 252
Mullen, Mike, 253, 256
Mumbai Crisis (2008), 251–58
Munich Conference (1938), 56, 66, 162, 200, 260
Munich Security Conference (2019), 146
Muslims. *See* Islam
Mussolini, Benito, 62, 64, 66, 201, 212
"Mutual Assured Destruction" (MAD), 98, 115, 196
Mutual Defense Treaty (1954), 203
Myanmar (Burma), 84, 206, 273
My Lai massacre (1968), 289

N
Nagasaki, 80, 293
Namibia, 85, 116
Naosuke Ii, 223, 224
Napoleon Bonaparte, 21–22, 24–26, 29, 32, 49, 69, 73, 156, 174, 175, 186, 198, 209, 212, 301, 305
Napoleon III (Louis Napoleon, France), 31
Nassar, Gamal, 162
national interest, 9, 17, 59, 81, 82, 88, 95, 105, 133, 140, 156, 188, 197, 209, 219, 231, 233, 245, 247, 266, 272, 297. *See also ragione di stato; raison d'état; Staatsräson*
National Iranian American Council, 235
nationalism, xvi, 27, 31, 32, 46, 47, 57, 58, 62, 63, 70, 102, 111, 117, 135, 145, 200, 206, 235, 256–58, 272, 283, 298, 308
National Security Strategy of the United States of America (2002), 127, 133–34
national sovereignty, 7, 40, 51, 76, 81, 138, 139, 290, 308
  challenges to, 20, 49, 79, 84, 120–25, 279, 296
  claims of, 11, 70, 79–80, 87, 123, 149, 205, 264, 271, 279, 280, 296, 299
Nations, Battle of (Leipzig, 1813), 22
nation-states, 7, 38, 46, 70, 79–80, 107, 116, 119–26, 147, 148, 157, 179, 188, 193, 265, 280–82, 296–98, 302, 305. *See also* national interest; national sovereignty; *specific nation-states*
  state values, 270–75, *See also* nationalism; patriotism

naval forces, 9, 14, 15, 19, 31, 34, 35, 42, 50, 51, 62–63, 93, 101, 102, 109, 116, 128, 141, 144, 176, 182, 199, 205–6, 210, 215, 221–26, 228, 234, 236, 242, 244–46, 249, 263, 266, 283, 288–90, 298. *See also* force; "gunboat diplomacy"
Nazi-Soviet Non-Aggression Pact (1939), 66, 202, 212
Near Eastern Crisis (1838), 27
negotiation, xv, 3, 5, 6, 8, 10, 11, 15–18, 25, 26, 31, 33, 34, 36, 37, 40, 48, 52, 55, 57, 59, 61, 62, 75–77, 79, 82, 83, 101, 103–8, 110, 120, 124, 136, 138, 145, 147, 154, 155, 157–59, 162, 165, 169–90, 234, 235, 244, 265, 267–69, 281, 284, 286, 295, 302, 303, 307, 308
  analysis of, 170–74, 185–90
  bargaining in relation to, 170–71
  coercive diplomacy in relation to, 182, 219, 229, 232, 302
  crisis management in relation to, 239, 243, 245–51, 257
  deterrence in relation to, 208, 212, 302
  diplomacy in relation to, 170, 182, 190
  principles of, 170–74, 190
negotiation, historical case studies of
  Conference on Security and Cooperation in Europe (1972–1975), 177–80, 186–90
  Congress of Vienna (1814–1815), 174–76, 186–89
  contemporary negotiations over nuclear weapons in North Korea, 180–90
Nemesis, fate of, 92, 97, 302
Nesselrode, Karl Robert, 175
Netanyahu, Benjamin, 145, 230, 268
Netherlands, 9, 13, 14, 47
network-centric warfare (NCW), 301
Neustadt, Richard, 161–62
neutrality, 4, 21, 29, 31, 33, 34, 40, 176–78, 187, 190, 197, 250, 251, 284
"New Diplomacy," 48, 50, 189, 297
New Strategic Arms Reduction Treaty (START) (2010), 136
"New World Order," 115–16, 118, 132
New Zealand, 46, 52, 97
Nicaragua, 109, 238, 268
Nicholas I (Russia), 30–31, 248, 250
Nicolson, Arthur, 249
Nicolson, Harold, 15, 56
Niebuhr, Reinhold, 274–75
Niger, 129, 130
Nigeria, 128–30
9/11 attacks. *See* September 11 terrorist attacks
Nine Years' War (1688–1697), 13
Nixon, Richard, 105–6, 204, 267, 284
Nobel Peace Prize, 87
noncombatants. *See* civilians
nongovernmental organizations (NGOs), 79, 83, 84, 119–21, 124–25, 132, 148, 179, 188, 265, 279, 281, 296, 300, 301. *See also* nonstate actors; *specific NGOs*
nonmilitary instruments of statecraft, 5, 212, 282, 286. *See also* culture; diplomacy; economics; ethics; finance; normative values; rule of law; "soft power"
nonstate actors, xvi, 116, 125, 130, 136, 148, 188–89, 213, 236, 253, 258, 288, 296–97, 304, 307. *See also* crime syndicates, interest groups; nongovernmental organizations; terrorism; transnational corporations
nonviolence, 5, 273, 282, 286. *See also* pacifism
normalization agreements, 173
Norman, Montagu, 59
normative values, xv, xvi, 11, 27, 39, 48, 51, 70, 88, 146, 158, 190, 270, 279, 288, 290, 303, 305–7. *See also* ethics; legitimacy; restraints, self-imposed; shared values
North America, 15, 18, 188, 297. *See also* Canada; Mexico; United States
North American Free Trade Agreement (NAFTA), 132, 138
North Atlantic Treaty Organization (NATO), 87, 95, 97, 110, 112, 117–18, 123, 126, 130, 132, 133, 135, 136, 138, 145, 173, 177, 178, 208, 215, 216, 226, 268, 293, 308
North Korea, 82, 86, 116, 126, 135, 136, 147, 162, 206, 236, 238. *See also specific names of North Korean leaders*
  nuclear weapons program of, 180–90, 205, 304, 307
Norway, 47, 82
NSC-68 (1950), 98
nuclear blackmail, 101, 213. *See also* balance of terror; "Massive Retaliation" policy; "Mutual Assured Destruction"
Nuclear Non-Proliferation Treaty of (NPT) (1968), 104, 122, 180, 182, 188, 227, 284, 306–7
nuclear proliferation, 89, 180–89, 192, 226–31, 233, 235, 236, 298
Nuclear Security Project, 304–5
Nuclear Security Summit (2010), 136
Nuclear Test Ban Treaty (1963), 192
nuclear weapons. *See also* nuclear proliferation; weapons of mass destruction
  and coercive diplomacy, 226–36
  dangers of, 80, 84, 97–98, 100–102, 105, 110, 112, 169, 180–84, 196, 217, 224–31, 236, 239, 251, 252, 255, 257, 285, 304–7

  and deterrence, 108, 182, 193, 196, 204, 205, 210, 285, 307
  in evolving international system, 143, 144, 146
  inability to actually use as instruments of statecraft, 196, 210, 290–91, 302, 304–5
  invention and evolution of, 92–93, 97–98, 118, 194
  and negotiation, 180–90
  Nemesis, fate of, 92, 97, 302
number of actors. *See* international systems, number of actors in
Nunn, Sam, 304
Nuremberg Principles, 293

O

Obama, Barack, 130, 135–37, 182, 205, 228, 235, 268
objectives, xv, xvi, 7, 15, 26, 32, 33, 39, 46, 48, 49, 51, 55, 58–65, 78, 88, 98, 99, 106, 107, 138, 165, 172, 173, 178, 179, 186, 189, 195–97, 203, 207, 208, 213, 217, 219, 220, 231–33, 237, 240–42, 244, 246–48, 251, 258–59, 264, 285, 287, 296, 300, 302–6. *See also* ends and means, relation of; shared goals and objectives
  limited, 9, 40, 42, 93, 226, 242, 246–48, 250, 253, 257, 258, 286, 287, 289, 290, 303
O'Connor, Sandra Day, 289
oil, 93, 117, 130, 181, 182, 186, 197, 206, 216, 228, 229, 231
Oman, 129
open diplomacy, 55, 84, 189
Operation Deliberate Force, 117
Operation Desert Shield, 215
Operation Desert Storm, 86. *See also* Persian Gulf War
Operation Thunder, 103
opportunities, 4–6, 10, 18, 49, 50, 56, 70, 97, 99, 101, 112, 115, 127–28, 133, 141, 144, 158, 159, 177, 179, 187, 188, 197, 203, 204, 218, 244, 249, 254, 258–59, 267, 282, 286, 288, 300, 301
order. *See* international order
Organization for Economic Cooperation and Development (OECD), 148
Organization for Security and Cooperation in Europe (OSCE), 123, 148, 264, 296
Organization of American States (OAS), 123, 226, 296
Organization of Petroleum Exporting Countries (OPEC), 123
Orlando, Vittorio, 48
Orlov, Yuri, 179
Osgood, Kenneth, 95
Ostpolitik, 104
Ottoman Empire, 8, 29, 37, 39, 46, 176, 244, 247
outlaw states, 122. *See also* rogue regimes
Oxfam, 124

P

pace. *See* diplomatic revolution, pace of events in; time
pacifism, 10, 74, 263, 269, 282–83. *See also* nonviolence
pacta sunt servanda, 5. *See also* honor; treaties, respect for
Pact of Steel (1939), 66, 201
Pahlavi, Mohammed Reza, 226–27
Pakistan, 85, 109, 128–30, 137, 180, 215, 251–58, 260, 301, 307. *See also specific names of Pakistani leaders*
Palestine, 47, 82, 87–88, 125, 137, 138, 290, 293
Palestine Liberation Organization (PLO), 87–88
Palmer, R. R., 21
Panama, 268
Pandit, V. L., 81
Paris, Charter of (1990), 112
Paris, conferences of (1823, 1856, 1858, 1860–1861, 1866, 1869, 1913), 28, 31, 192
Paris, First Peace of (1814), 25
Paris, Second Peace of (1815), 176
Paris Climate Agreement (2015), 125, 136, 138, 281
Paris Peace Conference (1919), 25, 45, 48–52, 61, 69, 73, 189, 192, 245, 288, 300
partnership, xvi, 4, 13, 21, 22, 27, 32, 36, 38–40, 48, 50, 62, 70, 72, 74, 75, 86, 94, 103, 107, 122, 131–40, 145–49, 154, 159, 170–72, 190, 201, 259, 294–96, 299, 308. *See also* collective security; common interests; negotiation; shared goals and objectives
Partnership for Peace Program, 132
patriotism, 21, 62, 205, 231, 273. *See also* "jingoism"; nationalism; nation-states, state values
patterns, 10, 27, 46, 81, 103, 132, 133, 154, 157, 159, 160, 163–65, 174, 185, 190, 196, 249, 273, 295, 308. *See also* political science
Paul (apostle), 3, 32
pauses, 14, 161, 163, 242, 243, 246, 248, 249, 254, 256. *See also* crisis management; time
peace, xiv, xv, 5, 6, 12–15, 19, 24–27, 29, 32, 34, 38–40, 42, 45–46, 48–52, 55–60, 63, 67, 70–77, 85–87, 92, 98, 103, 108, 110, 112, 115, 132, 134, 137, 147, 155, 163, 174–78, 193, 194, 198–200, 221, 227, 232, 240, 245, 247, 264, 266, 267, 269, 276, 279, 283, 285, 288, 294, 302

peace (*continued*)
human rights, peace, security, and justice, in relation to, 50–51, 71, 83, 84, 86, 112, 115, 123, 136, 179, 265, 279, 280
peace and security, xiii–xvi, 8, 11, 13, 22, 24–26, 37, 48–50, 58, 64, 69–71, 73, 75–78, 81, 83–89, 97, 99, 102, 105–7, 115–16, 123, 127, 130, 134, 135, 140, 147–49, 160–62, 174, 176, 179, 186, 198, 204, 205, 211, 265, 277, 280, 285, 294, 302, 306, 308
peaceful settlement of disputes, xiv, 10, 60, 76, 106, 178, 186, 286. *See also* conflict resolution; crisis management; diplomacy; negotiation
peacekeeping forces, 77, 85–87, 117, 133, 147, 283, 303
peacemaking
after First World War, 45–46, 48–52, 61, 66, 69, *See also* Paris Peace Conference
after Napoleonic wars, 24–27, 69, 156, 174–76, 198–200, *See also* Vienna, Congress of
after Second World War, 69–80, *See also* San Francisco Conference
after Thirty Years' War, 11, 69, *See also* Westphalia, Peace of
in just war tradition, 287
and religious values, 276
and United Nations, 86
Pearl Harbor attack (1941), 163
Pecquet, Antoine, 17, 276
people, xiii–xv, 3–5, 7, 9, 15, 19–21, 30, 41, 46–48, 50–54, 56, 60, 63–66, 71, 74, 75, 78, 81–84, 92–97, 102–7, 111–15, 120–25, 128, 130, 136, 153–61, 165–66, 173, 183, 195, 197, 202–4, 207, 212, 216–22, 224, 251–54, 259, 264–67, 269–75, 279–82, 285, 289–90, 295–99, 304, 305, 308. *See also* diplomats; policy makers; *specific names of individuals*
People's Liberation Army, 141
People's Republic of China (PRC). *See* China
"people-to-people" diplomacy, 83
perception and misperception, 29, 72, 94, 95, 110, 116, 155, 163–64, 173, 181–82, 190, 208, 231, 232, 243, 249, 264, 265, 270, 276. *See also* propaganda
perfectionism, 79, 88, 274
Perle, Richard, 134
Permanent Court of Arbitration, 37
Perry, Matthew C., 221–24, 232–35
Perry, William, 304
Persia, 5, 47, 52. *See also* Iran
Persian Gulf Crisis (1990–1991), 162, 260
Persian Gulf War (1991), 87, 117, 216, 268
perspective, 14, 15, 80, 87, 135, 140, 157–61, 164, 175, 197, 232, 237, 258, 259, 266, 281, 295–97, 304, 308
persuasion, xiv, 55, 56, 65, 86, 126, 127, 135, 194–96, 217–22, 227–28, 232, 233, 249, 253, 270, 279, 286, 294, 302. *See also* bargaining; coercive diplomacy; deterrence; fear; incentives; negotiation; punishment
Peru, 87
Peter I (the Great, Russia), 12, 14
Petraeus, David, 156
Philippines, 97, 104, 109, 130, 206, 207
philosophy, 7, 11, 13, 17, 20, 153, 263, 269–71, 283, *See also names of specific philosophers*
Phipps, Eric, 66
Piedmont, 31
Pinker, Steven, 291
Pinochet, Augusto, 106, 123, 280
Plessis, Armand Jean du (Cardinal Richelieu), 9–10, 170
Poincaré, Raymond, 58
Poland
in eighteenth century, 14, 19
in evolving international system, 116, 117, 129
in nineteenth century, 26, 176
in seventeenth century, 8
in twentieth century, 46, 47, 52, 59, 65, 66, 92, 111, 163, 180, 200–203, 209–11, 220, 238
polarity
bipolar structure, 34, 36, 41, 97, 247, *See also* Cold War
multipolar structure, 6, 13, 100, 146, *See also* balance of power entries
unipolar structure, 133, *See also* United States, as world's only remaining superpower
policy makers, 6, 17, 42, 62, 100–103, 119, 154–56, 158–59, 162, 163–65, 194, 208, 225, 232, 236, 237, 240, 241, 243, 244, 255–57, 259, 267, 272, 295, 301–4. *See also* people; *specific names*
political objectives. *See* objectives
political science, 7, 41, 51, 53, 79, 108, 122, 147, 156–57, 161–64, 169, 171, 195, 208, 259, 271, 276, 291. *See also* diagnosis; patterns; structured, focused comparisons; theory
political will, 267, 268, 306, 307. *See also* commitment; intention; motivation; resolve (determination); will
politics (general), 7, 11, 57, 75, 95, 158, 190, 267, 268, 296. *See also* diplomatic revolution, domestic political forces in
Pol Pot, 280

Poltava, Battle of (1709), 14
Pompeo, Mike, 185, 230
Ponsonby, Arthur, 54
population growth and migration, 83, 149, 265
Portugal, 14
possibilities, xiv, 30, 32–34, 50, 57, 77–78, 85, 97, 100, 106, 115, 117, 156, 159, 165, 169–72, 180, 184, 194, 207, 212, 213, 219, 220, 226, 228, 231–34, 245, 252, 254, 257, 285, 286, 295, 299, 302, 305, 308. *See also* choices; opportunities
potency, 118, 196–97, 210, 211, 220–23, 226, 228–35, 253, 263
Potsdam Conference (1945), 80
poverty, 149, 280, 298
Powell, Colin, 127, 266, 304
power, xiii, xvi, 3, 8, 10–15, 18–21, 24–27, 31, 32, 36, 39, 45, 46, 49, 50, 63, 70, 74, 75, 78–81, 83, 85, 88, 94, 97, 100, 105, 107–9, 111, 112, 116, 118, 121, 125, 131, 135, 137–41, 143–47, 155, 158, 170, 171, 173, 177, 180, 182, 186, 188, 193–96, 200–206, 208, 212, 216–24, 228, 231, 233, 245, 258, 264–68, 270, 272–75, 277, 282, 284, 285, 294–97, 299–306. *See also* capabilities; economics; finance; force; Great Powers; ideology; instruments of statecraft; legitimacy; moral force; nation-states; naval forces; nonstate actors; normative values; religious values; rule of law; superpowers; technology; weapons
countervailing, 13, 35, 38, 199, 202, 209, 210, 264, *See also* balance of power entries
different elements of, xv, 5, 7, 53, 55, 57, 72, 75, 95, 98, 109, 125, 212, 267–68, 273–74, 289–90, 294, 296, 299–300
"hard," 299, 303
"smart," 303
"soft," 299, 300, 303
power and responsibility, 28–30, 34, 38, 60, 72, 77, 78, 140, 143, 147, 258
precision-guided munitions (PGMs), 118, 128, 302
predictability, 41, 53, 60, 75, 88, 98, 104, 139, 157, 164, 209, 231, 232, 236, 252, 258, 265, 278, 299, 307
preventive diplomacy, 86, 147, 303. *See also* crisis prevention
prisoners of war, 135, 284, 287, 289, 290
privatized military and security companies (PMSCs), 297
procedures, xvi, 4, 5, 27, 37, 40, 50, 55, 78, 84, 166, 171, 173, 174, 177, 190, 279
process, xv, 6–9, 12, 17–19, 38, 82, 94, 98, 105, 117, 119, 121, 136, 141, 158–61, 164, 173–75, 178–81, 185–89, 196, 207, 224, 227, 228, 232, 241, 271, 278, 280, 284, 285, 295–97, 301, 306, 308. *See also* procedures
propaganda, 46–47, 53, 56, 60–63, 91, 94, 95, 190, 202
proportion (sense of), 47, 159, 160, 308
proportionality, 230, 233, 237, 242, 243, 286–90. *See also* ends and means, relation of
proxy wars, 91, 97, 107, 137, 145, 252
Prussia. *See also specific names of Prussian leaders*
in eighteenth century, 14, 15, 17–19, 21
in nineteenth century, 22, 25, 26, 28, 30, 31, 38, 174–76, 198, 199, 249
in seventeenth century, 8, 11–12
in twentieth century, 47
"public diplomacy," 54–57, 94, 119–20, 125, 135, 189, 297
public opinion, 29, 45, 47, 48, 53–57, 63, 74, 75, 81, 84, 91, 94, 95, 119, 121, 125, 189, 190, 205, 212, 235, 256, 268–69, 297. *See also* propaganda
punishment, 49, 58, 65, 97, 107, 144, 155, 194–96, 208, 212, 213, 217–22, 228, 232–34, 236, 252, 255, 274, 278, 287, 302. *See also* cost-benefit analyses; fear; reparations; sanctions
Putin, Vladimir, 89, 118, 137, 143–45, 307

Q
Qatar, 121, 129, 137
Quadruple Alliance (1815), 26–27, 176, 198–99, 209–11
Quakers, 10, 277, 283
Qu'ran, xiii. *See also* Islam
Qureshi, Mehmood, 252

R
race, 41, 42, 46, 49, 52, 53, 76, 81, 83, 149, 224, 279
ragione di stato,9. *See also* national interest; *raison d'état*
raison d'état,9–11, 13, 14, 17, 18, 22, 25, 40, 50, 148, 271. *See also* national interest
Rape of Nanking, 63, 70, 279
Rapid Deployment Force (RDF), 108, 117
Rathenau, Walter, 57–58
rationality, xiv, xv, 6, 9, 10, 13, 60, 63, 103, 104, 158, 194, 208–9, 213, 223, 231, 244, 247, 257, 267, 290, 294, 302. *See also* cognitive psychology; cost-benefit analyses; stress
Reagan, Ronald, 108–9, 111, 112, 267, 268, 282

realism, 11, 81, 272, 274, 304
Realpolitik,31, 32, 271, 272
reciprocity, 11, 92, 118, 171, 175, 181, 182, 184, 190, 198, 231, 247, 258, 264
reconciliation, 48, 136, 175, 258, 274, 276, 288
Record, Jeffrey, 162
Red Cross. *See* International Committee of the Red Cross
redistribution agreements, 173
Reed, James, 49
Reformation, 7
refugees, 11, 51, 83, 87, 122, 128, 137, 145, 147, 265, 279, 298
regime change, 183, 230, 242
religious values, xv, 3, 6, 7, 9–11, 20, 52, 83, 149, 176, 188, 190, 247, 270–77, 279, 284, 285. *See also* ethics; moral force; normative values; *specific religious traditions*
religious wars, 8, 117
Remarque, Erich Maria, 46
reparations, 58
Republic of China (ROC) (Taiwan), 97, 104, 105, 203–7, 209–12
reputation, 32, 55, 105, 127, 177, 197, 275, 276, 299. *See also* honor
resistance points, 171–73, 175, 178, 181, 185–87. *See also* negotiation
resolve (determination), 65, 66, 70, 196, 199, 202, 203, 205, 210–11, 225, 228, 241–43, 246. *See also* commitment; motivation; will
resolve (settle differences). *See* conflict resolution; negotiation
responsibility, xvi, 4, 11, 16, 26, 29, 30, 34, 38–42, 50, 51, 53, 71, 72, 75–78, 95, 107, 116, 125, 132, 134, 140, 143, 147, 178, 198, 247, 248, 258, 259, 266, 269–83, 285, 287–89, 291, 294, 299, 306, 307. *See also* power and responsibility
"Responsibility to Protect" (R2P), 123, 147, 278, 288
restraints, 15, 27, 31, 34, 36–37, 46, 54, 62, 75, 105–7, 133, 134, 139, 148, 157, 160, 161, 176, 229, 230, 234, 235, 247–50, 263–91, 307
  environmental, 136
  ethical, xv, 14, 18, 63, 99, 154, 158, 269–91, 295, 308, *See also* ethics; normative values
  legal, 107, 109, 267–68, 278–80, 284, 287, 288, *See also* international criminal law; international humanitarian law; international human rights law; international law; rule of law; treaties
  necessity of, xvi, 4, 10, 20, 29, 40, 100, 101, 103, 104, 174, 265, 275–77
  political, 125, 147, 264, 266–69, 283, *See also* diplomatic revolution, domestic political forces in
  practical, 20, 53, 263–66, 283
  self-imposed, xv, 30, 39, 40, 42, 45, 49, 51, 60, 74, 76, 100, 103, 106, 107, 111, 122, 170, 190, 225, 241, 253, 258, 259, 271, 273, 276, 278, 281, 291, 305, 306, *See also* ethics; normative values
  structural, 264–66, 283, *See also* balance of power entries; polarity
  on weapons, xv, 51, 111, 192, 282, 284, 287, 290–91, 306–7, *See also* arms control, just war tradition
revolution, 26, 27, 30, 31, 46, 47, 53, 60, 73, 81, 93, 95, 100, 104, 108, 110, 116, 118, 125, 177, 179, 199, 200, 209, 227, 301. *See also* diplomatic revolution; *specific names of revolutions*
revolution in military affairs (RMA), 118, 301–2
Rhineland, 21, 26, 66, 162, 176, 260
Rhodesia, 85
Ribbentrop, Joachim von, 66
Rice, Condoleezza, 126–27, 205, 253, 256, 304
Rich, Norman, 35, 62
Richelieu, Cardinal (Armand Jean du Plessis), 9–10, 170
Rio Treaty (1947), 95
risk, xiv, 6, 10, 20, 37, 71, 74, 100, 103, 106, 107, 147, 164, 171, 173, 174, 178, 179, 182, 194–97, 205, 207–9, 211, 213, 219–20, 225, 231, 233, 236, 237, 243–45, 247, 257, 259, 294, 298, 301, 303
rivalry, xv, xvi, 5, 6, 8, 14, 33, 39, 48, 49, 57, 58, 60, 80, 81, 91, 95–101, 104–8, 112, 115, 128, 131, 135–41, 145, 147–49, 154, 159, 170, 176, 186, 190, 193, 203, 206, 209, 239, 243–45, 247, 251, 254–56, 259, 263, 267, 291, 294–95, 299, 305, 306, 308. *See also* competition
Rockefeller Foundation, 124
rogue regimes, 89, 122, 203, 253, 258, 282, 304
Rohingya Muslims, 273
Romania, 47, 49, 52, 53, 111, 129, 201, 202
Rome (ancient), 5, 6, 155
Rome, Conference of (1831–1832), 28
Rome, Treaty of (1957), 132, 290
Rommel, Erwin, 290
Roosevelt, Eleanor, 280
Roosevelt, Franklin, xiv, 55, 72–75, 81, 134, 163
Root, Elihu, 53
Rosegrant, Susan, 173
Rosier, Bernard du, 6, 276

Rouhani, Hassan, 230, 231
Rousseau, Jean-Jacques, 20
rule of law, 20, 75, 83, 109, 115, 117, 127, 128, 266, 278, 289, 290, 300, 303, 307. *See also* international criminal law; international humanitarian law; international human rights law; international law; laws of war; restraints, legal; treaties; *specific names of treaties*
rules, xv, xvi, 5, 7, 20, 27, 31, 34, 36–41, 50, 60, 64, 71, 75, 76, 99, 100, 106, 134, 146, 147, 165, 166, 171, 188, 190, 265, 272, 275–76, 278, 284–86, 288, 305–7
rules of accommodation, 171, 188, 276, 305
Rumsfeld, Donald, 134, 162, 266, 289
Russell, John, 27
Russia. *See also* Soviet Union; *specific names of Russian leaders*
  after collapse of Soviet Union and in evolving international system, 112, 117–18, 121, 124, 127, 129, 130, 135–37, 140, 143–46, 182, 206, 208, 229, 231, 233, 235, 238, 264, 268, 307, 308
  in eighteenth century, 14, 18, 19, 21
  in nineteenth century, 21–22, 26, 28, 30–33, 35–38, 175, 176, 186, 198, 199, 215, 244–47
  in seventeenth century, 7–8, 12
  in twentieth century, 36, 46, 48, 60, 62, 92, 94, 112, 247–50, 257, 277
Russo-Japanese War (1904–1905), 42
Rwanda, 89, 117, 132, 290

S

Saddam Hussein. *See* Hussein, Saddam
St. Petersburg, Conference of (1824), 28
Salisbury, Robert Cecil, 245
sanctions, 50, 51, 72, 73, 77, 85, 87, 116, 127, 144, 147, 180, 182–85, 212, 216, 220, 227–30, 234, 235, 247, 253, 278, 286
San Francisco Conference (1945), 69, 74–80, 92, 279, 300
San Stefano, Treaty of (1878), 244–45, 247
Santayana, George, 153
Sarajevo, 117, 129
Saudi Arabia, 46, 47, 125, 129, 137, 145, 146, 215, 280
Saxony, 14, 18, 26, 176
Sazonov, Sergei, 248
Schell, Jonathan, 305
Schelling, Thomas, 170–71, 195, 217–18
Schlesinger, Arthur, Jr., 239
Schleswig-Holstein Crisis (1850), 27
Schmidt, Helmut, 110
Schwarzenberg, Felix zu, 31
Second World War (1939–1945), xiv, 69–80, 88, 91–92, 94, 97–98, 108, 162, 177, 203, 264, 267, 277, 279, 288, 290, 301, 306
secret diplomacy, 54
security, xiii, xv, 6, 36, 52, 65, 66, 69, 72–74, 82, 92, 95, 97, 105, 108, 110, 112, 115–17, 121, 125, 126, 134–36, 138–40, 145, 146, 155, 156, 177–79, 185, 189, 194, 208, 216, 233, 264, 281, 296, 298, 299, 302–3. *See also* collective security; international order; peace and security; survival; United Nations, Security Council
  cooperative, 122
  economic components of, 70, 84, 97, 104, 117, 120, 178, 179, 187
  human rights, justice, and peace in relation to, 50–51, 71, 83, 84, 86, 112, 115, 123, 136, 179, 265, 279, 280
  "human security," 280, 298
  "indivisibility" of, 122, 136, 137, 179, 186, 189, 265, 280, 298
  interdependence of, 122, 265, 297
"the security dilemma,"xv, 36, 97, 183, 207, 208, 247, 249, 264, 303
Selassie, Haile, 53
self-defense, 37, 77, 78, 134, 144, 147, 195, 204, 285, 288
self-determination, 46, 75, 83, 306. *See also* decolonization
self-interest. *See* national interest
self-restraints. *See* restraints, self-imposed
September 11 terrorist attacks (2001), 89, 125–26, 130, 133, 135, 163, 213, 227, 252
Serbia, 34, 42, 117, 123, 129, 133, 236, 247–50, 293, 297
settlement range, 172–75, 178, 185–87. *See also* compromise; negotiation
Seven Years' War (1756–1763), 18
Shanghai Communiqué (1972), 204
Shanghai Cooperation Organization, 296
shared goals and objectives, xvi, 26, 39, 58, 100, 200. *See also* common interests; partnership
shared values, 30, 39, 107, 147, 277, 305, 306. *See also* legitimacy; normative values; partnership
Shultz, George, 88, 304
Shuvalov, Peter, 245
Siam, 52, 238
signals. *See* communication
Silesia, 18
Singh, Manmohan, 252, 258

Sino-Soviet split, 104, 260
Slovenia, 116, 117
Snowden, Edward, 144
social media, 121, 125, 130, 144, 256, 301
Society for Worldwide Interbank Financial Telecommunication (SWIFT), 228
"soft power," 299, 300, 303. *See also* culture; diplomacy; economics; finance; instruments of statecraft; moral force; normative values; power; reputation; rule of law; technology
soldiers. *See* combatants
Solomon (Israel), 3
Somalia, 117, 128–30, 132, 236, 238, 293, 307
Somme, Battle of (1916), 301
South Africa, 46, 52, 82, 85, 109, 176, 280
Southeast Asian Treaty Organization (SEATO), 97
South Korea, 82, 86, 97, 116, 127, 138, 147, 180, 182, 184, 206, 207, 231
South Sudan, 129
sovereignty. *See* national sovereignty
Soviet Union. *See also* Russia; *specific names of Soviet leaders*
  collapse of, 89, 110–13, 115, 116, 143–44, 180, 296
  inter-war years (1919–1939), 47, 51, 60–62, 66, 72, 201–2, 209–11, 277
  origins of, 60–61
  post-Second World War and during Cold War, 73, 76, 80–82, 84–88, 91–113, 126, 132, 163, 169–70, 177–79, 186, 187, 193, 196, 210, 213, 224–26, 232–36, 239, 241, 280
  and United Nations, 76, 82, 84–86, 88, 107
space, 91, 98, 109, 118, 119, 141, 156, 159, 164, 169, 189, 236, 257, 278, 298, 302
Spain, 8, 9, 14–15, 41, 128, 200, 210, 260
Spanish-American War (1898), 42
Spanish Flu pandemic (1918–1919), 53, 299
Spanish Succession, War of (1702–1714), 14–15
spheres of influence, 35, 74, 100, 117, 124, 146
Sputnik satellite, 98, 196
Sri Lanka, 130, 176
Staatsräson,9, 18, 20. *See also* national interest; *raison d'état*
Stalin, Josef, 92, 93, 202, 212
standards. *See* ethics; normative values
statecraft, xiv–xvi, 3, 5, 9–13, 15–17, 26, 29–31, 34, 37, 38, 41, 69–70, 75, 95, 99, 103, 109, 119–20, 122, 131, 134–36, 143, 146–48, 153–66, 169–70, 182, 193–94, 217, 220, 225, 239, 263, 267, 272, 275–84, 294–97, 299–303, 306, 308. *See also* diplomacy; force and statecraft; instruments of statecraft; strategy; theory, of statecraft
states. *See* nation-states
Stoessinger, John, 79
"strategic ambiguity," 205, 209, 210
Strategic Arms Limitation Treaties (SALT), 105, 108, 192
Strategic Arms Reduction Treaty (START), 132, 192
Strategic Defense Initiative (SDI), 109
strategic deterrence, 197
strategy, xv, 46, 59, 60, 66, 88, 98, 100–102, 107, 110, 127, 128, 133–34, 154, 159, 162, 164, 165, 180, 193–201, 203, 204, 207–13, 217–21, 224–26, 231–37, 239, 241–43, 246, 250, 253, 255, 264, 284, 298
stress (impact on decision making), 42, 87, 116, 145, 158, 163, 208–9, 232, 234, 240, 243–44, 259. *See also* cognitive psychology; crises; rationality
structure, xvi, 11, 17, 26, 38–39, 50, 59, 61, 73, 78, 99, 102, 127, 160, 173, 199–200, 258, 264, 266, 280, 288, 295. *See also* balance of power; polarity; restraints, structural
structured, focused comparisons, 164–66, 295
Suarez, Francisco, 6
Subi Reef (South China Sea), 141–42, 206
Sudan, 35, 129, 133, 301
Suez Crisis (1956), 82, 84, 85, 162, 163, 260
Sun Tzu, xiii, 154, 217, 237
superpowers, 83, 89, 95, 97–102, 105–12, 115, 132, 178, 188, 193, 210, 213, 219, 239, 277. *See also* Cold War; Soviet Union; United States
survival, xiii–xiv, xvi, 3, 5, 11, 13, 15, 24, 39, 120, 154, 183, 217, 263, 283. *See also* peace and security; security
Suttner, Bertha von, 282
Sweden, 9, 14, 47, 82
Switzerland, 21, 47, 52, 176, 178
Syria, 46, 47, 106, 127–31, 137, 144, 145, 180, 216, 229, 230, 238, 265, 268, 289, 307
system building
  at Congress of Vienna (1814–1815), 25–27, 69, 174–76, 186, 189
  at Paris Peace Conference (1919), 45, 48–52, 61, 69
  at San Francisco Conference (1945), 69, 74–80
  at Westphalia (1648), 11, 12, 69
system maintenance, xiv, xvi, 25–33, 36–40, 51, 57, 58, 61, 64, 75–78, 81, 83, 99, 105, 106, 134, 148, 174, 199, 210, 218, 243, 245, 302–3, 306

T
Taiwan. *See* Republic of China
Taiwan Relations Act (1979), 204–5
Taiwan Straits Crises (1954–1955, 1958), 101, 203–4, 260
Taiwan Travel Act (2018), 206
Tajikistan, 129
Taliban, 126, 128, 131, 133, 192, 252–54
Talleyrand-Périgord, Charles Maurice de, 175
technology, xv, 36, 108, 116, 141, 143, 146, 160, 177, 221–23, 228, 233, 234, 255–56, 275, 295, 297, 305, 306
  communications impacted by, 41–42, 45, 53, 55, 84, 95, 119, 121, 125, 189, 190, 212, 256, 300, *See also* Internet
  in diplomatic revolution, xvi, 45, 53, 55, 56, 118–20, 189, 212–13, 235–36, 256–57, 298, 300–302
  and globalization, 121
  intelligence impacted by, 119, 189, 235–36, 253, 257, 300–301
  transportation impacted by, xvi, 41–42, 45, 53, 55, 121, 189, 212, 256, 300
  weapons impacted by, xvi, 29, 32, 42, 45, 66, 92, 97–98, 109, 118, 190, 194, 212–13, 217, 236, 256, 290, 301–2, 304, *See also* cyberattacks
terrorism, xiii, xvi, 122, 125–28, 130–31, 133, 137, 145, 147, 149, 158, 162, 194, 208, 210, 213, 227, 231, 236, 247, 251–55, 265, 273, 278, 280, 283, 286, 288, 289, 291, 297, 298, 302–4, 306, 307. *See also* "global war on terror"
  Mumbai attacks (2008), 251–58
  September 11 attacks (2001), 89, 125–26, 130, 133, 135, 163, 213, 227, 252
Thatcher, Margaret, 162
theory. *See also* political science
  of coercive diplomacy, 165, 217–21, 236
  of crisis management, 240–44
  of deterrence, 165, 194–97
  domino, 103
  of ethics, 269–70
  history in development of, 156
  of just war, 6, 10, 20, 40, 285–91
  of negotiation, 170–74
  of statecraft (in general), xv–xvi, 7, 9, 117, 164, 295, 308
  in structured, focused comparisons, 164–65
Third World, 102, 106, 109, 210
Thirty Years' War (1618–1648), 8–9, 11, 69, 276
Thompson, Llewellyn, 101
threats, xiii–xvi, 5, 8, 13, 14, 21, 27, 30, 31, 33, 35–37, 39, 40, 50, 51, 62, 66, 71–73, 76–78, 80, 85, 91, 94, 97–108, 110, 116, 117, 121–27, 130, 131, 134, 135, 138, 147–48, 154, 158, 165, 170, 171, 174, 178–79, 182–84, 186, 193–206, 208–13, 216–23, 225–30, 232–36, 242, 244–46, 248, 250, 252, 257, 267, 269, 274, 275, 277, 280, 282, 284–85, 294, 296, 298–99, 301–3, 306
threats of armed force, xiii, xvi, 40, 50, 66, 76, 77, 85, 97–104, 106, 108, 116, 126, 165, 170, 178–79, 183–84, 186, 193–200, 203–4, 208, 210, 212–13, 216–19, 221, 225, 228–30, 233, 242, 245, 267, 275, 280, 282, 284–85, 294, 301–3, 306. *See also* coercive diplomacy; deterrence
Three Emperors' League (1881), 33
Thucydides, xiii, 4, 154, 157, 193–94, 217, 271
Tiananmen Square (1989), 280
Tillerson, Rex, 139, 184
time, 18, 20, 36, 41–42, 48, 50, 53, 54, 56, 65, 71, 74, 76, 80, 83, 99, 105, 119, 127, 130–31, 133, 137, 140, 156, 158–61, 164, 165, 171, 177, 179, 182, 184, 190, 199, 211, 217, 219–26, 228–32, 234–37, 240, 243, 247, 254, 256, 259, 263, 270, 277, 278, 280, 282–85, 295, 296, 300–302, 305, 306. *See also* diplomatic revolution, pace of events in; ultimata
Tirpitz, Alfred von, 35
Titulescu, Nicolae, 53
tono fascista,62
Torah, xiii
torture, 7, 84, 125, 128, 130, 135, 266, 273, 278, 279, 289, 307
"total" war, 46, 50, 53, 57, 74, 92
trade. *See* economics; international trade
transnational corporations (TNCs), 124, 148, 188, 265, 281, 296
Trans-Pacific Partnership (TPP), 136, 138
transportation, xvi, 41–42, 45, 53, 55, 121, 189, 212, 256, 264, 298, 300
Trask, David, 158–59
treaties, xv, 4, 8, 33, 48, 50, 60, 70, 84, 122–23, 139, 141, 155, 157, 211, 265, 266, 275, 278, 279, 287, 294, 306, 307. *See also* international law; *specific names of treaties*
  respect for, 5, 31, 34, 40, 307, *See also* honor; *pacta sunt servanda*
Treitschke, Heinrich von, 283

Triple Alliance (1882), 33, 36, 37, 247
Triple Entente (1907), 36, 37, 247
Troppau, Conference of (1820), 28
Trotsky, Leon, 60, 283
Truman, Harry, 76, 80, 81, 92–94, 98, 162, 203, 241
Truman Doctrine, 93
Trump, Donald J., 130, 137–41, 144–45, 183–85, 187–89, 230–32, 235
Tsai Ing-wen, 206
Tuchman, Barbara, 159, 163, 250
Tunisia, 47, 129, 137
Turkey, 47, 81, 87, 93, 95, 102, 128, 129, 133, 137, 145, 163, 201, 226, 234, 238, 244, 245, 272–73, 301. *See also* Ottoman Empire
Turkmenistan, 129
Twitter, 121, 130, 256, 301
types of actors. *See* international systems, types of actors in

U
Ukraine, 129, 137, 140, 144, 307
ultimata, 59, 116, 216, 220, 226, 232, 234, 238, 246, 248, 250, 251
uncertainties, 41, 60, 74–75, 80, 116, 163, 165, 205, 210, 265, 269, 278. *See also* risk
unilateralism, 26, 31, 35, 38, 40, 73, 74, 76, 87, 107, 111, 112, 127, 132–35, 138, 139, 171, 176, 185, 201, 205, 207, 211, 230, 234, 244, 265, 267, 307
unitary actors, 208, 231
United Against Nuclear Iran, 235
United Arab Emirates, 129
United Nations, 69–89, 111, 119–20, 149, 218, 296, 306, 308
  in arms control and nonproliferation, 77, 180, 183, 184, 186, 227, 235
  Charter, 74–82, 85–87, 89, 99, 101, 107, 123, 127, 134, 179, 216, 227, 279, 285, 307
  in coercive diplomacy, 77, 85–87, 116, 127, 147, 216, 218, 227–30, 233–34
  in conflict resolution, 76, 86. 87
  counterterrorism efforts of, 126, 130, 147, 253
  creation of, xiv, 74–80, 92, 134, 264
  in crisis management, 84–86, 101, 147, 226
  Declaration of the United Nations, 70
  in decolonization, 82–83
  in democracy promotion, 85, 133
  in deterrence, 77, 85, *See also* peacekeeping forces
  in development, 82–83, 86, 147, 281
  Economic and Social Council, 75, 124
  and environmental protection, 83, 281
  in evolving international system, 89, 107, 115–16, 123, 127, 134
  Food and Agricultural Organization, 281
  force and statecraft under, 74–80, 85–86, 107, 117, 147, 178, 227–28, 266, 285, 302, *See also* Korean War; peacekeeping forces; Persian Gulf War
  General Assembly, 75, 76, 78, 81, 82, 85–88, 126, 132, 138, 184
  Great Powers in, *See* Great Powers
  and humanitarian intervention, 77, 78, 86,117, 133
  and humanitarian relief, 83, 85, 86, 87, 147
  and human rights, 75, 76, 83, 84, 86, 125, 136, 138, 147, 179, 279, 280
  in medical care, 83, 87
  in international law development, 83, 86, 147, 187
  membership in, 75, 76, 82–83, 104, 105, 116
  Military Staff Committee, 77, 99
  in peacekeeping, 85–87, 117, 147
  in preventive diplomacy, 86, 147
  public opinion toward, 75, 78–79, 81, 87, 134, 138, 235
  Secretary-General, 75, 82, 87, 107, *See also specific names of secretaries-general*
  Security Council, 75–80, 82, 85–87, 99, 107, 116, 126, 127, 130, 133, 136, 138, 147, 180, 183, 184, 216, 227–30, 233–35, 253, 285, 290, 300
  Trusteeship Council, 75
  visions of, xiv, 73–74, 79, 88, 134
United Nations Educational, Social, and Cultural Organization (UNESCO), 138
United States. *See also specific names of American leaders*
  "America First," 138, 140, 146
  Central Intelligence Agency, 99, 107, 189, 231, 281–82, 298, 304
  Congress in foreign affairs, 49–50, 54, 74, 81, 107, 109, 132, 135–37, 181, 189, 204–5, 267–68, 277, 282
  Defense Department (Pentagon), 127, 136, 139, 159, 189, 230, 231, 256, 266, 281, 298, 304
  in eighteenth century, 19–20
  in evolving international system, 118, 125–28, 130–41, 144–47, 149, 180–86, 189, 203–7, 209–12, 226–36, 251–54, 257, 264, 266–68, 273, 274, 278, 288–89, 296, 299, 301, 304–5, 307, 308

  inter-war years (1919–1939), 46, 48–55, 58, 60–62, 66, 72, 201, 238, 277
  Joint Chiefs of Staff, 156, 224, 242, 253, 284, 289, 304, 308
  National Security Council, 98, 189
  in nineteenth century, 38, 42, 215, 221–24, 232–36, 238, 286
  post-Second World War and during Cold War, 35, 72–74, 76, 80–86, 88, 91–113, 158, 159, 162, 169–70, 177, 178, 193, 197, 204, 210, 215, 224–26, 232–36, 239, 241, 268, 274, 281–82, 284, 293
  State Department, 19, 72, 94, 120, 136, 138, 158, 189, 204, 222, 230, 240, 256, 266, 304
  in twentieth century, 220
  and United Nations, xiv, 74, 76, 80–86, 88, 101, 105, 107, 116, 126, 127, 132–34, 136, 138, 146, 230, 235, 266, 280, 307
  as world's only remaining superpower, 89, 132
Universal Declaration of Human Rights (1948), 84, 179, 279
unmanned aerial vehicles (UAVs). *See* drones
Urquhart, Brian, 81
Ury, William, 172
use of armed force, xiii–xvi, 7–11, 15, 26, 40, 50, 51, 61–63, 66, 69, 72, 73, 76–78, 85–87, 89, 92, 97, 106–8, 111, 117, 122, 126, 127, 130, 132, 134, 145, 149, 158, 170, 178–79, 186, 190, 194, 195, 203, 205, 208, 217, 218, 224, 225, 233, 242, 244, 254, 263–68, 282–89, 297, 302, 303, 306, 307. *See also* violence; war; *specific wars and battles*
U Thant, 84–85, 293
utility calculation. *See* cost-benefit analyses
Utrecht, Treaty of (1713–1714), 14–15, 20, 26
Uzbekistan, 129

V
values. *See* ethics; normative values; shared values
Vance, Cyrus, 274
Vattel, Emmerich de, 20
Vegetius, xiv
Velvet Revolution (1989), 180
Venice, Republic of, 5–6, 16
Vera, Juan Antonio de, 276
Verona, Conference of (1822), 28
Versailles, Treaty of (1919), 49, 51, 54, 61, 63, 65, 66, 71, 212. *See also* Paris Peace Conference
Vertzberger, Yaacov, 163
Vessy, John, 156
Vienna, conferences of (1839, 1853, 1855), 28
Vienna, Congress of (1814–1815), 25–33, 36, 45, 49, 69, 156, 174–76, 186–89, 199, 211, 245, 250, 288
Vietnam, 206, 238
Vietnam War, 103–5, 107, 156, 158, 162, 197, 204, 205, 256, 267, 274, 289, 293
Vimeo, 121
violence, xiii–xv, 3, 5, 6, 10–15, 20, 24, 29, 62, 71, 76, 85, 89, 116–18, 124, 125, 130, 136, 137, 154, 170, 171, 208, 218, 252, 254, 263, 282–88, 291, 294, 298, 300, 303, 305, 308. *See also* terrorism; torture; use of armed force; war
Vitoria, Francisco de, 6, 276
Voltaire (François Marie Arouet), 17

W
Waddington, William, 245
Waltz, Kenneth, 195
Walworth, Arthur, 222
Walzer, Michael, 290–91
war. *See also* combatants; violence; weapons; *specific wars and battles*
  acts of, 180, 225, 255
  costs of, xv, 8–9, 14, 19, 31, 45–46, 50, 57, 69, 70, 91, 127–28, 155, 197, 199, 285, 302
  deliberate, 8, 10, 12, 17, 32, 42, 57, 63, 65, 66, 74, 89, 117, 126–28, 134, 199, 203, 209, 243, 245, 248–51, 273, 285, 303, *See also* aggression
  developments in, 40, 42, 46–47, 118, 257, 297, 301–3, *See also* technology, weapons impacted by
  ethics in, *See* ethics, for armed force
  as force for change, 8, 24, 32, 46, 47, 50, 53–54, 57, 69–72, 74–75, 296
  "global war on terror," 125–28, 130–31, 254, 268
  inadvertent, xiv, 102, 197, 224–25, 239–41, 243–47, 252, 259, 294
  as instrument of policy, 8, 13, 21, 40, 194, 290, *See also* force, as instrument of statecraft; "hard power"-
  intrastate (civil), 13, 89, 93, 105, 108, 109, 117, 133, 137, 144, 265, 298
  just, *See* just war tradition
  limited, 31, 40, 46, 100, 284, 286, 301
  methods of avoiding, xiv, 3, 6, 11, 19–20, 24, 29, 32–34, 49, 50, 77, 84, 97, 145, 162, 170, 181, 195, 211, 243, 247, 253, 258, *See also* appeasement; collective security; conflict resolution; crisis management; deterrence; diplomacy; negotiation; pacifism; peaceful settlement of disputes; peacekeeping forces; peacemaking; restraints; system building; system maintenance

methods of avoiding (*continued*)
nature of, 21, 24, 29–30, 50, 73, 95, 154, 156, 194, 217, 266, 282, 283, 285, 303, *See also* violence
network centric, 301
preemptive, 109, 127, 134, 208, 221, 240, 243
prevalence of, xiii, 6, 8–21, 31, 45, 86, 117, 127–28, 134, 176, 251, 268, 294
preventive, 134, 240, 285, 288, 307
proxy wars, 91, 97, 107, 137, 145, 252
religious, 8, 117
rules of, 5, 20, 31, 34, 282, 284–88, 307, *See also* laws of war; war crimes
thermonuclear, 100–102, 106, 169, 184, 203, 207, 226, 233, 239, 305
"total," 46, 50, 53, 57, 74, 92
war crimes, 123, 139, 144, 287–90. *See also* international criminal law; just war tradition; laws of war
War Crimes and Criminal Procedure Act (1996), 288–89
war plans, 36, 247, 249, 250, 257
War Powers Act (1973), 107, 267–68
Warsaw Treaty Organization, 97, 112, 117, 177
Washington, George, 19–20
Washington Naval Conference (1921–1922), 51, 63, 192
Watergate scandal, 107, 281
Waterloo, Battle of (1815), 22, 175, 198, 301
Watkins, Michael, 173
weapons, 4, 17, 40, 46, 59, 87, 91, 97–101, 105, 106, 108, 111, 112, 125, 137, 141, 144, 180–90, 193, 196, 204, 205, 216–18, 220, 227, 233, 242, 253, 263
abolishment of, xv, 37, 282–83, 307, *See also* pacifism
cultural, 94
economic, 57–59
financial, 57, 58
limited capabilities of, 20, 29, 42, 92, 189, 193, 236, 301
political, 193
of propaganda, 95
restraints on, xv, 51, 122, 267, 282, 284, 287, 290–91, 306–7, *See also* arms control; *specific names of treaties*
sale of, *See* arms sales
technology and impact on, xvi, 29, 32, 42, 45, 66, 92, 97–98, 109, 118, 190, 194, 212–13, 217, 236, 256, 290, 301–2, 304
weapons of mass destruction (WMD), xvi, 42, 69, 70, 89, 98, 100, 122, 127, 149, 170, 180, 185, 189, 193, 194, 196, 212–13, 224–25, 240, 241, 257, 266, 287, 288, 290–91, 293, 298, 304–6. *See also* biological weapons; chemical weapons; nuclear weapons
Webster, Charles, 156, 300
Wei Fenghe, 203
well-being of others, 75, 120, 125, 158, 197, 269–72, 275, 276, 279–82, 287, 295. *See also* ethics; humanitarian aid; humanitarian intervention; human rights; justice; "Responsibility to Protect"
West Germany, 97, 104, 110, 177
Westphalia, Peace of (1648), 11, 12, 69, 296
White, E. B., 79
Wicquefort, Abram de, 12, 276
WikiLeaks, 121
will, 13, 33, 51, 61, 66, 73, 95, 121, 171, 193, 195–98, 202, 210–11, 216–20, 223, 232, 233, 242, 264, 267–69, 273, 274, 288, 306, 307. *See also* commitment; credibility; intention; motivation; political will; resolve (determination)
William I (Kaiser, Germany), 33
William II (Kaiser, Germany), 35, 40, 248–50
Williams, Phil, 259
Williams, Robert, 122
Wilson, Henry, 61
Wilson, Woodrow, xiv, 48–49, 52, 55, 74, 158, 293
wishful thinking, 56, 64, 65, 161, 209, 221, 232, 265
Witt, Jan de, 9
Wolfowitz, Paul, 134
World Bank, 71, 123, 281
World Economic Forum (WEF), 148, 306
World Health Organization (WHO), 123, 281
World Summit (2005), 280, 306–7
World Trade Organization (WTO), 123, 132, 138, 296
Wrangham, Richard, 291

X

xenophobia, xvi, 143, 149, 306
Xi Jinping, 137, 141, 143, 203, 206, 307

Y

Yeltsin, Boris, 112
Yemen, 85, 129, 130, 137, 230
YouTube, 121, 301
Yugoslavia, 46, 47, 52, 89, 117, 132, 290

Z

Zardari, Asif Ali, 253, 254, 258
zero-sum contest, 39, 110, 138
Zimbabwe, 85
Zinni, Anthony, 128

Force and Statecraft is both a proven classic and a timely resource ideal for the study of statecraft, diplomatic history, international relations, foreign affairs, peace, and security studies

---

"This is the best book in terms of its organization, writing, and quality of ideas as well as a superb framing of the problems and issues in the field."

—John D. Stempel, *University of Kentucky*

"*Force and Statecraft* is the best book available for the study of diplomacy as a topic within political science. It does a very good job of offering rich history, theory, and details to the subject matter."

—James Ketterer, *Bard College*

"*Force and Statecraft* is well-written, clear, and insightful. It is an exemplary textbook, and provides a wonderful historical rounding for students of international politics."

—Stephen Macekura, *Indiana University*

"*Force and Statecraft* is a great book. It puts diplomacy front and center in the analysis and examines how individual state leaders navigate the challenges of international politics."

—Steven Weber, *University of California, Berkeley*

ABOUT THE AUTHORS

PAUL GORDON LAUREN is Regents Professor Emeritus and Distinguished Mansfield Fellow at the University of Montana. He is an internationally acclaimed and award-winning teacher and scholar of diplomacy, issues of security and peace, and human rights, whose work has been translated into numerous languages and nominated for a Pulitzer Prize.

The late **GORDON CRAIG** was the J.E. Wallace Sterling Professor of Humanities at Stanford University and former president of the American Historical Association.

The late **ALEXANDER GEORGE** was the Graham H. Stuart Professor of International Relations at Stanford University and former president of the International Studies Association.

OXFORD
UNIVERSITY PRESS
www.oup.com/us/he

ISBN 978-0-19-006263-7
90000
9 780190 062637

Cover Photo: "Diplomacia," Sculptor: Maximiano Alves. Assembleia República, Arquivo Fotográfico, MUS 173, Photgrapher: Eduardo Gageiro (1999).